

K. R. NORMAN

## PĀLI LITERATURE

INCLUDING THE CANONICAL LITERATURE IN  
PRAKRIT AND SANSKRIT  
OF ALL THE HĪNAYĀNA SCHOOLS OF BUDDHISM

1983

OTTO HARRASSOWITZ · WIESBADEN

K. R. NORMAN

PĀLI LITERATURE

INCLUDING THE CANONICAL LITERATURE IN  
PRAKRIT AND SANSKRIT  
OF ALL THE HINAYĀNA SCHOOLS OF BUDDHISM



A HISTORY  
OF INDIAN LITERATURE

---

EDITED BY JAN GONDA

VOLUME VII

Fasc. 2

1983

OTTO HARRASSOWITZ • WIESBADEN

K. R. NORMAN

PĀLI LITERATURE

INCLUDING THE CANONICAL LITERATURE IN  
PRAKRIT AND SANSKRIT  
OF ALL THE HĪNAYĀNA SCHOOLS OF BUDDHISM

1983

OTTO HARRASSOWITZ • WIESBADEN

# A HISTORY OF INDIAN LITERATURE

Contents of Vol. VII

## Vol. VII: Buddhist and Jaina Literature

Fasc. 1:	D. Seyfort Ruegg	The Literature of the Madhyamaka School of Philosophy in India
Fasc. 2:	K. R. Norman	Pāli Literature

CIP-Kurztitelaufnahme der Deutschen Bibliothek

A history of Indian literature / ed. by Jan Gonda. -

Wiesbaden : Harrassowitz.

NE: Gonda, Jan [Hrsg.]

Vol. 7. Buddhist and Jaina literature. Fasc. 2. + Norman, Kenneth Roy : Pāli literature

Norman, Kenneth Roy:

Pāli literature : incl. the canon. literature in Prakrit and Sanskrit of all the Hinayāna schools of Buddhism /  
Kenneth Roy Norman. - Wiesbaden : Harrassowitz, 1983.

(A history of Indian literature ; Vol. 7, Fasc. 2)

ISBN 3-447-02285-X

© Otto Harrassowitz, Wiesbaden 1983. Alle Rechte vorbehalten. Photographische und photomechanische  
Wiedergabe nur mit ausdrücklicher Genehmigung des Verlages. Gesamtherstellung: Allgäuer Zeitungsverlag  
GmbH. Kempten. Printed in Germany. Signet: HIL

## CONTENTS

FOREWORD	IX
----------	----

### CHAPTER I *The Pāli language and the Theravādin tradition*

1. The name "Pāli"	1
2. The history and development of the Pāli language	2
3. The history of the Theravādin tradition	7

### CHAPTER II *The Pāli Canon*

1. The divisions of the canon	15
2. The Vinaya-piṭaka	18
2.1. The Suttavibhaṅga	18
2.2. The Khandhaka	22
2.3. The Parivāra	26
3. The Sutta-piṭaka	30
3.1. The Dīgha-nikāya	32
3.1.1. The Sīlakkhandhavagga	32
3.1.2. The Mahāvagga	36
3.1.3. The Pāṭikavagga	41
3.2. The Majjhima-nikāya	44
3.2.1. The Mūlapaṇṇāsa	45
3.2.2. The Majjhimaṇṇāsa	46
3.2.3. The Uparipaṇṇāsa	48
3.3. The Saṃyutta-nikāya	49
3.3.1. The Sagāthavagga	50
3.3.2. The Nidānavagga	52
3.3.3. The Khandhavagga	52
3.3.4. The Saḷāyatana-vagga	53
3.3.5. The Mahāvagga	53
3.4. The Aṅguttara-nikāya	54
3.5. The Khuddaka-nikāya	57
3.5.1. Khuddakapāṭha	57
3.5.2. Dhammapada	58



3.5.3. Udāna .. .. .	60
3.5.4. Itivuttaka .. .. .	62
3.5.5. Suttanipāta .. .. .	63
3.5.6. Vimānavatthu .. .. .	70
3.5.7. Petavatthu .. .. .	71
3.5.8. Theragāthā .. .. .	72
3.5.9. Therīgāthā .. .. .	75
3.5.10. Jātaka .. .. .	77
3.5.11. Niddesa .. .. .	84
3.5.12. Paṭisambhidāmagga .. .. .	87
3.5.13. Apadāna .. .. .	89
3.5.14. Buddhavaṃsa .. .. .	92
3.5.15. Cariyāpīṭaka .. .. .	94
4. The Abhidhamma-piṭaka .. .. .	96
4.1. Dhammasaṅgaṇi .. .. .	99
4.2. Vibhaṅga .. .. .	100
4.3. Dhātukathā .. .. .	101
4.4. Puggalapaññatti .. .. .	102
4.5. Kathāvatthu .. .. .	103
4.6. Yamaka .. .. .	105
4.7. Paṭṭhāna .. .. .	106
4.8. The Abhidharma in Sanskrit .. .. .	107

### CHAPTER III *Early post-canonical texts*

1. Early prose texts .. .. .	108
2. The early chronicles .. .. .	114
3. The early commentators .. .. .	118
3.1. Buddhaghosa .. .. .	120
3.2. Buddhadatta .. .. .	130
3.3. Mahānāma .. .. .	132
3.4. Upasena .. .. .	133
3.5. Dhammapāla .. .. .	133

### CHAPTER IV *Later post-canonical texts*

1. The later chronicles .. .. .	138
2. The later commentators .. .. .	145
2.1. Atthakathās .. .. .	145
2.2. Tīkāś .. .. .	148
3. Later Abhidhamma texts .. .. .	151
4. Collections of edifying tales .. .. .	153

5. Kāvya works .. .. .	156
6. Prophetic texts .. .. .	160
7. Medical texts .. .. .	162
8. Grammatical and lexicographical works .. .. .	163
9. Poetics and prosody .. .. .	167
10. Books on discipline .. .. .	168
11. Boundary texts .. .. .	171
12. Anthologies .. .. .	172
13. Cosmology .. .. .	174
14. Wisdom texts .. .. .	175
15. Jātaka collections .. .. .	177
16. Bibliographical works .. .. .	179

Abbreviations .. .. .	185
-----------------------	-----

Glossary .. .. .	190
------------------	-----

Index of Authors .. .. .	198
--------------------------	-----

Index of Works .. .. .	199
------------------------	-----

General Index .. .. .	206
-----------------------	-----

## FOREWORD

Despite the attempts made by A. K. Warder in his survey of Indian *kāvya* literature, and by various editors and translators in the introductions to their books, to assess the literary merit of certain Pāli works, it is nevertheless still true to say that for the Indologist Pāli literature means everything that is written in Pāli, irrespective of literary value in the accepted European sense of the word. In the space and time at my disposal, however, it was not practicable to include a mention of everything that has been published, much less include unpublished works which are at present only names in library catalogues and similar reference books. I have therefore omitted references to much of the later commentarial literature, but the biggest deficiency is in the field of South-East Asian Pāli literature. Comparatively little work has been done in this field, and although it would have been possible to extract names of works and authors secondhand from the studies that have been made, I have in general refrained from doing so. The resultant gaps in my work will need to be filled by specialist publications in due course.

Except where there is good reason to the contrary, I have dealt only with those texts which have been edited in the Roman script or been translated into a European language. I was asked to include Hīnayāna Buddhist canonical texts in Sanskrit and Prakrit, and here too I have dealt only with the works which have been published. Rather than deal with them separately, I have mentioned them under the relevant Pāli headings, since the Hīnayāna canons follow closely the pattern of the Theravādin canon, with the exception of the Abhidharma.

The bibliographical material included in the footnotes is intended only as a sample of the editions and translations which are available. With very few exceptions there is no mention of oriental editions, and it is sufficient to state here that all the Pāli canonical texts and some para-canonical ones, together with the *aṭṭhakathās* and most of the *ṭīkā*s, have been published in the Chaṭṭha-saṅgāyana series which began to appear in Burma from 1956 onwards, while most of the same texts have also been published in Ceylon. The complete canon and most of the commentaries have been published in Thailand, and editions in the *nāgarī* script have appeared in India from Nalanda and elsewhere. The bibliographical information I have given can be augmented by reference to the other sources mentioned in the notes, and especially to the Epilegomena to Vol. I of the Critical Pāli Dictionary (Copenhagen 1948). Additional and up-to-date information will be available in the new bibliography which is planned for the Epilegomena to Vol. II of that dictionary.

My debt to all others who have worked in this field will be obvious to readers of this book. When Geiger, Winternitz and Law have dealt so ably with the



whole field of Pāli literature, and Malalasekera and Bode with Sinhalese and Burmese Pāli literature respectively, it is very difficult to write about the subject without repeating what one or other of these authorities has already said. Rather than do so, and to save space, I have on many occasions referred the reader to their books. In particular, Winternitz is to be recommended for the many quotations he includes, while Law gives lengthy summaries of the contents of many texts.

Although I have occasionally given information about the formation of individual texts, I have not done this consistently throughout, nor have I dealt with any one text at great length. Those who are interested in this aspect of Pāli literature will find references in the footnotes to Pande's book, in which he deals with the first four *nikāyas* and some of the Khuddaka-nikāya. The discussion of chronological stratification is a complicated matter, and needs more space than I have at my disposal. It is also, in the absence of better criteria than we have at present, a very subjective matter, and while I would agree with much that Pande says, I cannot agree with him in everything.

Cambridge, 1 February 1982

K. R. Norman

## CHAPTER I

### THE PĀLI LANGUAGE AND THE THERAVĀDIN TRADITION

#### 1. THE NAME "PĀLI"

The dialect of Middle Indo-Aryan which is found in the texts of the Theravādin Buddhists and usually called "Pāli" by European scholars<sup>1</sup> is nowhere so called in the Theravādin canon. The word *pāli* is found in the chronicles and the commentaries upon the canon, but there it has the meaning "canon" and is used in the sense of a canonical text or phrase as opposed to the commentary (*aṭṭhakathā*) upon it.<sup>2</sup> This usage is made clear by the fact that the word *pāli* sometimes alternates with *taṇṭi*.<sup>3</sup>

It would seem that the name "Pāli" is based upon a misunderstanding of the compound *pāli-bhāsā* "language of the canon," where the word *pāli* was taken to stand for the name of a particular *bhāsā*, as a result of which the word was applied to the language of both canon and commentaries. There is evidence that this misunderstanding occurred several centuries ago. CHILDERS stated<sup>4</sup> that the English usage was taken from the Sinhalese,<sup>5</sup> who used the word in the same way. This probably accounts for CLOUGH's adoption of the name when he published his grammar in 1824.<sup>6</sup> BURNOURF and LASSEN also used the name "Pāli" in their essay on Pāli grammar which was published in 1826,<sup>7</sup> but in the survey of Pāli studies up to that year included in that work BURNOURF pointed out that the first person to mention Pāli was SIMON DE LA LOUBÈRE

<sup>1</sup> For a survey of earlier views about the name "Pāli," see O. VON HINÜBER, "Zur Geschichte des Sprachnamens Pāli," in *Beiträge zur Indienforschung*: Ernst Waldschmidt zum 80. Geburtstag gewidmet, Berlin 1977, pp. 237–46.

<sup>2</sup> E.g. *Pālimattam idh' ānitaṃ, n' aṭṭhi aṭṭhakathā idha* (Mhv XXXVII 227); *sabbākārena n' eva Pāliyaṃ na aṭṭhakathāyaṃ āgataṃ* (Vism 107, 15–16).

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *imaṃ pālinayānurūpaṃ samvaṇṇanaṃ dāni samārabhissam* (Sp 2, 11–12) with *manoramaṃ bhāsaṃ tantinayānucchavikam āropento* (Sv 1, 19–20).

<sup>4</sup> R. C. CHILDERS, A dictionary of the Pāli language, London 1875, p.vii n. l.

<sup>5</sup> The earliest example quotable seems to be from the Saṅgharājasādhucariyāva (*śaka* 1701 = A.D. 1779), according to C. H. B. REYNOLDS (quoted by BECHERT, BCSRS, p. 16).

<sup>6</sup> B. CLOUGH, A compendious Pali grammar with a copious vocabulary in the same language, Colombo 1824.

<sup>7</sup> E. BURNOURF et CHR. LASSEN, Essai sur le Pali ou langue sacrée de la presqu'île au-delà du Gange, Paris 1826.



who visited Siam in 1687–88, and published a description of the kingdom of Siam in 1691, which was translated into English in 1693.<sup>8</sup>

It is clear from this account that in Thailand in the late seventeenth century the name "Pāli" was already being used of the language of the Theravādin texts. LA LOUBÈRE noted that in contrast to Thai, which was a monosyllabic language, "Balie" (or "Baly") was inflected just like the languages of Europe.<sup>9</sup> He also drew attention to the fact that the names for the days of the week were similar in Pāli and Sanskrit,<sup>10</sup> and reported that he had been told that there were similarities between Pāli and the languages spoken near Coromandel. He commented that this was not surprising in view of the fact that the Buddha was reported to have been the son of a king of Ceylon.<sup>11</sup>

The Sāsana-vam̐sa, written in Burma in 1861, uses the word *pāli* in a context where it seems to be the name of a language.<sup>12</sup> Since the Sāsana-vam̐sa is based upon an earlier Burmese text,<sup>13</sup> the usage of the name "Pāli" in Burma is probably earlier than would appear. It seems unlikely that the usage arose independently in all three countries, but in the present state of our knowledge it does not seem possible to determine where the misunderstanding first occurred.

## 2. THE HISTORY AND DEVELOPMENT OF THE PĀLI LANGUAGE

The commentaries state that the language spoken by the Buddha, which is the language of the canon, is Māgadhi.<sup>14</sup> This is referred to as the *mūla-bhāsā*,<sup>15</sup> the root language of all languages, and the language which a child would speak naturally if it heard no other language spoken.<sup>16</sup>

An examination of the Pāli canon shows clearly that portions, at least, of it were either composed or transmitted through one or more other dialects of Middle Indo-Aryan, before being turned into the version which exists at present. It can be shown that these dialects included those where the voicing of

<sup>8</sup> SIMON DE LA LOUBÈRE, *The kingdom of Siam*, London 1693 (repr. 1969).

<sup>9</sup> Ibid. p. 9.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid. p. 168.

<sup>11</sup> Ibid. p. 11.

<sup>12</sup> [Buddhaghosa] *icc evaṃ pāli-bhāsāya pariyattim parivattitvā pacchā ... jīnacakkaṃ ... atidhībati* (Sās 31, 31); cf. *parivattesi sabbā pi Sihalatthakathā tadā sabbesaṃ mūlabhāsāya Māgadhiyā niruttiyā* (Mhv XXXVII 244).

<sup>13</sup> See V. B. LIEBERMANN, "A new look at the Sāsana-vam̐sa," in BSOAS 39 (1976), pp. 137–49.

<sup>14</sup> *sammāsambuddho pi tepitakam Buddhavacanam tantim āropento Māgadhabhāsāya eva āropesi* (Vibh-a 388, 7–8).

<sup>15</sup> Buddhaghosa says: *Māgadhiyā sabbā-sattānam mūlabhāsāya* (Vism 441, 34); cf. *sabbesaṃ mūlabhāsāya Māgadhiyā niruttiyā* (Mhv XXXVII 244).

<sup>16</sup> *ubhinnam pi pana katham asuñanto Māgadhabhāsam bhāssati* (Vibh-a 387, 32–33).

intervocalic consonants took place, or their reduction to -y-, or -r- became -l-.<sup>17</sup> Some of the Pāli material came from or through dialects where the absolutive was in -*ttā*,<sup>18</sup> the nominative singular in -e, or the locative plural in -*ehi*.<sup>19</sup> It is clear, therefore, that the statement that the canon is in one dialect, whether Māgadhi or anything else, cannot be true of all of it. What we know of Māgadhi as described by the grammarians in later times, however, enables us to say that Pāli is not Māgadhi, and although we have no direct evidence about the characteristics of Māgadhi in the centuries before Asoka, we can deduce with some certainty that Pāli does not agree with that either.<sup>20</sup>

It would seem likely that, because the texts tell of the Buddha at times preaching in Magadha, although none of the scenes of the great events in his life was situated within the boundaries of Magadha as we know it in historical times,<sup>21</sup> the tradition arose that all his sermons were preached in the dialect of that region of North India. It is also possible that the prestige attaching to Magadha, and by implication to Māgadhi, during the time of the Mauryan kings, and also the way in which the Māgadhi<sup>22</sup> of the original Asokan edicts was everywhere in India "translated" into the local dialect or language, led to the taking over by the Buddhists, at about the time of the council which the Theravādin tradition reports was held during the reign of Asoka, of the idea that their "ruler" too employed such a language.

Although there is some doubt about the interpretation of the phrase the Buddha used when asked if it was permissible to translate his sermons,<sup>23</sup> it is generally agreed that he did not preach in Sanskrit, but employed the dialect or language of the area where he was preaching. We must assume that his sermons and utterances were remembered by his followers and his audiences as they heard them. In the course of time, during his lifetime and after his death, collections must have been made of his words, and translations or

<sup>17</sup> See LÜDERS, BSU, §§ 58–86, 88–115.

<sup>18</sup> See O. VON HINÜBER, "Pāli as an artificial language," to appear in JT 10 (1982), and K. R. NORMAN, "Four etymologies from the Sabhiya-sutta," in BALASOORIYA, BSWR, p. 183 n. 21.

<sup>19</sup> See LÜDERS, BSU, §§ 1–21, 220–25.

<sup>20</sup> See K. R. NORMAN, "The dialects in which the Buddha preached," in BECHERT, LEPT, pp. 69–71.

<sup>21</sup> F. EDGERTON (BHS Grammar, New Haven 1953, p. 3 n. 8) has pointed out that neither the Buddha's home (Kapilavastu), nor one of his favourite dwelling places (Śrāvastī), nor the scene of his first sermon (Benares), nor the place of his death (Kūśinagarī, Pāli Kūsinārā) was in Magadha.

<sup>22</sup> I use "Māgadhi" here in the sense of the language of Magadha at the time of Asoka, without thereby implying that it necessarily had the same features as the grammarians' Māgadhi.

<sup>23</sup> When asked if his words could be translated *chandaso*, the Buddha forbade it, but added: *anujānāmi bhikkhave sakāya niruttiyā buddhavacanam pariyāpunitum* (Vin II 139, 14–16). For a discussion, with references to earlier views, of the words *chandaso* and *sakāya niruttiyā*, see J. BROUGH, "Sakāya niruttiyā: Cauld kale het," in BECHERT, LEPT, pp. 35–42.



redactions of these must have been made as the need arose, either because the collections were being taken into an area where a different dialect or language was spoken, or because as time went by his words became less intelligible as their language became more archaic.

As Buddhism became established in various parts of North India, there must have been an attempt made to render all the holdings of any particular *vihāra*, which were probably still in various dialects as they had been remembered, roughly homogeneous in language, although we must bear in mind the fact that, as the dialects of North India had probably not diverged greatly from each other in the fourth and third centuries B.C., absolute perfection of "translation" was not essential. The anomalous forms in Pāli mentioned above probably represent the remnants of recensions in other dialects, which had not been completely translated.

The Theravādin tradition tells of councils (*saṅgītis*) being held to recite the canon, of which the third was held in the time of Asoka,<sup>24</sup> and although the discrepancies with the Northern tradition cast doubt upon this, there must have been gatherings of some sort where recitations took place, and the "imprimatur" of the *Saṅgha* was bestowed. Such councils would inevitably have led to a normalisation of the language of the canon to a greater or less extent.

Since this normalised language was an "ecclesiastical" one, being recited by monks who probably spoke a variety of languages or dialects, there is no necessity to assume that it coincided exactly with any one particular spoken language. It has been claimed in the case of Pāli that as there are resemblances between it and the Gīrṇār dialect of the Asokan inscriptions,<sup>25</sup> and also between it and the language of the Hāthigumphā inscriptions,<sup>26</sup> Pāli must have been the language of one or other of these two areas. A careful examination of the language of these inscriptions shows that Pāli is not identical with either of them, and there is, moreover, some doubt about the language of the Gīrṇār version of the Asokan inscriptions, since it is possible that it represents, in part at least, the scribe's attempt to convert the Eastern dialect he must have received from Pāṭaliputra into what he thought was appropriate to the region in which the edict was being promulgated, rather than the actual dialect of that region.<sup>27</sup> The language of the Hāthigumphā inscription, although it agrees

<sup>24</sup> If the Northern tradition that the second council took place in Asoka's reign is correct (see THOMAS, HBT, p. 34), then it is possible that the Theravādins held a third council later in the same reign, after ridding themselves of heretics. Perhaps the figure of 118 years connected with this third council refers to the number of years after the Buddha's *parinibbāna*, not after the second council.

<sup>25</sup> J. BLOCH, states: "Gīrṇār fournit la langue la plus proche du pali des livres bouddhiques singhalais, qui nous servira de repère: c'est du reste en raison de cette ressemblance qu'on suppose le pali originaire d'une région voisine" (Les inscriptions d'Asoka, Paris 1950, pp. 44-45).

<sup>26</sup> See OLDENBERG, Vin I, p. liv.

<sup>27</sup> See K. R. NORMAN, "The dialects in which the Buddha preached," in BECHERT, LEHT, p. 69.

with Pāli in the retention of most intervocalic consonants and in the nominative singular in -o, nevertheless differs in that the absolutive ending is -(t)ā, and with two doubtful exceptions there are no consonant groups containing -r.<sup>28</sup>

While it is not impossible that there existed in India in the third century B.C. an unattested dialect of Middle Indo-Aryan which had all the features of Pāli, the fact that some of the consonant clusters found in Pāli are unhistoric and must therefore represent incorrect attempts at backformation, e.g. *divvā* (which cannot be from *dr̥ṣṭvā*) and *atraja* (which cannot be from *ātmaja*), makes it more likely that by the third century B.C. the dialect of the canonical texts of the Theravādins conformed to the general pattern of Middle Indo-Aryan dialects of that time, and all consonant clusters had either been assimilated or resolved. It is probable that this represented the form of the language of the Theravādin canon at the time of the reign of Asoka, which was perhaps the *lingua franca* of the Buddhists of Eastern India, and not very different from the language of the Hāthigumphā inscriptions.

At some unknown date, probably around the end of Asoka's reign (c. 235 B.C.), the importance of Sanskrit which had been in eclipse began to rise again, and as we can see from the progressive Sanskritisation of the Mathurā inscriptions<sup>29</sup> and the non-Pāli schools of Buddhism, an attempt was made to translate from the Middle Indo-Aryan dialects into Sanskrit. It is probable that this would have been done in a haphazard way at first, in the same way as the early texts had been remembered and translated from dialect to dialect. With the crystallisation of sects and schools, and with the increased use of writing from the time of Asoka onwards, it is probable that the use of Sanskritised forms by the Theravādins became more standardised.

The tradition recorded in the Sinhalese chronicles states that the Theravādin canon was written down<sup>30</sup> during the first century B.C. as a result of threats to the *Saṅgha* from famine, war, and the growing power of the Abhayagiri *vihāra*, to which the king was more favourably disposed. There is no reason to reject this tradition, because there are indications that texts were already being written down before this date.<sup>31</sup> It seems probable that the Sanskritisation of Pāli was virtually fixed at the stage it had reached by the time of the commission to writing, and except for any changes made later by the scribes for the sake of consistency, no further progress was made with the restoration of consonant groups. Those changes which had been made, in a haphazard way as already stated, had probably occurred for specific religious or cultural reasons. It is, for example, probable that the authentic Middle Indo-Aryan form *bam-*

<sup>28</sup> In his revised edition of the inscription, B. M. BARUA read *brahmanānam* in line 8a and -*prāci*- in line 9 ("Hāthigumphā inscription of Khāravala," in IHQ 14, p. 466).

<sup>29</sup> See TH. DAMSTEEGT, Epigraphical Hybrid Sanskrit, Leiden 1978, p. 265.

<sup>30</sup> See p. 10 below.

<sup>31</sup> See BROUGH, G Dhp, p. 218.



*hapa* "brahman" had been replaced by the Sanskrit form *brāhmaṇa* because of the strongly anti-brahmanical flavour of the Buddha's teaching. It was perhaps of little value to condemn the brahmins or to maintain that a Buddhist "brahman" was better than a true-born brahman if the recipients of the attack did not recognise their name in its Middle Indo-Aryan guise. Once the *br-* group had been restored<sup>32</sup> in *brāhmaṇa*, then the way was open for its "restoration" in other words, e.g. *brūhetī*, even if it were not historically justified. On the other hand, there was no specific need to restore *pr-*, even though one might have expected the treatment of voiced and unvoiced labials in conjunction with *-r-* to have been identical.

Although the chances of major changes being made to the language of the canon must have diminished once the texts had been written down, nevertheless there was room for a certain amount of minor emendation to take place in the course of the centuries-long scribal tradition. Once the Pāli grammarians had begun to classify and categorise the features of Pāli, it was inevitable that their writings would have some effect upon scribes. It is clear from some of the later commentaries that the commentators had a knowledge of Sanskrit.<sup>33</sup> There is evidence that the opinions of the commentators sometimes had a bearing upon the readings which the scribes handed down,<sup>34</sup> and it seems likely that their knowledge might well also affect the phonology and morphology they transmitted. It has been said, with some justification, that the Pāli of the canon as we have it now is a reflection of the Pāli of the twelfth century,<sup>35</sup> when the influence of the Pāli grammarians was at its highest.

It was to be expected that Pāli would show the influence of Sanskrit, because it was copied by scribes who were influenced by the grammarians, who were themselves influenced by Sanskrit, but we must also recognise the fact that as Pāli became the religious language of Buddhism in Ceylon and South-East Asia, it was used by a variety of persons as a second language. This led inevitably to the introduction into Pāli of features of their first language, more particularly of vocabulary, but also of syntax. Studies of Pāli texts written in Ceylon show clearly the influence of Sinhalese Prakrit and Sinhalese, and also Dravidian,<sup>36</sup> probably through the medium of Sinhalese. In the same way

<sup>32</sup> It would be possible to argue that the form *brāhmaṇa* had been retained unchanged from the very oldest stage of MIA for this same reason. It can, however, be shown that in certain contexts, at least, the expected MIA form of the word occurred. The etymologies which connect *brāhmaṇa* with the root *bāh-*, e.g. *bāhita-pāpo ti brāhmaṇo* (Dhp 388), make sense only in a dialect where initial *br-* had become *b-*.

<sup>33</sup> See DE SILVA, DAT, I, pp. lvi-lviii.

<sup>34</sup> See O. VON HINÜBER, "On the tradition of Pāli texts in India, Ceylon and Burma," in BECHERT, BCSRS, pp. 55-57.

<sup>35</sup> HELMER SMITH (Sadd, p. vi) writes of "la conviction que notre pali est une fonction de celui du 12<sup>me</sup> siècle."

<sup>36</sup> See K. DE VREESE, "Dravidian idioms in later Pāli," in *Orientalia Lovaniensia Periodica* 11, pp. 179-222.

texts written in Burma<sup>37</sup> or Thailand<sup>38</sup> may reveal features of Burmese or Thai.

All Hinayāna canonical texts show evidence of being translated from a dialect of Middle Indo-Aryan. The North-Western Prakrit of the Gāndhāri Dharmapada has features, e.g. dental *-s-* where retroflex *-ṣ-* is expected, which prove that it has been translated from some other Prakrit.<sup>39</sup> The Sanskrit of the Sarvāstivādin texts from Chinese Turkestan and the Mūla-sarvāstivādin texts from Gilgit shows, in general, less Prakrit features than the language of the Mahāsaṅghika-Lokottaravādin texts,<sup>40</sup> although the latter, mostly known only from a single manuscript, are not consistent in their degree of Sanskritisation. Their version of the Dharmapada,<sup>41</sup> for example, has restored some retroflex and palatal sibilants, many long vowels before consonant groups, and some consonant clusters containing *-r-*, but very few containing *-v-*,<sup>42</sup> e.g. absolutes have the ending *-tā*. The nominative singular ending is *-o*. In the Bhikkūṇi-Vinaya,<sup>43</sup> on the other hand, the absolute ending is *-tā*, and the nominative ending *-aḥ* occurs.

### 3. THE HISTORY OF THE THERAVĀDIN TRADITION

All the schools of Buddhism agree that there was a council held soon after the death of the Buddha. According to the earliest version found in Pāli,<sup>44</sup> there was a meeting of 500 *bhikkhus*, where Mahākassapa asked Upāli about the *vinaya*, questioning him about the rules of the *Pātimokkha*, where the offence was laid down, with respect to whom, on what subject, etc. He then questioned Ānanda about the *dhmma*, starting with the Brahmajāla-sutta of the Dīgha-nikāya, and then the Sāmaññaphala-sutta, and so on through the five *nikāyas*. As the two experts expounded these matters, the other *theras*

<sup>37</sup> See VICTOR B. LIEBERMAN, "A new look at the Sāsana-vamsa," in BSOAS 39 (1976), p. 146.

<sup>38</sup> See N. A. JAYAWICKRAMA, The sheaf of garlands of the epochs of the conqueror, PTS London, 1968, pp. xxxvii-xxxix, and G. TERRAL, "Samuddaghojātakā," in BEFEO 48 (1956), pp. 263-65.

<sup>39</sup> See BROUGH, G Dhp, § 50.

<sup>40</sup> See F. EDGERTON, BHS Grammar, New Haven 1953, p. xxv. EDGERTON classifies the Mahāsaṅghika-Lokottaravādin Mahāvastu as being the oldest BHS text we have.

<sup>41</sup> Ed. G. ROTH, in "The language of the Ārya-Mahāsaṅghika-Lokottaravādina," in BECHERT, LEPT, pp. 78-135, and also by N. S. SHUKLA, The Buddhist Hybrid Sanskrit Dharmapada, Patna 1979.

<sup>42</sup> From the Pkt form *diṭṭhā* the redactor produced *drṣṭā* instead of *drṣṭā*.

<sup>43</sup> Ed. G. ROTH, Bhikkūṇi-vinaya: manual of discipline for Buddhist nuns, Patna 1970.

<sup>44</sup> Vin II 285, 9-287, 28.



repeated their words after them. Buddhaghosa, in his account of the same council,<sup>42</sup> states that the fifth *nikāya*, the Khuddaka-nikāya, included whatever sayings of the Buddha were not included in the first four *nikāyas*. The Pāli account does not mention the Abhidhamma specifically, although Buddhaghosa's interpretation of *nikāya* does not preclude the inclusion of the Abhidhamma in the Khuddaka-nikāya. The versions of the story included in the *Dīpavaṃsa* and the *Mahāvamsa*<sup>43</sup> state that Ānanda repeated the *dhamma*, which could be taken to include the Abhidhamma. Some of the Northern schools, however, do specifically include the Abhidhamma, and state that this was expounded by Kassapa himself.<sup>47</sup>

The version in the *Dīpavaṃsa*<sup>44</sup> states that the *theras* divided up the nine-fold *dhamma* into chapters, etc. This seems to be an attempt to reconcile the old nine-fold division with the arrangement of the canon as we have it now. Buddhaghosa attributes to the *theras* all the *uddāna* verses, noting of repetitions, etc., which exist in the canon.<sup>45</sup> There are in commentaries by Buddhaghosa and others not infrequently statements that a portion of the text is due to the *saṅgītikāras*, and it is probable that these ascriptions are taken over from the earlier Sihala *aṭṭhakathās*. Although there is no reason to doubt that these portions are indeed later additions to the canon, and were made by *saṅgītikāras*, there is no certainty that they were added at the time of the first council.

Although we may have reservations about the texts which were dealt with at the first council, there is no reason to doubt the general way in which it was held. The chosen expert in each section of the Buddha's teachings expounded what he could remember, and when it had been approved as a genuine utterance of the Buddha the assembly as a whole confirmed their approval by repeating it together. The commentaries explain that the words "Thus have I heard" at the beginning of the *suttas* are the words which Ānanda used to introduce his recitation.<sup>46</sup>

Buddhaghosa tells us that after the council the Vinaya was entrusted to Upāli and his pupils. Similarly the Dīgha-, Majjhima-, Saṃyutta- and Aṅguttara-nikāyas were entrusted to Ānanda, Sāriputta, Mahākassapa and Anuruddha, respectively, and their pupils.<sup>47</sup> This was probably the beginning of the system of the *bhāṇakas* ("reciters"), who shared out the recitation of the *dhamma* among themselves. We find in the commentaries references to *bhāṇakas* of the first four *nikāyas*, and to Jātaka-bhāṇakas and Dhammapada-bhāṇakas.<sup>48</sup>

<sup>42</sup> Sp 16, 14–15.

<sup>43</sup> Dip IV 11; Mhv III 35.

<sup>44</sup> See THOMAS, HBT, p. 28 n. 1.

<sup>45</sup> Dip IV 18–20. See p. 16 below.

<sup>46</sup> Sp 30, 1–5.

<sup>47</sup> *Brahmajāla-sūpi* "evam me sutaṃ" ti ādikam āyasmatā Ānandena paṭṭhama-mahāsaṅgīti-kāle vuttaṃ nidānam ādi (Sv 2, 14–15).

<sup>48</sup> Sv 13, 23–24; 15, 2–13.

<sup>49</sup> See ADIKARAM, EHBC, pp. 24–30.

Although there seems to be only one reference to Khuddaka-bhāṇakas,<sup>49</sup> we may assume that there were *bhāṇakas* of the other texts of the Khuddaka-nikāya. We may deduce from the fact that versions of one and the same *sutta* or utterance in different parts of the canon sometimes differ, that the *bhāṇakas* responsible for the transmission of each text were quite independent, and were not influenced by the traditions of the *bhāṇakas* of other *nikāyas*. This would explain why the versions of Vaṅgisa's stanzas in the Saṃyutta-nikāya and the Theragāthā do not entirely agree.<sup>54</sup>

The views of the *bhāṇakas* were not confined to the texts for whose recitation they were responsible. They also had views about the books which were to be regarded as canonical. We read that the Dīgha-bhāṇakas put the Khuddakagantha into the Abhidhammapiṭaka, classifying the texts in the following order: Jātaka Mahānidessa Cūlaniddesa Paṭisambhidāmagga Suttanipāta Dhammapada Udāna Itivuttaka Vimānavatthu Petavatthu Theragāthā Therīgāthā. The Majjhima-bhāṇakas, however, put them in the Suttanta-piṭaka together with the Cariyapīṭaka, the Apadāna and the Buddhavaṃsa.<sup>55</sup> They thus omitted the Khuddakapāṭha from the canon. We must assume that the Dīgha-bhāṇakas closed their list of the Khuddaka-nikāya before these texts were added to it, while the Majjhima-bhāṇakas closed their list before the Khuddakapāṭha was reckoned as being canonical.

The schools of *bhāṇakas* also had their own views about the history of early Buddhism, e.g. the Dīgha-bhāṇakas said that the Bodhisatta saw all four *nimittas* on the same day,<sup>56</sup> while other *bhāṇakas* had other views; the Majjhima-bhāṇakas gave a different reason from the Dīgha-bhāṇakas for Ānanda's late arrival at the Council.<sup>57</sup> To judge from the way that Buddhaghosa speaks about them, the *bhāṇakas* were still active in his day, but they seem not to exist today, at least not in Ceylon.<sup>58</sup> It is likely that the growth of the practice of writing, and the increasing use of MSS, made it unnecessary to keep up the schools which were dedicated to the recitation of the complete *nikāyas* entrusted to their care.

The Pāli Vinaya-piṭaka goes on to relate how, following a dispute over certain points of discipline 100 years after the death of the Buddha, a second council was held. In the presence of 700 *bhikkhus*, Revata asked the *thera* Sabbakāmin about the discipline. This council is described in the Vinaya as a *vinaya-saṅgīti*.<sup>59</sup> The *Dīpavaṃsa* calls it a *dhammasaṅgaha*, and is followed in this by the *Mahāvamsa*.<sup>60</sup> The latter source adds that the 700 were *tipiṭakatta-*

<sup>49</sup> Mil 342, 1.

<sup>54</sup> Compare especially Th 1253–62 with S I 196, 11–21.

<sup>55</sup> Sv 15, 22–29.

<sup>56</sup> Ja I 59, 31–32.

<sup>57</sup> Sv 11, 3.

<sup>58</sup> See ADIKARAM, EHBC, p. 32.

<sup>59</sup> Vin II 307, 35.

<sup>60</sup> Dip V 28; Mhv IV 63.

*yadharins*.<sup>61</sup> Buddhaghosa expands the story, and says that 700 *tipiṭakadhāras* were chosen to rehearse the *dharmā* and the *vinaya*, which they recited in their entirety.<sup>62</sup>

At some time after the second council, the dissident monks split off from the Theravādins and held their own "great council" (*mahāsaṅgīti*). They consequently became known as Mahāsaṅgitikas<sup>63</sup> or Mahāsaṅghikas.<sup>64</sup> During the following centuries further splits occurred, from both the Theravādins and the Mahāsaṅghikas, until by the time of the early chronicles eighteen sects were known and named.<sup>65</sup>

The earliest Pāli source for the account of the third council, held during the reign of Asoka and not mentioned as such in the Northern Buddhist sources, is the *Dīpaṃsa*.<sup>66</sup> There we read that the council was held after the expulsion of certain heretics from the Order. Moggaliputta presided over 1,000 *bhikkhus*, and during the course of the *saṅgīti* he recited the *Kathāvatthu*. The *Mahāvamsa*<sup>67</sup> adds the detail that the *bhikkhus* were all *tepiṭakas*. Buddhaghosa states<sup>68</sup> that they recited both the *dharmā* and the *vinaya*.

Buddhaghosa gives an account<sup>69</sup> of an assembly held in Ceylon, soon after the introduction of Buddhism there, when the elder Mahā-āriṭṭha preached the *vinaya*. The *Mahāvamsa* does not mention this assembly, but in the account of it given in the *Saddhammasaṅgaha*,<sup>70</sup> the recitation is said to have included both the *vinaya* and the *dharmā*, and the assembly is specifically called the fourth assembly, and verses attributed to the *porāṇas* are quoted which include the words *catuttham saṅgaham katvā*.<sup>71</sup> The *Jinakālamālī*<sup>72</sup> follows Buddhaghosa in stating that Mahā-āriṭṭha recited the *vinaya* only. The verse found in the *Saddhammasaṅgaha* is quoted by Buddhaghosa,<sup>73</sup> without attribution to the *porāṇas*, but the words of the *pāda* in question are different, and make no mention of the *catutthasaṅgaha*.

The *Dīpaṃsa* states<sup>74</sup> that during the reign of Vaṭṭagāmaṇi Abhaya (29–17 B.C.) the monks who had previously remembered the *Tipiṭaka* and its commentary orally now wrote them down in books, because of the threat posed by famine, war, and the growing power of the newly established Abhayagiri

*vihāra*, which enjoyed the king's favour. The *Mahāvamsa*<sup>75</sup> also refers briefly to the writing down of the canon and the commentaries at this time. The *Pūjāvaliya* and *Nikāyasaṅgraha*,<sup>76</sup> however, written in Ceylon in the 13th and 14th centuries respectively, state that the writing down was a result of the holding of a council of 500 *bhikkhus* at the Aluvihāra (Āloka-vihāra), although neither source gives a number to the council.<sup>77</sup> The *Jinakālamālī*,<sup>78</sup> however, entitles this section of its narrative *Catutthasaṅgītikathā*, and quotes a statement from the *Sāra-saṅgaha*, written in the 13th or 14th century, that the *saṅgīti* was *catutthadhammasaṅgītisadisā*. The *Saddhammasaṅgaha* does not specifically call this the fifth council, as it might have been expected to do, but states: *pañcamam dhammasaṅgītisadisam eva akāsi*.<sup>79</sup> Of the writing down of the *Tipiṭaka* and commentaries in the time of Vaṭṭagāmaṇi, the *Sāsanavamsa*, written in Burma in 1861 by Paññāsāmi, but following earlier sources, states<sup>80</sup> that "this should be called even by the name of the fourth council." It quotes as an authority for this statement the *Vinaya-tīkā* called *Sāratthadīpanī*, written by Sāriputta<sup>81</sup> probably in the 12th century, which states "The council for writing the books was indeed the fourth council." The *Sāsanavamsa* also states<sup>82</sup> that the list of elders down to Siva which is found in the *Vinaya*<sup>83</sup> is the "succession of elders down to those who assembled in the fourth council as recorded in books."

The *Dīpaṃsa*, followed by Buddhaghosa and the *Mahāvamsa*,<sup>84</sup> tells how one of the missions sent out by Moggaliputta after the third council consisted of Soṇa(ka) and Uttara who went to Suvannabhūmi, which is usually identified as Burma. The Burmese tradition, however, has it that Buddhism was established in Burma even earlier than that. The *Sāsanavamsa*<sup>85</sup> tells of the Buddha actually visiting that country, a story doubtless invented to match his alleged visits to Ceylon. The later Burmese tradition even claims Buddhaghosa as a native of Thatōn.<sup>86</sup>

There is evidence for the existence of Buddhism in both Burma and Siam by the seventh century A.D., and a number of Buddhist texts were certainly

<sup>61</sup> Mhv XXXIII 100–101.

<sup>62</sup> "During his reign 500 Rahats resided in the Alulena cave and rehearsed the [sacred] books" (*Pūjāvaliya*, tr. B. GUNASEKERA, Colombo 1895, ch. 34). "At that time 500 Rahats who assembled at Alulena in the country of Mātala, under the patronage of a certain chief, recited and reduced to writing the text of the Three Pitakas" (*Nikāyasaṅgraha*, tr. C. M. FERNANDO, Colombo 1908).

<sup>63</sup> As I am informed by Mr C. H. B. REYNOLDS, Lecturer in Sinhalese at the School of Oriental and African Studies in the University of London.

<sup>64</sup> Jinak 61, 11–12.

<sup>65</sup> *Saddhamma-s* 49, 5–6.

<sup>66</sup> Sās 23, 26–27.

<sup>67</sup> Gv 61, 30–31.

<sup>68</sup> Sās 20, 5–6.

<sup>69</sup> Vin V 3, 1–28.

<sup>70</sup> Dip VIII 12; Sp 64, 3–4; Mhv XII 6.

<sup>71</sup> Sās 36, 33–37, 3.

<sup>72</sup> See PE MAUNG TIN and G. H. LUCE (tr.), *The Glass Palace Chronicle of the Kings of Burma*, London 1923, pp. 46–50.

<sup>61</sup> Mhv IV 62.

<sup>62</sup> Sp 34, 16–22.

<sup>63</sup> Dip V 32.

<sup>64</sup> Mhv V 4.

<sup>65</sup> Dip V 51; Mhv V 10.

<sup>66</sup> Dip VII 39–40; 57–59.

<sup>67</sup> Mhv V 275.

<sup>68</sup> Sp 61, 19.

<sup>69</sup> Sp 102, 23–103, 22.

<sup>70</sup> *Saddhamma-s* 43, 29–44, 29.

<sup>71</sup> *Saddhamma-s* 45, 11.

<sup>72</sup> Jinak 50, 17.

<sup>73</sup> Sp 104, 5–6.

<sup>74</sup> Dip XX 20–21.



known in Burma in the eighth century,<sup>87</sup> although it is not certain whether the whole Tipiṭaka was known there at that time. The *Sāsanaṃsa*<sup>88</sup> refers to inscriptions stating that King Anuruddha established the religion c. A.D. 1057 after conquering the town of Sudhamma (Thatōn). He had the Tipiṭaka brought from Ceylon and compared with that from Sudhamma. Communication with Ceylon at this time is confirmed by a report in the *Mahāvamsa*<sup>89</sup> that King Vijayabāhu, finding that there were not enough ordained monks in Ceylon to hold the *upasampadā* ceremony, asked Anuruddha to send monks to hold the ceremony, and to recite the Tipiṭaka.

In the following century, when Parakkamabāhu I became king, he found that Buddhism in Ceylon was still rent by heresy. He accordingly called a council under Mahākassapa and had them settle the points in dispute, and thus managed to reconcile the three main sects in Ceylon at that time.<sup>90</sup>

We read in the *Jinakālamālī*<sup>91</sup> that in A.D. 1430 the Sihalāsāsana was brought to Siam, and not long after, in 1475–77, a council was held in Siam<sup>92</sup> at which the three Piṭakas were “cleansed of scribes’ errors” by great elders appointed for the task, who were well versed in the Tipiṭaka. As in the case of Burma, the traffic was not all one way. In 1756 Buddhism had declined to such a state in Ceylon that it became necessary to re-establish the *upasampadā*, and monks were invited from Siam to do this.<sup>93</sup> They brought with them books of various sorts, on the *dhamma* and the *vinaya*, which were not extant in Ceylon. In 1802 Burmese monks were invited to Ceylon to introduce the Burmese *upasampadā*.<sup>94</sup> Subsequently Sinhalese monks went to Burma and studied the Abhidhamma, and on their return they brought back Pāli books written by Burmese monks.

Towards the end of the 19th century King Min-dōn-min, whose tutor Paññāsāmi had written the *Sāsanaṃsa* only a few years before, convened a fifth council (1868–71), where under the presidency of the king eminent monks and teachers read or recited the sacred texts to restore the best readings. The complete text of the Tipiṭaka was engraved on 729 stone slabs around the Kuthodaw Pagoda in Mandalay. The dates on the slabs indicate that the texts had probably already been carved before the council was held, and were then corrected in the light of any discussion.<sup>95</sup>

<sup>87</sup> See G. H. LUCE, “The advent of Buddhism to Burma,” in COUSINS, BSIBH, pp. 119–38.

<sup>88</sup> *silālekhaṇesu vuttam* (Sās 64, 1–2).

<sup>89</sup> Mhv LX 5–7.

<sup>90</sup> Mhv LXXVIII 16–27.

<sup>91</sup> Jinak 93, 17–20.

<sup>92</sup> Jinak 115, 5–6.

<sup>93</sup> Mhv C 152–53.

<sup>94</sup> See MAHALASEKERA, PLC, p. 309 and BODE, PLB, pp. 77–78 and 83–84.

<sup>95</sup> See W. B. BOLLÉE, “Some lesser known Burmese Pāli texts,” in HEESTERMAN, *Pratid*, pp. 493–99.

The Mandalay slabs were re-inked and copied for the sixth council which was held in Rangoon in 1954–56, to mark the 2,500th anniversary of the Buddha’s birth (according to the oriental tradition of chronology). We are informed<sup>96</sup> that a draft edition of the Tipiṭaka, commentaries and sub-commentaries, based upon the fifth council edition which had been revised after comparison with texts from other countries, was prepared by a body of scholars. This was then checked and re-edited by a large number of Burmese *mahātheras*, and simultaneously by a smaller number of Sinhalese monks. The final version was decided upon (not without argument) by boards of reviewers composed of Burmese, Sinhalese, and Thai monks. The new editions were then ready for printing. The task of the council, spread over two years, was the ceremonial recitation and formal confirmation of the new editions. Although invited, no representative of Cambodia or Laos was able to attend the meetings for scrutinising the new editions, but the Cambodians and Laotians are reported to have given their assent to the decisions arrived at by the representatives of the other countries. While the vast majority of monks present at the sixth council were Burmese, recognition was given to the other countries by appointing their representatives as chairmen for the various sessions.

It is not inappropriate to talk of a Burmese or Siamese or Sinhalese tradition for the transmission of a particular text, and the differences which we find between the readings of the MSS belonging to the various traditions must go back to the councils which have been held from time to time in the different countries. The value of each tradition will depend upon the care with which evidence for variant readings was sifted, and the criteria which were adopted as the basis of the decisions which were made. We have, of course, no way of discovering this for the earlier councils. The way in which the preliminary work for the sixth council was carried out should have resulted in an eclectic edition of the canon and the commentaries, incorporating the best readings from all the oriental editions. It is probable, however, that the *Chattṭhasaṅgāyana* edition is based predominantly upon the Burmese tradition, but it is not possible to be certain about this without carrying out a detailed comparison between that edition and the one inscribed after the fifth council.

The way in which the *upasampadā* was re-introduced from one Buddhist country into another, and books were brought by visiting monks, has led to a situation where the traditions of each country have become to some extent interwoven. It is sometimes possible to detect the effect which this has had. When, for example, variant readings in a Sinhalese MS depend upon the similarity in shape of two *akṣaras* which resemble each other in the Burmese script, but not in the Sinhalese syllabary, then we have a clear indication that at some time a Burmese MS has been transliterated into Sinhalese characters.<sup>97</sup> The

<sup>96</sup> See D. E. SMITH, *Religion and Politics in Burma*, Princeton 1965, pp. 160–63.

<sup>97</sup> The *anusvāra* and the *i-mātrā* are similar in the Burmese script, but not in the Sinhalese, so that any Sinhalese manuscript which shows *-am* as a mistake for *-i* must be based upon a transcript from a Burmese manuscript.

export of MSS sometimes results in the fact that a text which has been lost in the country of its origin may be found, safely preserved for centuries, in another country.<sup>98</sup>

In more modern times the ease of communication has led to a situation where it can become very easy for cross-fertilisation of traditions to take place. The editors of the second European edition of the Sutta-nipāta draw attention to the fact that they have ignored the Siamese edition of that text because it has been influenced by the first European edition.<sup>99</sup> It is nevertheless possible that MSS are still extant in libraries in Ceylon, Burma, and Thailand which are based upon a tradition which pre-dates, and therefore perhaps preserves readings older than and rejected by, more recent councils and editions.

Although not so well documented as the Theravādin tradition, it must be assumed that the other traditions followed a similar pattern of recitation and validation as canonical by assemblies of monks. The council held by the Mahā-sāṅghikas after the schism which followed the second council has already been mentioned. The alternative name of the sect suggests that the story of their holding a council is correct, although it is possible that its occurrence was merely deduced by the Theravādins, who observing differences between the canons of the two sects assumed that their rivals would, like themselves, need the authority of a council to authenticate their canon.

Hsüan-tsang records a story that under Kāśika 500 elders subjected the Buddhist texts to a revision and wrote commentaries upon them.<sup>100</sup> These commentaries were then deposited in a *stūpa*. This is designated in the Kanjur as the third council.<sup>101</sup> If the story is true, it presumably refers to the Sarvāstivādins, who were strong in Kashmir, where the council was held. It is, however, possible that the story was an invention, made up as a direct imitation of the accounts of the earlier councils. The fact that one of the commentaries alleged to have been composed at that council actually exists<sup>102</sup> does not prove the existence of the council.

<sup>98</sup> NĀNAMOLI suggests (Peṭ tr., p. xiii) that an original manuscript of the Peṭakopadesa may have been imported into Burma from Ceylon or South India at an early date, and all other Indian and Sinhalese manuscripts have been subsequently destroyed by time and neglect, so that the text is now entirely dependent upon a single Burmese manuscript, now lost.

<sup>99</sup> See D. ANDERSEN and H. SMITH, Sn, p. vi n. 1.

<sup>100</sup> See S. BEAL (tr.), Buddhist record of the western world, London 1884, I, pp. 152-56.

<sup>101</sup> See THOMAS, HBT, p. 175.

<sup>102</sup> See *ibid.*, p. 176.

## CHAPTER II

### THE PĀLI CANON

#### 1. THE DIVISIONS OF THE CANON

Buddhaghosa gives several ways of classifying the Canon. He states<sup>1</sup> that it is uniform in sentiment, twofold as regards the *dharmma* and the *vinaya*, threefold as regards the first, middle and last words, and also as regards the *piṭakas*, fivefold as regards the *nikāyas*, ninefold as regards the *aṅgas*, and forming 84,000 divisions according to the units of the *dharmma*.

Except for two references to the five *nikāyas* in later passages in the Vinaya-piṭaka,<sup>2</sup> the usual classification of the canon found in canonical texts is that of nine *aṅgas*, viz. *suttaṃ geṇṇaṃ veyyākaraṇaṃ gāthāṃ udānaṃ itivuttakaṃ jātakaṃ abbhutadhammaṃ vedallaṃ*.<sup>3</sup> Buddhaghosa explains these terms as follows:<sup>4</sup>

Herein, the twofold Vibhaṅga, the Niddesas, the Khandhaka, the Parivāra, Maṅgala, Ratana, Nālaṅka, and Tuvaṅka Suttas of the Sutta Nipāta and other sayings of the Tathāgata bearing the name *sutta* should be known as Sutta (Discourses).

All the *suttas* containing stanzas should be known as Geyya (Recitation), particularly the entire Sagāthā-vagga in the Saṃyutta.

The whole of the Abhidhamma Piṭaka, *suttas* which contain no stanzas and any other (sayings from the) word of the Buddha not included in the other eight *aṅgas* should be known as the Veyyākaraṇa (Expositions).

The Dhammapada, Theragāthā, Therīgāthā, and sections entirely in verse in the Sutta Nipāta which are not designated as *suttas* should be known as Gāthā (Stanzas).

The eighty-two *suttantas* containing stanzas which were prompted by an awareness of joy should be known as Udāna (Utterances of Joy).

The 112 *suttantas* which have been handed down prefixed with the statement, "For this has been said by the Exalted One," should be known as Itivuttaka (Thus Said).

The 550 Birth Stories commencing with Apanṇaka should be known as Jātaka (Birth Stories).

All the *suttantas* connected with wonderful and marvellous phenomena handed down with words to such effect as, "O monks, these four wonderful and marvellous

<sup>1</sup> Sp 16, 18-22.

<sup>2</sup> *pañca nikāye pucchī* (Vin II 287, 27-28); *nikāye pañca vācesuṃ* (Vin V 3,5).

<sup>3</sup> E.g. M I 133, 24-25.

<sup>4</sup> Ps II 106, 8-28 = Sp 28, 8-29, 3.



qualities are seen in Ānanda," should be known as Abbhutadhamma (Marvellous Phenomena).

All the *suttantas* requested to be preached as a result of repeated attainment of wisdom and delight, such as Culla-vedalla, Mahā-vedalla, Sammādiṭṭhi, Sakka-paṇḍita, Saṅkharābhājanīya, and Mahāpunṇama Suttas and others should be known as Vedalla (Analyses).<sup>5</sup>

It is clear that all Buddhaghosa knew about some of these terms was the fact that there were in his time a number of texts which happened to have the same name as an *aṅga*. Despite the fact that books called Jātaka, Udāna and Itivuttaka actually exist in Pāli, it is probable that the list of nine *aṅgas* did not originally refer to specific works in the canon, but was a description of various types of text.<sup>6</sup> Some Sanskrit sources mention twelve *aṅgas*,<sup>7</sup> adding *nidāna*, *avādāna* (which under the form *apadāna* is the name of a specific text in Pāli) and *upadeśa*<sup>8</sup> to the list. The Mahāvastu speaks of nine *aṅgas*,<sup>9</sup> and the occurrence of a list of nine in the Saddharmapūṇḍarika shows that the smaller number was not confined to the Hinayāna schools. The list in the latter text differs somewhat from that found in Pāli: *sūtra gāthā itivuttaka jātaka abbhuta nidāna aupama geya* and *upadeśa*.<sup>10</sup>

According to the Dipavaṃsa,<sup>11</sup> the change from the old ninefold classification into the later one took place at the first council. In its account of that council it states that the 500 *theras* who held it divided up the Buddha's ninefold teachings into chapter (*vagga*), collection of 50 (*paññāsaka*), connected collection (*saṃyutta*), and section (*nīpātaka*). "Thus they made the basket of *āgamas* (*āgama-piṭaka*) which is known by the name of *sutta* (*sutta-sammata*)."

The division of the canon as it exists today is that into *piṭakas*. The only reference to someone knowing the three *piṭakas* which we find in the canon is in the later Parivāra section of the Vinaya-piṭaka,<sup>12</sup> but the occurrence of the word *peṭakin* "knowing the *piṭaka(s)*" in inscriptions at Bharhut<sup>13</sup> indicates that in the centuries immediately after the time of Asoka the word *piṭaka* had

<sup>5</sup> Tr. N. A. JAYAWICKRAMA, The inception of discipline and the Vinayanidāna, London 1962, pp. 25–26.

<sup>6</sup> So *veyyākaraṇa* is commonly used of an exposition in a sermon, e.g. *veyyākaraṇasmim bhaṇṇamāne* (D I 46, 27–28).

<sup>7</sup> See THOMAS, HBT, pp. 276–78.

<sup>8</sup> This word too seems to be used of a type of text. Hsüan-tsang states that the commentary which was composed on the Sūtra-piṭaka was called *Upadeśa-sāstra* (S. BEAL, Buddhist record of the western world, London 1884, I, p. 155). The equivalent of Pāli *vedalla* in the Sanskrit lists is *vaipulya*. This word seems in other contexts to be the equivalent of Pāli *vetulla*, which suggests a derivation from a pair of Prakrit words *vevulla* and *veyulla*, showing the *-v/-y-* alternation. It is not clear whether these words are in fact connected with *vedalla*.

<sup>9</sup> Mvu I 300, 21.

<sup>10</sup> Saddharmap (ed. P. L. VAIDYA, Darbhanga 1960), II. 45.

<sup>11</sup> Dip IV 18–20.

<sup>12</sup> Vin V 3, 14.

<sup>13</sup> See E. HULTZSCH, "Über eine Sammlung indischer Handschriften und Inschriften," in ZDMG 40, p. 58.

gained sufficiently wide usage for it to be used in this public way. Although Buddhaghosa, as stated above, uses the word *nikāya* in such a way that the term *pañca nikāyā* can be used to include the whole canon, the word is used in modern times only of the five *nikāyas* of the Sutta-piṭaka.

The Sarvāstivādins also divided their canon into three *piṭakas*. They had certainly done this by the time of Kaniṣka, for Hsüan-tsang reports<sup>14</sup> that at the council held during his reign commentaries were composed upon the three *piṭakas*. Their adoption of this division, however, must go back to an even earlier time, when the Sarvāstivādins and Theravādins were in close contact, for both give the *piṭakas* the same names, even though the texts comprised in the Sarvāstivādin Abhidharma-piṭaka do not agree with those in the Theravādin Abhidhamma.<sup>15</sup>

<sup>14</sup> See S. BEAL (tr.), Buddhist record of the western world, London 1884, I, p. 155.

<sup>15</sup> See J. TAKAKUSU, "On the Abhidharma literature of the Sarvāstivādins," in JPTS 1904–1905, p. 73.

## 2. THE VINAYA-PIṬAKA

The Pāli Vinaya-piṭaka<sup>1</sup> falls into three sections: the Suttavibhaṅga, which consists of the Mahāvibhaṅga (= Bhikkhuvibhaṅga) giving the regulations for the monks, and the Bhikkhunīvibhaṅga which gives the regulations for the nuns; the Khandhaka, which consists of the Mahāvagga and the Cullavagga; and the Parivāra.

In the oldest account which we possess of the first council, it is said that Mahākassapa asked Upāli about the twofold *vinaya*.<sup>2</sup> This suggests that he asked him only about the Pātimokkha rules for *bhikkhus* and *bhikkhunīs*. In the account which Buddhaghosa gives of that council,<sup>3</sup> he states that the *theras* classified the Mahāvibhaṅga, the Bhikkhunīvibhaṅga, the Khandhaka and the Parivāras, but he concedes that the Vinaya-piṭaka as he knew it contained material which had not been recited at the first council.<sup>4</sup> It is obvious, and presumably Buddhaghosa realised, that the final two sections of the Khandhaka, which deal with the first council and the second council which occurred 100 years later, could not have been recited on that occasion, but there is no indication of the portions of the Vinaya-piṭaka he had in mind when he wrote of texts not being recited.

## 2.1. The Suttavibhaṅga

The core of the Suttavibhaṅga is the *Pātimokkha*. This is a set of 227 rules for *bhikkhus* and 311 for *bhikkhunīs*. In the Pāli canon the *Pātimokkha* has no independent existence, as it does in the traditions of other Buddhist schools, but is imbedded in the Suttavibhaṅga. The rules fall into eight sections: *Pārājika* "Defeat" (4), *Saṅghādisesa* "Formal meeting" (13), *Aniyata* "Undetermined" (2), *Nissaggiya* "Forfeiture" (30), *Pācittiya* "Expiation" (92), *Pāṭidesaniya* "Confession" (4), *Sekhiya* "Training" (75), *Adhikaraṇasamathā dhammā* "Legal questions" (7), giving a total of 227 rules for *bhikkhus*. The sections of rules for the *bhikkhunīs* follow the same pattern except that they

<sup>1</sup> Ed. H. OLDENBERG, *The Vinaya Piṭaka*, 5 vols, London 1879–83. Tr. I. B. HORNER, *The book of the discipline*, 6 vols, London 1938–66. The order in which Buddhaghosa comments upon the sections of the Vinaya-piṭaka makes it clear that the Suttavibhaṅga precedes the Khandhaka, i.e. OLDENBERG's Vols III–IV should rightly come before his Vols I–II.

<sup>2</sup> *eten' eva upāyena ubhato-vinaye pucchi* (Vin II 289, 8–9).

<sup>3</sup> Sp 14, 19–15, 3.

<sup>4</sup> *tattha paṭhamasamgūṭiyam samgūṭaṇ ca asaṃgūṭaṇ ca sabbam pi samodhānetvā* (Sp 18, 3–4).

have no *Aniyata* class. The numbers are: (8), (17), (—), (30), (166), (8), (75), (7) making a total of 311.

Each section of the Suttavibhaṅga follows the same pattern,<sup>5</sup> except for the eighth section (*Adhikaraṇasamathā dhammā*) which, since it has no explanatory stories and no Old Commentary as do the other sections, would seem to be an addition to the list.<sup>6</sup> The standard pattern consists of (a) a story which leads up to the formulation of the rule. Sometimes two stories can be placed in a chronological order, indicating that one rule was made after another.<sup>7</sup> These stories sometimes occur elsewhere in the canon, which raises the question of which was the earlier position.<sup>8</sup> It is possible that some of the stories were invented or borrowed from other sources to explain rules which already existed;<sup>9</sup> (b) a *Pātimokkha* rule, which always states the penalty for breaking it. The nature of the *Pācittiya* rules suggests that this group as a whole was a later addition to the code.<sup>10</sup> Although by far the greater number of rules are said to have been enunciated by the Buddha himself, many sub-rules are laid down without reference to him.<sup>11</sup> This perhaps means that they were promulgated by some of his chief followers, or even added after his death; (c) the Old Commentary, which is really an analysis of words (*Pada-bhājanīya*). This defines the *Pātimokkha* rule word by word,<sup>12</sup> giving, for the most part, an explanation in the form of a list of synonyms. The similarity between this method and that found in the *Niddesa* suggests that both belong to the same period; (d) more stories, telling of deviations from the rules, which were either not so grave as to entail the maximum penalty, or reasonable enough to warrant modification or relaxation of the rule. Occasionally they were of such a kind that they were not to be rendered permissible by any extenuating circumstances. Sometimes

<sup>5</sup> I follow the analysis given in HORNER, BD I, p. xi.

<sup>6</sup> The section cannot, however, be a very late addition, as it occurs in the *Prātimokkhas* of the other schools.

<sup>7</sup> At Vin III 158, 24–26 Dabba, the Mallian, is appointed to the task of assigning lodgings and distributing meals. At Vin IV 38, 3–4 he is accused of acting out of favouritism, suggesting that *Pācittiya* rule XIV, which is associated with the latter incident, is later than *Saṅghādisesa* rule VIII, which is associated with the former. See HORNER, BD II, p. xxxvii and also p. xl.

<sup>8</sup> E.g. the story of Moggallāna at Vin III 104–108 has a parallel at S II 254–62, where, however, there is no reference to Moggallāna being held by other *bhikkhus* to be claiming "a state of further-men" (*uttarimanussadhamma*), which seems to be the pivot of the Vinaya passage (see HORNER, BD I, pp. xxv–xxvi). See also O. von HINÜBER, "Sprachliche Beobachtungen zum Aufbau des Pāli-Kanons," in StII 2, pp. 35–37, where he points out that a linguistic feature in the *Sudinna/Ratthapāla* episode in Vin III 11, 34–21, 17 is older than the corresponding feature in M II 55, 24–65, 6.

<sup>9</sup> See HORNER, BD I, p. xxxiv.

<sup>10</sup> As suggested by HORNER, BD II, p. xxxix.

<sup>11</sup> E.g. *Saṅghādisesa* rules IX, X, and XI (see HORNER, BD I, p. xvi).

<sup>12</sup> Or almost word by word. HORNER, BD II, pp. xxv–xxvi, points out a few omissions.



(c) and (d) are reversed in order. Sometimes there is no (d). The stories in (d) are comparable to those in (a).<sup>12</sup>

In the form in which the stories are told, it appears that every rule was made to fit a particular set of circumstances, and it seems likely that some, at least, of the stories are afterthoughts, added to explain the origin of the rule.<sup>13</sup> Sometimes the stories are grouped together to form a set, with each story showing no more than a minute variation from the others. It seems very unlikely that the complete set of rules was formulated at once,<sup>14</sup> so some were undoubtedly proclaimed as the need arose. On the other hand, it is not unlikely that a general code of conduct for mendicant orders already existed in the time of the Buddha, from which some borrowing could take place. This view is supported by the general agreement between the basic rules of the Jain and Buddhist orders. We may conclude that it is most unlikely that the historical order of promulgation was as in the present form of the Vinaya-piṭaka. For the most part, the stories are told in the context of the biography of the Buddha, but a few stories of the Jātaka or Apadāna type are included.<sup>15</sup> It has been suggested that such inclusions are a sign of lateness of composition, and can be used as an indication of the relative dating of different versions of the Suttavibhaṅga.<sup>17</sup>

The Bhikkhunīvibhaṅga is somewhat misleading in appearance, in that it includes, in its present form, only those rules which are not already included in the rules for bhikkhus. Since the Sekhiya rules are the same for both, only the first and last of the 75 are given. At the end of the Pācittiya section, the number is said to be 166,<sup>18</sup> but only 96 have been recorded. Of the bhikkhus' Pācittiya rules, however, 70 also apply to the bhikkhunīs, making up the total of 166. The Old Commentary is included for those rules which are given, showing that the promulgation of the rules for bhikkhunīs was early enough to pre-date the composition of that commentary.

Although the Pātimokkha does not have a separate existence as a literary text in Pāli, an independent Prātimokṣa is found in the canons of other Hinayāna schools. The Bhikṣu-prātimokṣa of the Mūlasarvāstivādin was discovered in Gilgit, and has been published,<sup>19</sup> as has the comparable text of the

Mahāsāṅghika-Lokottaravādin school which was found in Tibet.<sup>20</sup> Portions of the Bhikṣuprātimokṣa of the Sarvāstivādin have been found in Turkestan,<sup>21</sup> and also fragments of their Bhikṣuṇīprātimokṣa.<sup>22</sup> There are also fragments extant of a Dharmaguptaka Bhikṣuprātimokṣa, also found in Turkestan.<sup>23</sup>

For the most part, these Prātimokṣas of other schools do not differ greatly from the Pāli Pātimokkha. The main differences are in the Pācittiya and Sekhiya rules.<sup>24</sup> Of the Pācittiya rules, the difference concerns rules which are similar to other rules, and might be considered unnecessary. Of the Sekhiya rules, it is probable that different monastic and lay conditions called for variations. The Mahāsāṅghika-Lokottaravādin Prātimokṣa includes in some cases, e.g. the Pārājika rules,<sup>25</sup> brief statements about the time and place at which the Buddha promulgated the rule. These are very similar to the stories included in the Pāli Suttavibhaṅga.

The other Hinayāna schools also possessed texts equivalent to the Suttavibhaṅga. Fragments from Turkestan of the Sarvāstivādin Vinayavibhaṅga to both the Bhikṣu-<sup>26</sup> and Bhikṣuṇīprātimokṣas<sup>27</sup> have been published, while fragments of manuscript found in Gilgit have been identified as coming from the Mūlasarvāstivādin Vinayavibhaṅga to the Bhikṣuprātimokṣa.<sup>28</sup> The Mahāsāṅghika-Lokottaravādin Bhikṣuṇī-vinaya<sup>29</sup> includes the vibhaṅga to the Bhikṣuṇī-prātimokṣa as well as the aṣṭau guru-dharmāḥ, which in the Pāli Vinaya-piṭaka are found in the Bhikkhunī-kkhandhaka of the Cullavagga,<sup>30</sup> and also the Bhikṣuṇī-prakīrṇaka and the uddāna to the Bhikṣu-prakīrṇaka. The latter text has also been published, under the title Abhisamācārikā.<sup>31</sup> The Bhikṣuṇī-vinaya gives all the rules for bhikṣuṇīs, even those which duplicate the rules for bhikṣus. It gives stories to explain the promulgation of the rules, but they are not identical with those found in Pāli. There is also a word commentary included, but it is not the same as the Pāli pada-bhājanīya. There are more stories of the avadāna type in it than in the Pāli Bhikkhunīvibhaṅga.<sup>32</sup>

<sup>20</sup> W. PACHOW and RAMAKANTA MISHRA, "The Prātimokṣa sūtra of the Mahāsāṅghikas," in Journal of the Gāṅgānāth Jhā Research Institute, 9, pp. 239–60; 10, App. pp. 1–48; 11–12, pp. 243–48, and N. TATTA, Prātimokṣasūtram, Patna 1976.

<sup>21</sup> For references see YUYAMA, VT, p. 1.

<sup>22</sup> See YUYAMA, VT, pp. 3–4.

<sup>23</sup> See WALDSCHMIDT, CASF, pp. 164–67.

<sup>24</sup> See the concordance table given by CHARLES S. PREBISH, in Buddhist Monastic Discipline, Pennsylvania State University Press 1975, pp. 140–48.

<sup>25</sup> See PREBISH, ibid., pp. 50–52.

<sup>26</sup> See YUYAMA, VT pp. 6–7.

<sup>27</sup> See YUYAMA, VT p. 9.

<sup>28</sup> See YUYAMA, VT pp. 19–20.

<sup>29</sup> GUSTAV ROTH (ed.), Bhikṣuṇī-Vinaya, Patna 1970.

<sup>30</sup> Vin II 253–57.

<sup>31</sup> B. JINANANDA (ed.), Abhisamācārikā (Bhikṣuprakīrṇaka), Patna 1969. Rev. J. W. DE JONG, IJJ 16, pp. 150–52.

<sup>32</sup> The only Apadāna-type insertion in the Bhikkhunīvibhaṅga is at Vin IV 258–59. There are seven in the Bhikṣuṇī-Vinaya, according to ROTH, BV, p. xxxviii.

<sup>12</sup> See HORNER, BD I, p. xxxiv.

<sup>13</sup> See HORNER, BD I, p. xxxiv.

<sup>14</sup> The slight variations of order and number found in the Prātimokṣas of other schools would suggest an independent origin for some of the rules.

<sup>15</sup> E.g. the story of the ox Nandivāsāla at Vin IV 5, 11–38 = Ja I 191–93 (Nandivāsāla-jātaka). See also the comparison of the versions of the story about the impious brahman found at Vin IV 203–204 = Ja III 27–30 (Chavaka-jātaka) made by L. ALSDORF ("The impious brahman and the pious caṇḍāla," in COUSINS, BSIBH, pp. 9–13).

<sup>16</sup> See A. HIRAKAWA, A study of the Vinaya-piṭaka, Tokyo 1960 (English summary), p. 14.

<sup>17</sup> uddāṭṭhā kho ayyūyo chasaṭṭhisatā pācittiyaṃ dhammā (Vin IV 345, 24).

<sup>18</sup> ANKUL CHANDRA BANERJEE, Prātimokṣa-sūtram [Mūlasarvāstivādin], Calcutta 1954.

which possibly indicates that the Mahāsāṅghika-Lokottaravādin text in its present form is later than the Pāli equivalent.

## 2.2. The Khandhaka

The Khandhaka, in two portions (the Mahāvagga and the Cullavagga), is based upon the rules of conduct for the Buddhist *Sanḥa*, set in the framework of the biography of the Buddha. It comprises 22<sup>33</sup> sections: (a) a portion of a biography of the Buddha (Mahākhandhaka), starting from the enlightenment and extending as far as the entry of Sāriputta and Moggallāna into the Order. It includes an account of the first sermon and the four Noble Truths: (b) various rules for bhikkhus in 18 sections:<sup>34</sup> "Observance" (Uposathakkhandhaka); "The rains" (Vassupāṇāyikkakhandhaka); "Invitation" (Pavāraṇakkhandhaka); "On hides" (Cammakkhandhaka); "On medicines" (Bhesajjakkhandhaka); "On kathina" (Kathinakkhandhaka); "On robe-material" (Civarakkhandhaka); "On (the monks at) Campā" (Camepyyakkhandhaka); "On (the monks of) Kosambi" (Kosambakkhandhaka); "Formal acts" (Kammakkhandhaka); "Probation" (Pāvivāsikkakhandhaka); "Accumulation (of offences)" (Samuccayakkhandhaka); "Settlement" (Samathakkhandhaka); "Minor matters" (Khuddakavattukhandhaka); "Lodgings" (Senāsānakkhandhaka); "Schism" (Saṃghabhedakkhandhaka); "Observances" (Vattakkhandhaka); "Suspending the Pātimokkha" (Pātimokkhatthapanakkhandhaka); (c) rules for nuns (Bhikkhunikkhandhaka), (d) two supplements giving the history of the first<sup>35</sup> and second councils; (e) the introduction to the *Pātimokkha*, with a portion of the Old Commentary upon it, which has become detached from the rest of the *Pātimokkha* rules and inserted in an appropriate place in the *Uposathakkhandhaka*.<sup>36</sup>

As in the case of the Suttavibhaṅga, stories are told to illustrate the circumstances in which the rules were first promulgated.<sup>37</sup> They are set in the context of a biography of the Buddha, but not in any chronological order,<sup>38</sup> for they

<sup>33</sup> The number 22 agrees with Buddhaghosa's statement (Sp 18, 5) about the contents of the Vinaya-piṭaka. The Chinese translation of Sp, however, states that there were 23 khandhakas. This may be a mistake, as the translator suggests (see P. V. BAPAT and A. HIRAKAWA (tr.), *Shan-Chien-Pi-P'o-Sha*, Poona 1970, p. 10 n. 16), but it may indicate dependence upon a slightly different recension of Sp. The list of Sutta-piṭaka texts in the same translation (p. 11) does not include the Khuddaka-pāṭha (see p. 57 below).

<sup>34</sup> I follow the translations given in HORNER, BD IV, p. xxvii and V, p. xxiii.

<sup>35</sup> This account seems to be a continuation of the Mahāparinibbānasutta, and in the canon of some schools is found in conjunction with it (see p. 37 below).

<sup>36</sup> Vin I 103, 12–104, 20.

<sup>37</sup> As in the case of the Suttavibhaṅga, the rules are not all promulgated by the Buddha, which allows the possibility that some were made by his disciples, perhaps even after his death. See HORNER, BD IV, p. xxiii.

<sup>38</sup> HORNER, BD IV, p. xiii.

represent an attempt to classify the rules by subject matter, so that all the rules on any one subject, e.g. medicines, have been grouped together. Scattered throughout the *khandhakas* are various rules which were enunciated to the group of five. These must be the first five *bhikkhus*, in which case all these stories should have been together, if the material had been presented in chronological order. The arrangement by subject matter, so that the stories had to be inserted into the appropriate *khandhakas*, has led to their becoming separated.<sup>39</sup>

The stories are sometimes found in other texts,<sup>40</sup> and it can sometimes be shown whether the Vinaya-piṭaka is the borrower or the lender.<sup>41</sup> Sometimes the same story is told to illustrate different rules. Sometimes the same rule is promulgated in both the Khandhaka and the Vibhaṅga.<sup>42</sup> In this case, the same story is told on both occasions. There is the occasional Apadāna story,<sup>43</sup> which as we have seen is held to be a feature of lateness.

In the Uposathakkhandhaka, the Buddha's permission to recite the *Pātimokkha* is followed by an exhortation to be used when beginning the recitation. This is, in fact, the exhortation from the *Pātimokkha* itself, as is shown by the fact that it is followed by the appropriate portion of the Old Commentary upon the *Pātimokkha*.<sup>44</sup> Comparison with the Khandhaka section of the Vinaya-piṭaka of other sects shows that there are gaps in the Pāli version. There is, for example, no equivalent to the *stūpa*-passages found in the Kṣudraka-vastu of the Vinaya of the Mūlasarvāstivādins. The reason is probably because the compilers of the Pāli canon thought that *stūpas* were the province of laymen, not of *bhikkhus*.<sup>45</sup> The Kathinakkhandhaka is very unclear, and seems to have

<sup>39</sup> FRAUWALLNER concludes (EV, p. 135) that the author of the Skandhaka work had available to him an old account of the way in which the Buddha gave fundamental instruction to his first followers.

<sup>40</sup> E.g. the *uddissaka* rule about meat eating (= Vin I 233–38) has the same story about the *senāpati* called Siha as is found at A IV 179–88, but in the latter text there is no reference to the promulgation of the rule. See CHANDRA SHEKHAR PRASAD, "Meat-eating and the rule of *ūkoṭiparisuddha*," in NARAIN, SPB, pp. 289–95.

<sup>41</sup> FRAUWALLNER (EV, pp. 146–48) suggests that the account of the eight marvellous qualities in the sea (*aṭṭha mahāsamudde acchariyā abbhūtā dhammā*) at Vin II 236–40 is derived from A IV 200–204.

<sup>42</sup> At Vin III 248–51 and Vin I 206–209 we find the same story about the *ārāma* attendant, leading up to the promulgation of the same rule. In the former context it is *Nissaggiya* ("Forfeiture") rule XXIII, and in the latter context it is one of the rules concerning permissible medicines. OLDENBERG has pointed out (Vin I, p. xxiii n. 1) that the disciplinary proceedings enunciated in connection with the story of the *bhikkhus* who are followers of Assaji and Punabbasu have a later form at Vin II 9–14 than they do at Vin III 179–84. See also HORNER, BD V, p. vi.

<sup>43</sup> E.g. Vin II 201, 12–28.

<sup>44</sup> Vin I 103, 12–104, 20.

<sup>45</sup> As suggested by G. ROTH in "Symbolism of the Buddhist stūpa," in A. L. DALLAPICCOLA (ed.), *The stūpa: its religious, historical and architectural significance*, Wiesbaden 1980, p. 186.



been corrupted to the state where it is barely intelligible without recourse to other versions or to the Parivāra.<sup>46</sup>

The section of rules for *bhikkhunis* (*Bhikkhunī-kkhandhaka*) is probably an addition, made after the rules for *bhikkhus*, and was therefore at one time the last section of the *Khandhaka*. As, however, it is now followed by the accounts of the two councils, and has parallels in the *Khandhakas* of other sects, it must be presumed that the *Bhikkhunī-kkhandhaka* predates the schism between the schools. The inclusion of the accounts of the councils at Rājagaha (after the Buddha's death) and at Vesālī (100 years after) shows that the *Vinaya-piṭaka* in its present form is at least 100 years later than the death of the Buddha. Since these accounts are included in all versions of the *Vinaya*, it can be concluded that all sects had (approximately) the same *Vinaya* until the second council<sup>47</sup> and the schism that followed it. The fact that part of the *Vinaya* is late does not, however, mean that all of it is late. The different arrangement of the *khandhakas* and the material in the various *vastus* shows that there was already the beginning of divergency before the time of the second council.

The greater part of the *Mūlasarvāstivādin Skandhaka* has been discovered in Gilgit and published.<sup>48</sup> It lacks some of the *khandhakas* in the Pāli version, and some of the material is arranged differently, e.g. the historical information found in the Pāli *Mahākkhandhaka* appears in the *Samghabhedavastu*.<sup>49</sup> Fragments of the *Sarvāstivādin Skandhaka* have been found in Turkestan,<sup>50</sup> and a fragment of the *Mahāsāṅghika Skandhaka* has been found in Afghanistan at Bamiyan.<sup>51</sup> The *Mahāvastu*<sup>52</sup> is based upon a recension of the *Vinaya* belonging to the *Mahāsāṅghika-Lokottaravādins*.<sup>53</sup> It corresponds roughly to the *Mahāvagga* portion of the Pāli *Khandhaka*, but it contains very few monastic rules,<sup>54</sup> and has many later additions of the *Jātaka* and *Avadāna* type.

The inclusion of many stories of the *Avadāna* type accounts for the fact that the work is frequently styled the *Mahāvastu-Avadāna* in the colophons to many of the chapters. The use of the word *Avadāna* in this context resembles that found in the *Mahāpadānasutta* (*Sanskrit Mahāvadānasūtra*) of the *Dīghanikāya*,<sup>55</sup> where it is used of the Buddha, instead of *theras* and *therīs* as in the late canonical *Apadāna*. These narrative legends are introduced, not as in the

<sup>46</sup> See FRAUWALLNER, EV p. 185, and p. 28 below.

<sup>47</sup> See FRAUWALLNER, EV pp. 150–53.

<sup>48</sup> See YUYAMA, VT pp. 24–28.

<sup>49</sup> See YUYAMA, VT p. 52. In the *Sarvāstivādin canon* it is found in the *Dirghāgama* (see p. 44 below).

<sup>50</sup> See YUYAMA, VT pp. 9–11.

<sup>51</sup> See YUYAMA, VT p. 39. S. LÉVI (JA 1932, p. 5) identified it as dealing with the *pratisāraṇiya karma* (cf. Vin II 15–19).

<sup>52</sup> Ed. E. SENART, *Le Mahāvastu*, 3 vols., Paris, 1882, 1890, 1897. Tr. J. J. JONES, *The Mahāvastu*, 3 vols., SBB London, 1949, 1952, 1956.

<sup>53</sup> *Āryamahāsāṅghikānām lokottaravādinām madhyadeśikānām pāṭhena vinaya-piṭakasya Mahāvastu* (Mvu I 2, 13–14).

<sup>54</sup> JONES, Mvu tr., I, pp. xi–xii.

<sup>55</sup> See p. 36 below.

*Mahāvagga* to illustrate the promulgation of a rule but to illustrate the Buddha's virtues in his earlier lives. To the material which is given in the Pāli *Mahāvagga* is added much which is found in the *Nidānakathā* of the Pāli *Jātaka*, so that the *Mahāvastu* gives an account of incidents in the remote past of the Buddha's career, as well as his birth and childhood, his enlightenment and his activities as a teacher.<sup>56</sup> Although the *Mahāsāṅghika-Lokottaravādins* believed that the personality of the Buddha was docetic and he was really *supramundane* (*lokottara*), there is in fact only one short passage which deals with his *transcendental nature*.<sup>57</sup>

Not only are there close parallels between the *Mahāvastu* and the Pāli *Mahāvagga*, which suggest that both texts were dependent upon the same source material,<sup>58</sup> but there are many other parallels too, sometimes so close verbally that one version may be corrected with the help of the other. Among the Pāli texts to which comparison can be made are the *Jātaka*, *Suttanipāta*, the *Dhammapada*, the *Dīghanikāya*, the *Vimānavatthu* and the *Buddhavaṃsa*. Even when all these insertions, which probably represent additions to the *Mahāvastu*, are disregarded, it can be shown that the *Mahāvastu* contains different strata,<sup>59</sup> which differ in the language employed in them.<sup>60</sup>

It is not easy to understand why there is, except for a reference to the four types of ordination, an almost complete lack of monastic rules. It has already been noted<sup>61</sup> that the *Mahāsāṅghika-Lokottaravādin Bhikṣuṇī-Vibhaṅga* includes a section which in the Pāli *Vinaya-piṭaka* occurs in the *Bhikkhunī-kkhandhaka*, and it is possible that other *Skandhaka* material was transferred to texts, now lost.

When some of the formulae included in the *Khandhaka* came to be used for the transaction of business at meetings of the *Saṅgha*, e.g. for the ordination of *bhikkhus*, they gained an existence as independent texts. Although these usually follow the pattern laid down in the *Vinaya-piṭaka*, the fact that they have been used in different places and circumstances has led to changes in detail.<sup>62</sup> A number of these separate *kammavācūs* have been published.<sup>63</sup>

<sup>56</sup> See JONES, Mvu tr., I, p. xiv.

<sup>57</sup> Mvu I 167–68.

<sup>58</sup> See JONES, Mvu tr., I, p. xii.

<sup>59</sup> JONES (Mvu tr., I, p. xvii) points out that there are often two or more versions of the same story, usually one in prose followed by one in verse, suggesting a difference in date of composition.

<sup>60</sup> See H. OLDENBERG, *Studien zum Mahāvastu*, Nachrichten von der k. Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften zu Göttingen, Philol.-Hist. Klasse, 1912 and G. ROTH, "Partiele *dāni* in the Vinaya texts of the Mahāsāṅghika-Lokottaravādin and the inscriptions of Aśoka," in *Studies in Indo-Asian Art and Culture* (Acharya Raghu Vira Commemoration Volume), 1973, pp. 211–18.

<sup>61</sup> See p. 21 above.

<sup>62</sup> See T. W. RHYS DAVIDS, "A new Kammavācā," in JPTS 1906–1907, pp. 1–3.

<sup>63</sup> See T. W. RHYS DAVIDS and H. OLDENBERG (tr.), *Vinaya Texts Part I*, Oxford 1881, p. xx n. 1, and G. L. M. CLAUSON, "A new Kammavācā," in JPTS 1906–1907, pp. 4–7.

They also existed in the other Hinayāna schools, and *karmavākyas* or *karmavācānās* for *bhikkus* or *bhikkunīs* have been discovered, belonging to the Sarvāstivādin and Mūlasarvāstivādin schools.<sup>64</sup>

### 2.3. The Parivāra

In Buddhist Hybrid Sanskrit<sup>65</sup> the word *parivāra* is normally taken to mean "accessory, appendix, addendum,"<sup>66</sup> and such a meaning would suit the Pāli Parivāra, since it seems to be a supplement to the Vinaya. The place and time of its composition are not known, and some scholars favour the view that it was composed in Ceylon.<sup>67</sup> There is evidence for believing that portions of it, at least, were added in Ceylon, for it includes a long list of teachers who were responsible for teaching the Vinaya in Jambudīpa, and then in Tambapaṇṇi (Ceylon), ending with Sivatthera. It has been claimed,<sup>68</sup> on the basis of these names, that the present form of the Parivāra must have been fixed in the first century A.D., for the list contains no *thera* later than that century. The Sāsana-vamsa, however, states<sup>69</sup> that the list which is found in the Vinaya is the succession of elders down to those who assembled in the fourth council. If that is correct, then we should date Siva to the first century B.C.

The possibility of Siva being connected with the writing down of the canon is perhaps supported by the fact that there are two references to writing in the Parivāra. At the end of the first eight (of 16) sections of the first chapter, there is a statement that "these eight sections are written in a manner for recitation,"<sup>70</sup> while at the end of the book, after the words *Parivāro niṭṭhito*, there is a statement that Dipanāma, having asked various questions about the ways of former teachers, thinking out this epitome of the details for the middle way of study, had it written down for the bringing of happiness to disciples.<sup>71</sup> It seems, however, unlikely that if the whole of the Parivāra had been composed at the time it was written down, it would have had the references to writing inserted in the way they are, and there seems to be no good reason for doubting that these two statements are interpolations,<sup>72</sup> added when the Parivāra, together

<sup>64</sup> See YUYAMA, VT pp. 4–5, 17–18.

<sup>65</sup> See F. EDGERTON, BHS Dictionary, New Haven 1953, s. v. *parivāra*.

<sup>66</sup> In the Mvu (II 397, 7) it is used of the colophon to the second version of the Avalokita Sūtra, and JONES comments that "in the present instance the supplement is foisted into the middle of the work" (JONES, Mvu tr., II, p. 35 n. 1).

<sup>67</sup> Including RHYS DAVIDS, who noted that the Parivāra is not quoted in the Milindapañña (T. W. RHYS DAVIDS (tr.), The questions of King Milinda, Oxford 1890, p. xxxix). See also WARDER, PM, p. 4.

<sup>68</sup> See ADIKARAM, EHBC, pp. 86–87.

<sup>69</sup> Sās 20, 6–6.

<sup>70</sup> *Ime aṭṭha vāra sajjhāyamaḡgena likhita* (Vin V 48, 29).

<sup>71</sup> *Imaṃ vūṭṭhārasaṃkhepaṃ sajjhāmaḡgena majjhime cintayitvā likhāpesi sissakānaṃ sukhāvaḡhaṃ* (Vin V 226, 6–7).

<sup>72</sup> As suggested by N. A. JAYAWICKRAMA, The inception of discipline, London 1962, p. 107.

with the rest of the canon, was written down in the first century B.C. They have, therefore, some bearing upon the present form of the Parivāra, but tell us little about the composition of the various chapters.

Since some of the chapters of the Parivāra are summaries of various sections of the Vinaya, it has been suggested<sup>73</sup> that the Parivāra is, in fact, older than the Vinaya and originally performed the same function towards it as do the *Mātikās* for the Abhidhamma texts. While it is not impossible that the Parivāra contains a very early portion of this type which was later enlarged, it nevertheless shows all the signs of being an addition to the Vinaya. The Dipavamsa states<sup>74</sup> that it was one of the texts which was not accepted by the Mahāsāṅghikas, which suggests either that it did not exist at the time of the schism, or if it existed it had not yet gained canonical status at that time. It seems more likely that a collection was made up of ancillary works of various dates which sprang up around the Vinaya, and this happened early enough for the collection to have attained canonical status, just as the Niddesa did, although neither claims to be *Buddhavacana*.<sup>75</sup>

As we have it, the Parivāra contains 19 chapters, whereas in his account of the first council Buddhaghosa states<sup>76</sup> that the Parivāra has 16 sections. After Chapter XIV, which deals with the *Kaṭṭhina* regulations, the words *parivāraṃ niṭṭhitaṃ* occur,<sup>77</sup> which suggests that at one time the Parivāra ended at that point, and the following chapters were added later. It seems possible to divide two of the earlier chapters into halves, which would give a total of 16, and this may be the answer to the problem.<sup>78</sup> In his commentary upon the Vinaya-piṭaka, however, Buddhaghosa comments upon all 19 chapters,<sup>79</sup> without any reference to the apparent inconsistency in his statement about the number of chapters, although he is sufficiently aware of some types of inconsistency to find it necessary to comment upon them.<sup>80</sup>

In the first chapter of the Parivāra (Mahāvibhaṅga), every rule in the Mahāvibhaṅga section of the Suttavibhaṅga is examined in the exact order in which it was laid down there, with special reference to the place in which it was promulgated. It is a kind of catechism,<sup>81</sup> containing bare or condensed outlines of questions to be asked and answered, in the study of the *sikkhāpadas*. It makes a clear contribution to the task of learning and mastering the Vinaya,<sup>82</sup> and by extracting material from the vast mass of the Vinaya it reduces it to

<sup>73</sup> By MALALASEKERA, DPPN, II, p. 162.

<sup>74</sup> Dip V 37.

<sup>75</sup> HORNER, BD VI, p. ix.

<sup>76</sup> *Solasa Parivārā* (Sp 18, 5–6).

<sup>77</sup> Vin V 179, 19.

<sup>78</sup> As suggested by HORNER, BD VI, p. xiii.

<sup>79</sup> Sp 1301–1414.

<sup>80</sup> E.g. *tatha bhaddako te ummaṇṇo ti bhaddakā te pañhā* (Sp 1348, 6).

<sup>81</sup> See HORNER, BD VI, pp. vii–xi.

<sup>82</sup> "I believe that in some Buddhist countries the monastic disciple has to learn it before he studies these other parts" (HORNER, BD VI, p. vii).



manageable proportions. The next chapter (*Bhikkhunīvibhaṅga*) does the same for the *bhikkhunis'* rules. Other chapters are similarly devoted to questions and statements about the types and numbers of offences detailed in the Vinaya. The sixth chapter (*Ekuttaraka*) is arranged in the same way as the *Saṅgīti-sutta* and *Dasuttara-sutta* of the *Dīgha-nikāya* and the *Āṅguttara-nikāya* as a whole, with topics listed numerically, each section being one more than its predecessor. Although classifications of this type may be thought to be relatively late, the presence of the system in several places in the canon, and also in the canons of other sects,<sup>82</sup> shows that it had nevertheless been established in Buddhism before the time of the schisms. The *Ekuttaraka* differs from the other texts of its type in that its enumerations are almost entirely restricted to items found in the Vinaya.<sup>84</sup> It resembles the *Āṅguttara-nikāya* in that it lists items in groups up to the number eleven.

In common with the first two chapters, Chapter XIII "the great collection" (*Mahāsaṃgāma*) consists almost entirely of a commentary upon the phrases at the beginning of the chapter, which closely resembles the style of the Old Commentary found in the *Sutta-vibhaṅga*. Chapter XIV on the *Kaṭṭhina* also consists of a commentary upon the opening phrases, and gives information about the proper way of making the *kaṭṭhina* cloth. As already noted,<sup>85</sup> the relevant section of the *Khandhaka* is not entirely satisfactory, and it is to be observed that this section of the *Parivāra* is not merely a synopsis of what the Vinaya says, but includes material not found there. This must be old, since it corresponds with what is stated in other traditions about the *kaṭṭhina*.<sup>86</sup>

The fifteenth chapter (*Upālipaṇcaka*) consists of a number of questions put by Upāli to the Buddha about the Vinaya, the answers to which were all in the form of sets of five. It is to be compared with the earlier chapter entitled *Ekuttaraka*, and even more with the section of the *Āṅguttara-nikāya* entitled *Upālivagga*,<sup>87</sup> where, however, the Buddha's answers are all in sets of ten. The eighteenth chapter (*Sedamocakagāthā*) is aptly named "Sweat-inducing," for it consists of sets of puzzles, based upon apparent contradictions in the Vinaya, the answers to which call for a great deal of mental exertion. The style is reminiscent of the sets of dilemmas in the *Milinda-pañha*,<sup>88</sup> but in the *Parivāra* the problems are all drawn from the Vinaya.

The Vinaya-piṭakas of other sects also have supplements. In its Chinese translation, the *Sarvāstivādin* Vinaya is followed by the *Vinayaśūdraka* and the *Uttaragrantha*,<sup>89</sup> which includes an *Upāliparipucchā*, a series of questions

<sup>82</sup> PANDE points out that this system is also used in non-Buddhist writings, e.g. the *Jaina Tāpamga* and *Samavāyama* (PANDE, *SOB*, p. 26 n. 44).

<sup>83</sup> HORNER, *BD VI*, pp. xxi-xxii.

<sup>84</sup> See p. 23 above.

<sup>85</sup> See H. BECHERT, "Some remarks on the *kaṭṭhina* rite," in *JBRs* 54 (1968), pp. 323 and 328.

<sup>86</sup> A V 70-79.

<sup>87</sup> See p. 112 below.

<sup>88</sup> See THOMAS, *HBT*, p. 268 and FRAUWALLNER, *EV*, p. 46.

on Vinaya put to the Buddha by Upāli. This would seem to correspond to the Pāli *Upāli-pañcaka*, but a Sanskrit portion of this found in Turkestan does not agree with the Pāli *Parivāra*.<sup>90</sup> One Chinese version of the *Upāliparipucchā* is said to be very similar to the Pāli *Parivāra*, although there seem to be abridgements and changes of order in the treatment of the various rules, and there is doubt about the sect to which this text belonged.<sup>91</sup> There also exists in Chinese an *Ekottara* section in the appendices to the shortened version of the *Sarvāstivādin* Vinaya called *Daśādhyāya Vinaya*.<sup>92</sup> The *Dharmaguptaka* Vinaya also has a section called *Ekottara*,<sup>93</sup> while the *Mūlasarvāstivādin*s too had a supplement to their Vinaya called *Uttara-grantha*.<sup>94</sup> Without more investigation it is not possible to say what resemblances there are between these various works, but it is worthwhile referring to them here, despite the lack of Sanskrit versions of them, because the fact that other schools found it necessary to have supplements to their Vinayas supports the view that some, at least, of the Pāli *Parivāra* was composed in India before the introduction of Buddhism to Ceylon.

<sup>90</sup> See YUYAMA, *VT*, p. 11 and VALENTINA STACHE-ROSEN, "The *Upāliparipucchā-sūtra*," in *Buddhism and Jainism*, Cuttack (Orissa) 1976, p. 27.

<sup>91</sup> Taisho 1466. STACHE-ROSEN (*ibid.*, p. 30) states: "The possibility that the *Upāliparipucchāsūtra* originated in any of these centres in India, where Pāli was used, cannot be ruled out. It is, however, more likely that the text originated in Ceylon. If this is the case, the text cannot have belonged to the *Mahāvihāra* monastery, as the order of the rules is different. The *Upāliparipucchāsūtra* might have belonged to the *Abhayagiri-vihāra*." It is difficult to follow this argument. It seems impossible to conclude that because certain passages in Chinese agree in form with certain Pāli passages, although not in order, the Chinese must have been translated from Pāli. Since the *Prātimokṣas* of all the *Hinayāna* schools are very similar, it is not unreasonable to guess that their auxiliary texts were also similar, in which case the Chinese might have been translated from Sanskrit or Prakrit.

<sup>92</sup> See STACHE-ROSEN, *ibid.*, p. 27.

<sup>93</sup> See FRAUWALLNER, *EV*, p. 46.

<sup>94</sup> See YUYAMA, *VT*, pp. 32-33.

## 3. THE SUTTA-PĪṬAKA

Buddhaghosa states<sup>1</sup> that the Sutta- or Suttanta-piṭaka consists of the five *nikāyas*: Dīgha-, Majjhima-, Saṃyutta-, Aṅguttara-, and Khuddaka-nikāya, and this is the classification generally accepted now although, as already noted, Buddhaghosa also uses<sup>2</sup> the term "five *nikāyas*" of the canon as a whole.

The first four *nikāyas* consist of discourses (*suttas*)<sup>3</sup> ascribed to the Buddha, or (rarely) to a disciple. These *suttas* are for the most part in prose, with some verse included. They usually have a short introduction giving the circumstances in which the *sutta* was delivered. In the case of the Dīgha- and Majjhima-nikāyas, the names seem to reflect the length of the *suttas*, with the long *suttas* in the Dīgha- and those of middle length in the Majjhima-nikāya,<sup>4</sup> although there is evidence that the size of some *suttas* has been increased by interpolation, so that their present length is not necessarily a guide to their original size, and we cannot be certain that the shortest *sutta* in the Dīgha- was longer than the longest *sutta* in the Majjhima-nikāya in the early collections. We can in any case deduce from the fact that the contents of the *nikāyas* do not agree exactly in the canons of the various sects that the division of *suttas* by length was, at best, a somewhat rough and ready method of classification.

By implication, the contents of the Saṃyutta- and Aṅguttara-nikāyas must be the short *suttas*. The name Saṃyutta- indicates that the *suttas* have been arranged together according to their contents, while the Aṅguttara-nikāya is made up numerically, with each *nipāta* exceeding its predecessor by one. There is inevitably an overlap between the contents of these two *nikāyas*, because some of the connected *suttas* deal with numerical matters.

In the Sanskrit canons the *nikāyas* are called *āgamas*,<sup>5</sup> and the word *āgama* is occasionally used in Pāli in this sense. It is, however, more commonly used in Pāli in a general sense,<sup>6</sup> and Buddhaghosa defines the word as the study of the

Buddha's words.<sup>7</sup> Hence a *thera* can be described as *āgātāgama* or *svāgama*. It seems to be used in the Vinaya of the *Pātimokkha*,<sup>8</sup> but it is sometimes used by Buddhaghosa in the sense of *nikāya*, and in his commentaries upon the Dīgha-, Saṃyutta- and Aṅguttara-nikāyas he writes of the Dīghāgama, the Saṃyuttāgama and the Aṅguttarāgama respectively.<sup>9</sup> In the introductory verses to his commentaries upon the first four *nikāyas* he states that the Visuddhimagga is in the middle of the four *āgamas*.<sup>10</sup>

In the Sanskrit canons the *āgamas* are named Dīrgha-, Madhyama-, Saṃyukta- and Ekottarika-, and the close similarity to the Pāli names indicates that the collections had begun to be formed while the schools were still in contact, i.e. before the schisms which started after the second council. The fact that one and the same *sutta* is sometimes found in more than one *nikāya* in the Pāli canon would seem to indicate that the *bhāṇakas* of the various *nikāyas* could not always agree about the allocation of *suttas*. The fact that the *sūtras* in each Sanskrit *āgama* do not coincide with their Pāli equivalents would seem to indicate that each school had its own *bhāṇakas* who, while all agreeing in general with the other *bhāṇakas* of their own and other sects, nevertheless preferred to differ over the placing of some *sūtras*. This suggests that there was in early times a large collection of *suttas* which were remembered by heart, and the task of allocating them to the various *nikāyas/āgamas* had not been finished, or the allocation completely agreed, by the time the schools began to separate. The reference in the Vinaya-piṭaka to an *upāsaka* inviting the *bhikkhus* to come and learn a *sutta* from him before it is lost<sup>11</sup> would seem to indicate that the collection of *suttas* had not yet been completed. The methods of authentication of *suttas* which are given in the Mahāparinibbānasutta<sup>12</sup> would also seem to apply to the time when the collection of *suttas* was still going on.

The list usually followed for the fifth *nikāya*, the Khuddaka-nikāya, is that given by Buddhaghosa:<sup>13</sup> Khuddakapāṭha, Dhammapada, Udāna, Itivuttaka, Suttanipāta, Vimānavatthu, Petavatthu, Theragāthā, Therīgāthā, Jātaka, Niddesa, Paṭisambhidāmagga, Apadāna, Buddhavaṃsa, Cariyāpiṭaka. In Burma the Peṭakopadesa, Nettippakaraṇa, Suttasaṅgaha, and Milindapañña are also regarded as belonging to the Khuddaka-nikāya.<sup>14</sup>

Buddhaghosa informs us<sup>15</sup> that the Dīgha-*bhāṇakas* did not accept the first and the last three in this list, but believed that the *theras* at the first council

<sup>1</sup> *Āgamo nāma antamaso opamma-vagga-mattassa pi buddhavaṇṇasāsa pariyā-punanaṃ* (Vism 442, 30–31).

<sup>2</sup> E.g. Vin II 249, 16.

<sup>3</sup> Sv 2, 10; Spk I 2, 22; Mp I 3, 4.

<sup>4</sup> *Majjhe Visuddhimaggo esa catunnam pi āgamānaṃ hi* (Sv 2, 6 = Ps I 2, 10 = Spk I 2, 18 = Mp I 2, 24).

<sup>5</sup> *Āgacchanṭu bhaddantā imaṃ suttantaṃ pariyāpūṇissanti purāyaṃ suttantaṃ palujjati ti* (Vin I 140, 37–141, 1).

<sup>6</sup> For the four *mahā-padesas* see D II 123, 30–126, 5 = A II 167, 33–170, 19.

<sup>7</sup> Sp 18, 12–15.

<sup>8</sup> See BODE, PLB, pp. 4–5.

<sup>9</sup> Sv 15, 22–29.

<sup>1</sup> Sp 16, 12–14.

<sup>2</sup> See p. 8 above.

<sup>3</sup> Since the Buddhist usage of the word *sutta* differs so greatly from the brahmanical use of *sūtra*, it has been suggested that Pāli *sutta* is to be derived from Sanskrit *sūtra*, not from *sūtra*. If this is so, then the use of the word *sūtra* in BHS would be the result of an incorrect back-formation. The word *sutta* is frequently interchanged with *suttanta*.

<sup>4</sup> *Kaṃā pan' esa Dīgha-nikāyo ti vuccati? dighappamāṇānaṃ suttānaṃ samūhato nivāsato ca* (Sp 20, 26–27). *katamo Majjhima-nikāyo? majjhimpappamāṇāni pañ-cadasavaggaṃsāṃgahāni Mūlapariyāyasuttādāni diyaḍḍhasataṃ dve ca suttāni* (Sp 27, 6–8).

<sup>5</sup> See THOMAS, HBT, p. 268.

<sup>6</sup> See PED, s.v. *āgama*.



recited the other twelve (dividing the Niddesa into Mahā- and Cūla-niddesa), and calling them the Khuddakagantha included them in the Abhidhammapitaka. He goes on to state, however, that the Majjhima-bhāṇakas added the Cariyāpitaka, Apadāna and Buddhavaṃsa to the Dīgha-bhāṇakas' list, also called the collection the Khuddakagantha, but included it in the Suttanta-pitaka. This presumably means that the Dīgha-bhāṇakas closed their list of the Khuddaka-nikāya before these four texts were regarded as canonical, while the Majjhima-bhāṇakas closed their list before the Khuddakapāṭha was accepted.

The Chinese translation of the Samantapāsādikā omits the Khuddakapāṭha from the Khuddaka-nikāya, and varies the order of the other 14 texts.<sup>16</sup> This suggests that either the Khuddakapāṭha was not included in the version of Buddhaghosa's commentary which was being translated, or the translators were in contact with and influenced by someone who knew that a section of the Theravādin school did not accept it as canonical.

### 3.1. The Dīgha-nikāya

The Dīgha-nikāya<sup>17</sup> contains 34 *suttas*, in three groups: the Silakkhandhavagga (1–13) dealing with virtue (*sīla*); the Mahāvagga (14–23) containing *suttas* which mostly have the word Mahā- in their title; and the Paṭikavagga (24–34), which gains its name from the fact that its first *sutta* is the Paṭikasutta. The *vaggas* (chapters) differ in content and character, but they all contain a mixture of older and later material.<sup>18</sup> The earliest stratum is found mainly in the first *vagga*, and the latest in the last, while the longest *suttas* are in the second *vagga*. The form of the *suttas* varies. Those in the first *vagga* are in prose, as are some in the second and third. Many in the second and third *vaggas* are in prose interspersed with verse. Some (e.g. *suttas* 20 and 32) are almost entirely in verse.

#### 3.1.1. The Silakkhandhavagga

Each of the *suttas* in this *vagga* has incorporated in it a list of the moral rules (*sīlas*). Most of the *suttas* describe the training of a *bhikkhu* in three stages, beginning with the *sīlas*, then proceeding to the practice of concentration

<sup>16</sup> See P. V. BAFAT and A. HIRAKAWA (tr.), Shan-Chien-P'i-P'o-Sha, Poona 1970, p. 11.

<sup>17</sup> Ed. T. W. RHYS DAVIDS and J. ESTLIN CARPENTER, PTS London, Vol. I, 1890; Vol. II, 1903; J. ESTLIN CARPENTER, Vol. III, 1911. Tr. T. W. RHYS DAVIDS, Dialogues of the Buddha, SBB London, Vol. I, 1899; T. W. and C. A. F. RHYS DAVIDS, Vol. II, 1910; Vol. III, 1921; (German) K. E. NEUMANN, Reden Gotamo Buddhō's aus der längeren Sammlung Dīgha-nikāyo des Pāli-Kanon's übers., Vols. I, II, III, München 1907, 1912, 1918. For an analysis of the text see PANDE, SOB, pp. 77–115.

<sup>18</sup> See PANDE, SOB, pp. 77–115.

(*samādhi*), and ending with the full knowledge (*paññā*) of the *arahant*. The list occurs in its most complete form in the Sāmaññaphalasutta, from which portions of it are quoted in the other *suttas*, which suggests that either the Sāmaññaphalasutta existed before the other *suttas* were composed, or the list existed at first as an independent composition,<sup>19</sup> from which all the *suttas*, including the Sāmaññaphalasutta, borrowed it. Several of the *suttas* discuss the views of the brahmins on sacrifice and sacred knowledge, the doctrines of various religious schools, the value of caste and self-mortification, and expound important doctrines. The Buddha's method of discussion in the *suttas* of the Silakkhandhavagga is much the same in each case. He takes as the starting point of the discussion the object put forward as desirable by his opponent, e.g. sacrifice, caste, or asceticism, and by inserting a higher meaning into the words being discussed, or by concentrating upon the ethical concepts involved, he leads his opponent up to his own conclusion, viz. the goal of *arahant*-ship.

The Brahmajālasutta (1) tells how the Buddha knows, like a good fisherman, how to catch in his net of views<sup>20</sup> all sophists and philosophers, and to prove their doctrines and speculations to be worthless and obstacles to true salvation. In the course of this, he enumerates 62 different philosophical views, from which the follower of the Buddha is to keep away. The *sutta* is important, not only for the information it gives about Buddhism, but also for the contribution it makes to the history of early religion and philosophy in India. There is also much dealing with social conditions, for as part of his rules for his followers the Buddha lists many activities and professions which they must avoid.

The Sāmaññaphalasutta (2) tells how King Ajātasattu of Magadha, after failing to get answers to his questions from other religious leaders, visits the Buddha and asks whether members of the *Saṅgha* who have given up the world gain any benefit from their action. The Buddha justifies the formation of the *Saṅgha* and the enunciation of the *Vinaya* rules, and gives a list of the advantages to be gained by his followers. The introduction to the *sutta* gives information about non-Buddhist sects at the time of the Buddha, and since some of it is in a non-Pāli dialect of MIA<sup>21</sup> it is likely that it is taken from the actual scriptures of the leaders being described. The advantages which his followers will gain are given in an ascending order of merit, starting with the honour and respect which are shown to those following the life of a *samāna*, and continuing through a series which is not necessarily restricted to Buddhists, until the final stages, when the four noble truths are attained, the *āsava*s are destroyed, and *arahant*-ship is won.

In the Ambaṭṭhasutta (3) the young brahman Ambaṭṭha visits the Buddha to see if he carries the 32 marks of a great man (*mahā-purisa*), and becomes

<sup>19</sup> RHYS DAVIDS, DB, Vol. I, p. 3 n. 1.

<sup>20</sup> Tr. (with commentaries) by ВНЕКХУ БОДHI, The Discourse on the embracing net of views, Kandy 1978.

<sup>21</sup> See K. R. NORMAN, "Pāli and the language of the heretics," in AO 37 (1976), pp. 117–26.

involved in a discussion about caste, in which the Buddha proves that the *khattiya* Sākyas are superior to the brahmins. The *sutta* was clearly composed at a time when the 32 marks were already in existence. There is also mention of super-normal powers being employed to enable Ambaṭṭha to see the two marks which are not normally visible.

The Sonadaṇḍasutta (4) is also concerned with the question of caste, and deals with the problem of what constitutes the essential quality which makes a man a brahman. The brahmanical view is that a man is a brahman only if he is born of brahmins on both his father's and his mother's side back through seven generations.<sup>22</sup> By the Buddha's argument, however, Sonadaṇḍa is led to accept that the one who attains *arahant*-ship is not only called a brahman in Buddhist terms, but is in fact declared to be the only true brahman.

The Kūṭadantasutta (5) is also anti-brahmanical, and tells of a brahman who is desirous of holding a great sacrifice, and comes to the Buddha to seek advice about the best way of doing it, and to enquire about the requisite utensils. In the guise of a legend about King Mahāvijita, the Buddha tells of the Buddhist form of sacrifice, where nothing, whether animal or vegetable, is harmed, and the sacrifice consists of the largesse of food, offered not on behalf of the king himself, but of all good people.

The Mahālisutta (6) falls into two quite separate parts. In the first the question of the ability to attain the supernormal eye and ear power is discussed, and the questioner is told that it is not to attain such powers that people, in the *Saṅgha*. He is led on to consider *arahant*-ship as the aim, following the eight-fold path. In the second part the questioner is told about Jāliya, who believed that the soul and the body were the same thing, but was led through the discussion set out in the *Sāmaññaphalasutta* up to the attainment of *arahant*-ship.

The Jāliyasutta (7) then follows as a separate *sutta* in its own right. It can be deduced that its inclusion in the Mahālisutta was early, and predated the formation of the Dīgha-nikāya as we have it, because the discussion of *sīla* occurs only in the Jāliya portion. Without it, the Mahālisutta would not have merited inclusion in the *Silakkhandhavagga*.

The Kassapasihanādasutta (8) tells of the Buddha's discussion with a naked ascetic about asceticism, and includes a general account of the practices adopted by various groups of ascetics. The Buddha refutes the charge of condemning all asceticism, which probably arises from his own rejection of such practices (although no reference is made to this in the *sutta*),<sup>23</sup> and maintains that the practices laid down in the eight-fold path and the discipline laid down for *bhikkhus* are more difficult to perform than mere *tapas*. As in the Mahālisutta (6), there is a quotation from elsewhere in the Dīgha-nikāya, but it is not quoted

<sup>22</sup> *Uḥhato sūjāto mātulo ca pitulo ca saṃsuddhagahaniko yāva sattamaṃ piṭamāhāyugā akkhiṇo anupakkuppho jātivādena* (D I 113, 25–27).

<sup>23</sup> They are mentioned in the Mahācaccakasutta = Majjhima-nikāya (36). See p. 45 below.

in full here. The Buddha tells of a visit from a co-religionist named Nigodha, which is the subject of the Udumbarikasihanādasutta (25).

The Poṭṭhapādasutta (9) begins with a discussion on the nature of the cessation of consciousness which occurs in trance. Through the path of training mentioned in the *Sāmaññaphalasutta* the discussion passes on to the *jhānas*, and in what is probably an addition to the *sutta*, to the first three *arūpa-vimokkhas*, which are not included in the *Sāmaññaphalasutta*. The idea of consciousness leads to a discussion of the question of soul, which Poṭṭhapāda regards as being a physical thing. The Buddha explains that there are certain things upon which he has expressed no opinion, viz. the ten indeterminates.<sup>24</sup> What he has expressed are the four noble truths.

In what appears to be an addition, the *sutta* goes on to tell how Poṭṭhapāda, having been abused by the other mendicants, went back to the Buddha and told him of the mendicants' actions. The Buddha's reply is based upon two metaphors: the first is that of the man who loves a "beauty queen"<sup>25</sup> without knowing anything about her (which illustrates the folly of saying more than the evidence allows), and that of the transformation of milk into curds, etc. (which illustrates the existence of an unchanging identity behind changing appearances).

The Subhasutta (10) is attributed to Ānanda, and is specifically stated to have been delivered after the death of the Buddha.<sup>26</sup> It is almost identical with the *Sāmaññaphalasutta*, except that Ānanda arranges the states of mind enumerated there as the fruits of the life of a *samaṇa* under the three headings of *sīla*, *samādhi*, and *paññā*.

In the Kevaddhasutta (11) the householder Kevaddha comes to the Buddha and asks him to tell one of his followers to perform a miracle. As in other *suttas*, the Buddha accepts the interviewer's point of view. He accepts that miracles are possible, but says that it is not his practice to ask his followers to perform them. He states that of the three wonders which he himself has realised,<sup>27</sup> the wonder of education is the greatest, and he gives this in the words of the *Sāmaññaphalasutta*. To this is added a second, probably later, portion of the *sutta* which deals with the problem of the disappearance of the four elements. The answer is that they disappear in the state of *arahant*-ship, when all intelligence comes to an end. To this conclusion is prefixed a mythological preface which describes an ascending hierarchy of fourteen classes of gods. Its purpose

<sup>24</sup> The ten *avyākatas* are dealt with separately in the *Avyākata-samyutta* (S IV 374–403).

<sup>25</sup> *Ahaṃ yā imasmiṃ janapade janapada-kalyāṇi taṃ icchāmi taṃ kāmami* (D I 193, 4–6).

<sup>26</sup> *Ekaṃ samayaṃ āyasmā Ānando Sāvattiyaṃ viharati ... acira-parinibbute Bhagavati* (D I 204, 2–4).

<sup>27</sup> *Tiṇi kho imāni Kevaddha pāṭihāriyāni mayā sayāṃ abhiññā sacchikatvā paveditāni. katamāni tiṇi? iddhi-pāṭihāriyaṃ ādesanā-pāṭihāriyaṃ anusāsani-pāṭihāriyaṃ* (D I 212, 16–18).



is to make the gods confess their own inferiority to the Buddha, and to state the folly of seeking refuge in anyone but him.

In the *Lohicca*sutta (12) some points about the ethics of teaching are discussed, and blameworthy and blameless teachers are enumerated. This leads to a re-iteration of the exposition set out in the *Sāmaññaphalasutta* up to the state of *arahant*-ship.

In the *Tevijjasutta* (13) the Buddha criticises the position of the brahmins who base their religious life on the system of the three *Vedas*. This is the only *sutta* in the *Silakkhandhavagga* which does not lead up to a discussion of *arahant*-ship. It goes only as far as the four *brahmavihāras*—the four states of mind which lead to rebirth in the heaven of Brahmā. The Buddha rejects the brahmanical idea of the three *Vedas* in favour of his own three *vijjās*. The brahmins with whom the Buddha was conversing had their own idea about union with Brahmā, and here, as commonly, the Buddha was using the brahmanical term Brahmā in a specifically Buddhist sense.

### 3.1.2. The Mahāvagga

A number of the *suttas* in this *vagga* include the word *ābhā-* in their title, and it is possible that they have been expanded from shorter ones, but the corresponding *suttas* with the word *Cūla-* in their titles no longer exist. It is, however, possible to deduce that in some cases addition or interpolation has occurred. Most of the *suttas* in this *vagga* are legends rather than discourses, and they have features which show them to be later than the *suttas* of the first *vagga*, where the Buddha is only a man, alive or recently dead.

In the *Mahāpadānasutta* (14) the lives of the seven Buddhas, i.e. Gotama and his six predecessors, are given as a preliminary to laying down the general conditions necessary for the arising of a Buddha, so that their whole course of actions is in accordance with the reign of law in the world (*dharmatā*). The life of Vipassin, the first of the Buddhas, is given in detail, including all the miracles of the conception and birth of a Buddha, and the 32 marks of a great man, which have already been mentioned in the *Ambaṭṭhasutta* (3). Although the inclusion of seven Buddhas and the other features suggest a late origin for this *sutta*,<sup>29</sup> it is noteworthy that the *paṭiccasamuppāda* which Vipassin realises has only ten links instead of the more usual twelve in the form which Gotama realised,<sup>30</sup> since it omits the two ultimate links *avijjā* and *saṅkhārā*. The use of the word *apadāna* in the title of this *sutta* differs from that found in the late canonical text called by that name,<sup>31</sup> where it is used not of the Buddha but only of *theras* and *theris*.

<sup>29</sup> The same seems to be true of the *Majjhima-nikāya*. See p. 44 below.

<sup>30</sup> The six previous Buddhas are, however, already mentioned by name at Vin III 7, 34–37.

<sup>31</sup> As described at Vin I 1, 10–16.

<sup>32</sup> See p. 88 below.

The Sarvāstivādin version of this *sutta*, entitled *Mahāvādānasūtra*, has been found in Turkestan and published.<sup>32</sup>

The *Mahānidānasutta* (15) gives the fullest exposition of the *paṭiccasamuppāda* given in the *piṭakas*, although in the *Paccayākāravibhaṅga* of the *Vibhaṅga* in the *Abhidhamma-piṭaka* the formula is re-iterated and analysed with greater variety of presentation.<sup>33</sup> The exposition is given as a rebuff to Ānanda, who describes the *paṭiccasamuppāda* as "simple."<sup>34</sup> As in the *Mahāpadānasutta* (14), the two final links, viz. *avijjā* and *saṅkhārā*, are omitted, and it is possible that this represents the traditional view of the *Dīgha-bhāṇakas* who were responsible for preserving the *Dīgha-nikāya*.

Fragments of the Sarvāstivādin Sanskrit version of this *sutta* have been discovered in Turkestan, and published.<sup>35</sup>

The *Mahāparinibbānasutta* (16) contains the story of the wanderings of the Buddha during the last few months of his life, his death, and the distribution of the relics after his cremation. It fits together so closely with the story, related in the *Cullavagga* of the *Vinaya-piṭaka*, of the first council held immediately after his death, that it seems clear that both stories are based upon what was originally one connected narrative.<sup>36</sup>

There are clear indications of additions to the *sutta*, and detailed analyses have been made to distinguish older elements from later ones.<sup>37</sup> It has been shown that many of the episodes in the *sutta* occur in other canonical texts,<sup>38</sup> and the presence of the word *Mahā-* in the title implies that there existed at one time a *Cūlaparinibbānasutta* which lacked many of the later additions.<sup>39</sup> In some cases it can be shown how additions occurred. The earthquake which took place at the end of the speech in which the Buddha renounces his life occasions a statement about the eight causes of earthquakes,<sup>40</sup> which leads to the inclusion of a list of eight assemblies, eight positions of mastery, and eight stages of release, all of which also find their place in the *Anguttara-nikāya*.<sup>41</sup> A misunderstanding of a verse which seems to include a reference to crossing a river leads to an unnecessary insertion of a story about the Buddha crossing the Ganges by supernormal power.<sup>42</sup> There is a reference to the future greatness

<sup>32</sup> ERNST WALDSCHMIDT, *Das Mahāvādānasūtra*, Teil I–II, Berlin 1953, 1956 (ADAW 1952 Nr. 8, 1954 Nr. 8).

<sup>33</sup> Vibh 135–92.

<sup>34</sup> *Atha ca pana me uttānakuttānako viya khāyati* (D I 55, 11).

<sup>35</sup> See WALDSCHMIDT, CASF, p. 138 n. 9.

<sup>36</sup> See FRAUWALLNER, EV, p. 43.

<sup>37</sup> See PANDE, SOB, pp. 98–106. See also A. BAREAU, "La composition et les étapes de la formation progressive du Mahāparinirvāṇasūtra ancien," in BEFO LXVI (1979), pp. 45–103.

<sup>38</sup> See RHYS DAVIDS, DB, Vol. II, p. 72.

<sup>39</sup> See WINTERITZ, HIL, p. 39.

<sup>40</sup> See FRAUWALLNER, EV, pp. 157–59.

<sup>41</sup> Cf. D II 107–12 with A IV 305–313.

<sup>42</sup> See PANDE, SOB, p. 102. The error may be connected with the insertion of the words *setum katvāna* at D II 89, 26. As RHYS DAVIDS pointed out (Buddhist Suttas,

of Pāṭaliputra which is almost certainly a prophecy made with the benefit of hindsight, and so must date from the second half of the 4th century B.C.<sup>42</sup>

The Sarvāstivādin version of this *sutta* has been published.<sup>43</sup> This too contains some of the additions, including the list of eight earthquakes, which shows that the expansion of the original shorter form of the story must predate the schism between the Sarvāstivādins and the Theravādins. A fragment of a Dharmaguptaka version has also been published.<sup>44</sup>

In the course of the wanderings leading up to the Buddha's death recounted in the Mahāparinibbānasutta (16), the Buddha tells Ānanda of the former greatness of the city of Kusinārā, which the latter had said was an unworthy place for the Buddha to die in, and the story is told of King Sudassana, who had inhabited Kusinārā when it was a great city. The Mahāsudassanasutta (17) starts with the same words as are given at that point in the previous *sutta*, but goes on to tell the full story. It seems to be aimed towards the laity rather than the *bhikkhus* when it tells of the king's greatness being due to generosity (*dāna*), self-conquest (*āma*), and self-control (*samvama*).<sup>45</sup>

The Sanskrit version of this story is included in the Mahāparinirvāṇasūtra in the place where Ānanda first referred to the city. In both the Sanskrit and the Pāli versions it has the character of a Jātaka story, for the Buddha identifies himself with King Sudassana in a previous birth.

The Janavasabhasutta (18) is also an expansion of a portion of the Mahāparinibbānasutta (16), and deals with the rebirths of the Nādikas which are mentioned in the latter *sutta*. Like the Mahāsudassanasutta (17), which was probably an addition intended to explain the reference to Kusinārā, this *sutta* shows signs of being a later insertion, because it not only contains miraculous and mythical elements, but also treats doctrinal matters in a numerical way, e.g. the four ways to supernormal power (*iddhipādā*) and the four inceptions of mindfulness (*satipatthānā*). Both features are typical of later texts.

The Mahāgovindasutta (19) also contains such miraculous elements, and tells of the joy in heaven at the appearance of new gods, who have arisen as such because of the good *kamma* performed by Gotama's followers. Brahmā praises Gotama and gives his view of the ideal brahman. The inclusion of some mne-

SBE XI, Oxford 1881, p. 22 n. 1), this is a gloss upon *taranti añṇavaṃ saraṃ* which has crept into the text, as the metre shows. The mistake must be an old one, as the words *setuṃ kṛtvā* occur in the corresponding verse at Divy 56, 8 and MPS 7. 9.

<sup>42</sup> There is some doubt about the date when Pāṭaliputra became the capital of Magadha, but it seems certain that it was after the time of the Buddha. See MALALASEKERA, DPPN, Vol. II, p. 178.

<sup>43</sup> ERNST WALDSCHMIDT, Das Parinirvāṇasūtra, Teil I—III, Berlin 1950—51 (ADAW 1949 Nr. 1, 1950 Nr. 2 and 3).

<sup>44</sup> ERNST WALDSCHMIDT, Drei Fragmente buddhistischer Sūtras, in NGAW 1948, pp. 49—91. The discovery of this fragment is of great interest, since the Chinese translation of the Dirghāgama was made from the Dharmaguptaka version (see WALDSCHMIDT, CASF, p. 136).

<sup>45</sup> D II 180, 4—5.

monic verses suggests that an older story has been adapted for Buddhist purposes, and the basis of the *sutta* seems to be the preaching of *karuṇā-jhāna* as a means of gaining direct realisation of Brahmā. The idea of realisation of Brahmā leads, as in the Tevijjasutta (13), to the enunciation of the four *brahma-vihāras*.

A Sanskrit version of this story, with some differences, is found in the Mahāsaṅghika-Lokottaravādin Mahāvastu.<sup>47</sup>

As in the case of the two previous *suttas*, the Mahāsamayasutta (20) is concerned with the gods, this time the minor ones, who express their support for Buddhism. The greater part of the *sutta* is a list (in verse) of names of gods, of which a portion seems to be a reworking of a list which occurs in the Ātānātiya-suttanta (32). The way in which it occurs seems clumsy, which suggests that it is an insertion, and had an independent existence before the *sutta* was composed. There is a prologue containing verses uttered by the four gods of the pure abode (*Suddhāvāsakāyikā devā*). There is also a framework, put into the mouth of the Buddha at the beginning (after the prologue) and the end. This has a separate existence elsewhere in the canon,<sup>48</sup> and confirms that the *sutta* is made up from parts that were originally independent.

There is a Sanskrit version of this *sutta* extant, which has the name Mahāsamāyasūtra.<sup>49</sup> Since, according to the dictionaries, *samaya* and *samāja* can both mean "assembly,"<sup>50</sup> this may simply be a variation of vocabulary. It is, however, noteworthy that *samāja* occurs with the spelling *samaya* in the Śāhābhāgarī version<sup>51</sup> of the Asokan inscriptions, and the possibility remains that the Sanskrit name is an incorrect back-formation from a Prakrit form.<sup>52</sup>

The differences between the Sanskrit and the Pāli versions of this *sutta* are not great.<sup>53</sup> In the Sanskrit *sūtra* the gods in the prologue belong to the Brahmakāyika class, not the Suddhāvāsakāyika; the Buddha is said to be preaching to his disciples about *nirvāṇa*, while no sermon is mentioned in the Pāli; moreover, the Pāli version lacks the list of attributes conferred upon the *arhats* who make up the Buddha's audience. These differences are precisely those which might be

<sup>47</sup> Mahāgovindīya-sūtra = Mvu III 197—224. REYS DAVIDS, DB, Vol. II, pp. 256—58 comments on some of the differences. WALDSCHMIDT, CASF, p. 136 n. 3 refers to KLAUS HAHLEWEG, Das Mahāgovinda-Sūtra. Eine vergleichende Analyse der indischen und chinesischen Versionen, diss. Munich 1954. JONES (Mvu tr., III, p. 219 n. 1) points out that the purpose of the Sanskrit version is to emphasise and illustrate an incident in the Buddha's career. In both versions the story has the character of a Jātaka, for the Buddha identifies himself with Govinda in a previous birth.

<sup>48</sup> It occurs at S I 27—28.

<sup>49</sup> Ed. and tr. by WALDSCHMIDT, CASF, pp. 149—62.

<sup>50</sup> See MW, s. vv. *samaya* and *samāja*.

<sup>51</sup> See E. HULTZSCH, Inscriptions of Asoka, Oxford 1925, p. 51.

<sup>52</sup> The alternative suggestion, that Pāli *samaya* is to be derived from Sanskrit *samāja* seems less likely, since it could only have been transmitted through a written North-Western Prakrit form.

<sup>53</sup> They are discussed by WALDSCHMIDT, CASF, p. 149.



expected to arise in the course of an oral tradition, when a *thera* preaching a sermon might well change a number of unimportant matters each time he recited a *sutta*.

The Sakkapañhasutta (21) is the last of the series of mythological *suttas*, and culminates in the conversion of Sakka, the king of the gods, to Buddhism. It would seem to have been intended as a piece of propaganda, to persuade non-Buddhists not to be afraid of the new religion since even the gods of their own religion accepted it. The *sutta* tells how Sakka visits the Buddha, is allowed to ask him certain questions about ethics and psychology, and is so persuaded by his answers that he is converted. The *sutta* calls itself a *veyyākaraṇa* (explanation) at the end,<sup>44</sup> although Buddhaghosa includes it among the texts which he calls *vedalla*.<sup>45</sup> This perhaps means that in the early period of Buddhism it was included in that category of text in the nine-fold canon. It would seem to be an early *sutta*, since it is quoted by name in the Saṃyutta-nikāya.<sup>46</sup>

Fragments of the Sarvāstivādin version have been discovered and published.<sup>47</sup>

The doctrine expounded in the Mahāsatipaṭṭhānasutta (22) is perhaps the most important after the Aryan Path in early Buddhism, and this *sutta* is the oldest authoritative statement of the doctrine. The *sutta* is in two parts. The first part concerns mindfulness, and is the same as the Satipaṭṭhānasutta (10) of the Majjhima-nikāya. The second part is a term by term account of the four noble truths, and the addition of this second part perhaps explains why the *sutta* is called Mahā-, the other *sutta* in the Majjhima-nikāya being by implication the Cūla- *sutta*. The addition uses a style of definition which is similar to that found in the Abhidhamma-piṭaka, and its unusually detailed character has led to the suggestion that it is perhaps a fragment from an early commentary which has crept into the canon.<sup>48</sup>

The Pāyāsisutta (23) refers to matters which took place after the death of the Buddha. It tells how the chieftain Pāyāsi visited the Buddha's disciple Kassapa to question him about rebirth and *kamma*, neither of which Pāyāsi believed in. There is no mention of the Buddha, as either alive or dead, but in his commentary upon the Vimāna-vatthu Dhammapāla states that the *sutta* was recited after the erection of the *thūpas* over the relics.<sup>49</sup> During the course of the discussion, Pāyāsi's arguments are all refuted, and he is converted to Buddhism. The climax of the *sutta* comes when a messenger arrives from the gods to teach the doctrine of generosity (*dāna*) by laymen. It is possible that the death of the Buddha had led to a falling-off in the gifts made to the *Sanḅha*, and the gods were employed as a fit means of reminding those who had followed

<sup>44</sup> D II 289, 3.

<sup>45</sup> See Sp 28, 27.

<sup>46</sup> *Vuttam idam bhante Bhagavatā Sakkapañhe* (S III 13, 5).

<sup>47</sup> See WILDSCHMIDT, CASF, p. 138 n. 10.

<sup>48</sup> See RHYS DAVIDS, DB, Vol. II, p. 337 n. 1.

<sup>49</sup> *Bhagavatī parinibbute dhātuvibhāge ca kate tattha tattha thūpeṣu patiṭṭhāp-  
ayamāneṣu* (V-v-n 297, 16-17).

them, before both gods and laymen became Buddhists, of the need to be generous.

### 3.1.3. The Pāṭikavagga

The third *vagga* is the most miscellaneous section, and its contents indicate that definite doctrinal beliefs about the nature of a Buddha had become much developed by the time it was collected together. This suggests a comparatively<sup>50</sup> late origin for some, at least, of the *suttas* it contains.

The Pāṭikasutta (24) falls into two parts. In the first, the Buddha discusses mystic wonders, while in the second he deals with the origin of things. Both subjects are treated elsewhere—the wonders in the Kevaddhasutta (11) and the origin of things in the Aggaññasutta (27). The *sutta* begins with the mention of Sunakkhatta Licchaviputta, who had left the Buddha because he would not perform miracles or discuss origins, but the emphasis changes, and the Buddha becomes eager to show that he has worked wonders. He then begins to discuss origins, but suddenly with an abrupt change of subject he makes a comment upon the stage of release called "beautiful."<sup>51</sup>

The Udumbarikasihanādasutta (25) deals with the same subject as the Kassapasihanādasutta (8), i.e. the nature of asceticism both true and false, but it treats it in a more elaborate way. The Buddha discusses the different kinds of asceticism and their evil effects, and explains the life of a real liver of the holy life (*brahmacārin*).

The Cakkavattisihanādasutta (26) tells the story of the righteous monarch, of the corrupt conditions which followed after his time and led to a shortening of the human lifespan, and then a general improvement in morals which will lead to a lengthening of the lifespan again. When the lifespan of humans has grown to 80,000 years, the Cakkavattin Saṅkha and the future Buddha Metteyya will arise. Such an idea as future Buddhas would seem to represent a later stratum of Buddhist thought,<sup>52</sup> which suggests that this is a later text.

The Aggaññasutta (27) represents another rejection of the brahmanical claim to be the best caste. To make this rejection, the Buddha tells a story about the beginning of the world, although his reluctance to talk about origins is made clear in the Pāṭikasutta (24). The Buddha gives etymological explanations for the arising of King Mahāsammata, the *khattiyas*, the *rāja*, *brāhmaṇas*, *jhāyikas*, *ajjhāyikas*, *vessas* and *suddas*.<sup>53</sup> The *sutta* shows that righteousness is above

<sup>50</sup> The word "comparatively" must be emphasised. The fact that versions of the *suttas* of the Dīgha-nikāya are found in the canons of other sects shows that the *nikāya*, as a whole, must have been composed within a century or so of the Buddha's death.

<sup>51</sup> *Yasmim samaye subham vimokkham upasampajja viharati, subham t' eva tasmim samaye sañjānāti* (D III 34, 20-21).

<sup>52</sup> See p. 161 below.

<sup>53</sup> For a discussion of these etymologies see U. SCHNEIDER, "Acht Etymologien aus dem Aggañña-Sutta," in *Asiatica* (Festschrift Weller), Leipzig 1954, pp. 575-83.

lineage, although of those who do put their trust in lineage the *khattiya* is best. The mythological content of this *sutta* suggests that it is not early.

The *Sampasādanīyasutta* (28) is an elaboration of a passage in the *Mahāparinibbānasutta* (16), where Sāriputta is rebuked for saying that the Buddha was the best of all Buddhas. In this *sutta*, Sāriputta goes on to enumerate the various excellences (*ānuttariyas*) of the Buddha's teaching. The *sutta* mentions in the main only such *dogmata* as relate to spiritual practice. Since no claim is made for the completeness of such beliefs, it would probably be unwise to try to draw conclusions from any omissions. The *sutta* ends with the Buddha telling Sāriputta to repeat his discourse frequently in the presence of any persons who may have doubts about him. Such a sentiment seems late, and suggests that the *sutta* is a late one.

The *Pāsādikasutta* (29) is said to have been delivered soon after the death of Nāthaputta, the Jain leader, as a result of the quarrelling which his death caused among his followers. In contrast to this turmoil, the Buddha tells of the conditions of a perfect religion, and gives information about the characteristics of a *Tathāgata* and his powers. The *sutta* contains a collection of already existing doctrinal points, and seems to suggest nothing new.

The *Lakkhaṇasutta* (30) is an elaborate piece of Buddhology, describing in detail the 32 physical characteristics of the Buddha. In the history of Buddhism this iconographic development has often been supposed to be a late phenomenon and one which rather tends to Mahāyāna ideas. The lateness of the doctrine in this *sutta* is matched by the lateness of the metre of its verses. It shows a greater variety of metres<sup>66</sup> than any other canonical text, all of them being, moreover, either new classical types of metre or classical forms of old metres.<sup>67</sup>

The orthodox tradition records that the verses are not as late and authentic as the bulk of the canon, and in his commentary Buddhaghosa attributes them to Ānanda.<sup>68</sup>

The *Sigālovādasutta* (31) is really a poem with a prose commentary, and Buddhaghosa calls it a *gīhivāya*.<sup>69</sup> It tells of the duties of the Buddhist layman. The *sutta* relates how Sigāla practises the worship of the six directions (*disās*) as a result of his father's death-bed wish. The Buddha sees him doing this, and interprets the six quarters in a Buddhist manner, in a way in which his doctrine of love and goodwill between man and man is set forth with more detail than elsewhere in the canon.

See also K. R. NORMAN, "Four etymologies from the Sabhiya-sutta," in BALASOORIYA, BSWR, p. 183 n. 23.

<sup>66</sup> The metres include *Vamāsastha*, *Puṣpitāgrā*, *Rathodāhatā*, *Upasthitapracupita*, *Rucirā*, *Udgatā*, and *Pramitākṣarā*.

<sup>67</sup> See WARDER, PM, § 135.

<sup>68</sup> *Etā pana gāthā porāṇaka-therā Ānanda-therena ṭhapitā vaṇṇagāthā ti vatvā gatā* (Sv 922. 35–36).

<sup>69</sup> See Sv 959, 5.

The *Āṭānāṭīyasutta* (32) is a saving chant (*rakkhā-manta*) to get rid of evil spirits, and is included among the list of protective utterances (*parittās*).<sup>70</sup> It deals with the sending away of gods, *gandhabbas* and *yakkhas* if they attack laymen and laywomen. It contains two lists of supernormal beings, one long and one short. As has already been noticed,<sup>71</sup> a reworking of a portion of the longer list, which begins with an invocation to the seven Buddhas, and then the gods of the four quarters, is found in the *Mahāsamayasutta* (20). Fragments of a Sarvāstivādin Sanskrit *Āṭānāṭīkasūtra* have been found in Turkestan and published.<sup>72</sup>

The occasion for the *Sanḅitisutta* (33) was the feuding that took place among the Jains after the death of their leader Nāthaputta at Pāvā, just as was the case for the *Pāsādikasutta* (29). The name of the *sutta* suggests that it represents a recitation of doctrinal matters, perhaps as an attempt to provide a summary of the doctrine as a precaution against a comparable confusion arising in the Buddhist *Sanḅha*. The title, the fact that the authorship is attributed to Sāriputta, and the nature of the text, which is numerical on the lines of the *Anguttara-nikāya*, all suggest that the *sutta* is a late one.

The nature of the text is reminiscent of the *mātikās* of the Abhidhamma-piṭaka and it is noteworthy that the Sarvāstivādins have in their Abhidhamma-piṭaka a text called *Sanḅitiparyāya*,<sup>73</sup> which seems to be a commentary upon the *Sanḅitisūtra*, of which fragments have been found in Turkestan.<sup>74</sup> The arrangement of the material in the *Sanḅitisutta* seems to be entirely haphazard. The aim appears to be the collection of all points of doctrine, and no account is taken of the fact that there is overlap and duplication, e.g. in the case of the five *khandhas* and the five *upādāna-khandhas*.<sup>75</sup>

The *Dasuttarasutta* (34) is also ascribed to Sāriputta, and seems to be a systematic selection from the previous *sutta*.<sup>76</sup> Some of the wording is identical with the *Sanḅitisutta*. It follows the same pattern of sections dealing with subjects from one to ten, but has ten in each section, thus giving a total of one hundred. Fragments of the Sanskrit *Daśottarasūtra* have been found and published.<sup>77</sup>

<sup>66</sup> See p. 173 below.

<sup>67</sup> See p. 39 above.

<sup>70</sup> HELMUTH HOFFMANN, *Bruchstücke des Āṭānāṭīkasūtra*, Leipzig 1939 (KST, V).

<sup>71</sup> See p. 107 below.

<sup>72</sup> See VALENTINA STACHE-ROSEN, *Das Sanḅitisūtra und sein Kommentar Sanḅitiparyāya*, Berlin 1968 (STT, IX).

<sup>73</sup> See D III 233, 23–234, 2.

<sup>74</sup> RHYS DAVIDS (DB, Vol. III, p. viii) writes of an "appendix" at the end of each *nikāya*, but PANDE (SOB, p. 113) points out that although *suttas* 33 and 34 are also together in the Chinese translation of the *Dirghāgama*, they are not the last *suttas* there. The Chinese version is based upon the Dharmaguptaka version, as WALDSCHMIDT (CASF, p. 136) notes.

<sup>75</sup> See KUSUM MITTAL, *Dogmatische Begriffsreihen im älteren Buddhismus, I: Fragmente des Daśottarasūtra*, Berlin 1957 (STT IV); D. SCHLINGLOFF, *Dogmatische Begriffsreihen im älteren Buddhismus, Ia: Daśottarasūtra IX–X*, Berlin 1962



A comparison with the Chinese translation of the *āgamas* shows that all the *suttas* of the Pāli Dīgha-nikāya have a parallel, although not necessarily a close parallel, in the *āgamas*.<sup>74</sup> They are not, however, all found in the Dirghāgama, and their presence elsewhere, usually in the Madhyamāgama,<sup>75</sup> shows that the distinction between the two *āgamas* was not yet closely delineated at the time when the various sects of Buddhism separated. The reverse also holds true, and not all the *sūtras* in the Dirghāgama are found in the Pāli Dīgha-nikāya. The Sarvāstivādin version of the Dirghāgama includes the Catuṣpariṣatsūtra, although this is found in the Mahākhandhaka of the Vinaya-piṭaka in the Pāli canon.<sup>76</sup>

### 3.2. The Majjhima-nikāya

The Majjhima-nikāya<sup>77</sup> contains 152 *suttas* arranged in three groups of fifty (*paññāsa*). The *paññāsas* (1–50, 51–100, 101–52) are further divided into *vaggas* of ten *suttas* each, except for the last *vagga* but one, which has twelve *suttas*.

There is no obvious order followed in the arrangement of *suttas*, except that *suttas* with a similar name are sometimes grouped together. There are seventeen pairs of *suttas* with the same name, distinguished by the prefixes Mahā- and Cūla-.<sup>78</sup> In most cases these pairs are together, with Mahā- sometimes coming first, and sometimes Cūla-, although in one case the pair are far apart in different *vaggas*.<sup>81</sup> One *vagga* (Mahāyamakavagga) consists of five such pairs, while the Cūlayamakavagga, on the other hand, contains only two pairs. There are several *suttas* entitled Mahā- to which there is no Cūla- counterpart.

Of such a pair, the Mahā- version is usually longer than the Cūla-, but not always. The Cūlahatthipadopamasutta (27) is longer than the Mahāhatthipadopamasutta (28), and the Cūlamūlunkyasutta (63) is longer than the Mahāmūlunkyasutta (64). Sometimes such linked *suttas* have nothing in common but the reason for the name, e.g. the two Hatthipadopamasuttas (27 and 28) both

(STT IVa); B. PAULY, *Fragments Sanskrits de Haute Asie* (Mission Pelliot), Paris 1958. See also CH. TRIPATHI, "Die Einleitung des Daśottarasūtra," in *Indianisme et Bouddhisme* (Festschrift Lamotte), Louvain 1980, pp. 353–58.

<sup>74</sup> See PANDE, SOB, p. 78.

<sup>75</sup> See *ibid.*, p. 116 n. 1.

<sup>76</sup> It occurs in the Samghabhedavastu of the Mūla-Sarvāstivādin canon, as noted above (p. 24).

<sup>77</sup> Ed. V. TRENGNER, PTS London, Vol. I, 1888; R. CHALMERS, Vol. II, 1896; Vol. III, 1899. Tr. LORD CHALMERS, *Further Dialogues of the Buddha*, SBB London, 1926–27; I. B. HORNER, *Middle Length Sayings*, PTS London, Vol. I, 1954; Vol. II, 1957; Vol. III, 1959; (German) K. E. NEUMANN, *Reden Gotamo Buddho's aus der mittleren Sammlung* (Majjhimanikāyo) des Pali-Kanons übers., 3 vols., Leipzig 1896, 1900, 1902. For an analysis of the text see PANDE, SOB, pp. 116–79.

<sup>78</sup> See HORNER, MLS, I, pp. x–xv.

<sup>81</sup> Mahā-Rāhulovādasutta (62) and Cūla-Rāhulovādasutta (147).

make use of the simile of the elephant's footprint, but do not have the same subject matter. On the other hand, the two Dhammasamādānasuttas (45 and 46) have much in common. Similarly, of the two Gopālakasuttas the Cūla-version (34) makes use of one simile deriving from "cowherd" (*gopālaka*), while the Mahā- (33) version puts forward eleven.

The names of the *vaggas* to some extent reflect their contents, some being called after the first *sutta* in the *vagga*. The Gahapativagga consists of *suttas* in each of which, except for one *sutta* (57), the Buddha addresses householders. The third *vagga* surprisingly has no title. Since six of the ten *suttas* have the word *upama* in their titles, it would have been appropriate to call it *Opamma-vagga*.<sup>82</sup>

#### 3.2.1. The Mūlapaññāsa

A number of the *suttas* in this group are autobiographical, and give information about the Buddha's career which is lacking elsewhere in the canon. The Ariyapariyesanasutta (26) contains an account of the Buddha's activities between the time he left home and the conversion of the group of five *bhikkhus*, including his visits to the teachers Ālāra Kālāma and Uddaka Rāmaputta.<sup>83</sup> The Mahāaccakasutta (36) gives an account of the Buddha's attempts to gain enlightenment by means of asceticism, and of his decision to give up such methods when they failed to gain the goal he desired. The Mahāsīhanādasutta (12) contains similar details.

Of the two Sāropamasuttas, the Cūla- version (30) is longer than the Mahā-form (29). Both deal with the same subject (the simile of the pith) and both have the same summary at the end. It is possible that one is not an elaboration of the other, but that both are different versions of the same *sutta*.<sup>84</sup> An important addition in the Cūla- version of the *sutta* is an attempt to enumerate the states which are higher than knowledge and vision (*nāṇadassana*). These are set out as the *jhānas* and *vimokkhas*.

The Satipatṭhānasutta (10) contains word for word the first part of the Mahāsatipatṭhānasutta of the Dīgha-nikāya (22),<sup>85</sup> and is possibly to be regarded as the Cūla- version of that *sutta* because it lacks the second portion dealing with the four truths. This has a separate existence in the Majjhima-nikāya (141).<sup>86</sup>

The Alagaddūpamasutta (22) takes its title from the simile of the water-snake which if handled properly is unable to harm the person who holds it. It also contains the parable of the raft, which is invaluable for crossing a river.

<sup>82</sup> As suggested by HORNER (MLS, I, p. xi) following CHALMERS.

<sup>83</sup> A comparable account of Gotama's visits to Ārāda Kālāma and Udraka Rāmaputta is found at Mv II 118, 1–120, 16.

<sup>84</sup> See PANDE, SOB, p. 122.

<sup>85</sup> See p. 40 above.

<sup>86</sup> Saccavibhaṅgasutta (M III 248–252).

but must be abandoned when it has served its purpose. In the *sutta* the Buddha attacks the view held by some that the world and the self (*attā*) are the same thing. This seems to be a reflection of the Upaniṣadic view of a World-*Ātman*.<sup>87</sup>

Some of the *suttas* include ideas which have already been noted as comparatively late when they occurred in the Dīgha-nikāya. The Mahāsihanādasutta (12) gives an account of the ten powers of a *Tathāgata*, while in the Cūḷataṇhāsāṅkhasutta (37) Moggallāna visits Sakka's heaven and shakes the Veja-yanta Palace with his big toe by means of supernormal power. The Brahmanimantapikasutta (49) shows the Buddha challenging a Brahṁā, and proving that the Brahṁā's supernormal powers are inferior to his own.

A number of the *suttas* enumerate ascetic practices, e.g. the Mahāsihanādasutta (12), or give information about the Jains, e.g. the Cūḷadukkhakkhandhasutta (14), while the Mahādukkhakkhandhasutta (13) in a series of similes explaining the consequences of the pleasures of sense gives a long list of punishments and tortures.

### 3.2.2. The Majjhima-paṇṇāsa

In this *vagga* too there are *suttas* dealing with other religious groups. The Upālisutta (56) tells how the householder Upāli, a Jain layman, visited the Buddha to refute him but became converted to Buddhism, and resisted an attempt by Nātaputta the Jain leader to persuade him to *revert*. The Kukkuravatikasutta (57) tells of *bovine* and canine ascetics whose future existence as cattle, dogs, or hell-dwellers is foretold. The uselessness and cruelty of asceticism are also dealt with in the Kandarakasutta (51), and the Apanṇakasutta (60).

Two *suttas* in this *paṇṇāsa* tell of discussions which took place after the death of the Buddha. In the Madhurasutta (84) and the Ghoṭamukasutta (94) an enquiry about the present whereabouts of the Buddha meets the reply that the Buddha has now attained final *nibbāna* (*parinibbuto*).<sup>88</sup> There are other indications that some *suttas* are later than others, even among those which are attributed to the Buddha himself. The Bhaddālisutta (65) discusses the reason for the growth of rules of training (*sikkhāpadāni*), and the Buddha points out that the need for an increase in rules only arises when the *Saṅgha* is great and of long standing.

In several *suttas* the Buddha continues his attack upon the brahmins. In the Assalāyanasutta (93) he examines the brahmins' claim to be the best caste, and in the Madhurasutta (84) his disciple Mahākaccāna does the same. A number of the *suttas* in this section are narrative stories. The Raṭṭhapālasutta (82) tells of the young prince who became a wanderer, and of his father's attempts to

<sup>87</sup> See K. R. NORMAN, "A note on *attā* in the Alagaddūpama-sutta," in *Studies in Indian Philosophy*, Ahmedabad 1981, pp. 19–29.

<sup>88</sup> *parinibbuto kho ... etarahi so Bhagavā araham sammāsambuddho* (M II 90, 16–17 = 162, 24–25).

entice him away from religion when he visits the palace to beg years later. The verses with which he describes the uselessness of wealth and position also appear in the Theragāthā.<sup>89</sup> The Makhādevasutta (83) relates the story, also found in the Jātaka collection,<sup>90</sup> of the king who regards his first grey hairs as messengers of death, and so abandons his kingdom and becomes a wanderer. The Aṅgulimālasutta (86) tells the story of the robber who attempted to kill the Buddha but was instead converted by him. His verses also appear in the Theragāthā.<sup>91</sup>

The Brahmāyusutta (91) resembles the Ambaṭṭhasutta of the Dīgha-nikāya (3), in that it tells of a brahman visiting the Buddha to see if he really possessed the 32 marks of a great man. As in the case of Ambaṭṭha, supernormal powers are employed to enable him to see the two marks which are not normally visible. The brahman Brahmāyu then asks the Buddha how one becomes a possessor of the three *Vedas* (*tevijja*), and he is given a Buddhist interpretation of the brahmanical term.<sup>92</sup>

Two *suttas* are of great interest because they are occasions for the Buddha to be questioned about the existence of *devas* and *adhidevas*, i.e. beings superior to the *devas* (gods). In the Saṅgāravasutta (100), the Buddha is asked if *devas* exist, and replies that *adhidevas*, i.e. super-gods, certainly do, so that by implication the existence of *devas* can be deduced.<sup>93</sup>

"But now, Gotama, do *devas* exist?" "I certainly know for a fact, Bhāradvāja, that super-*devas* exist." "But why, Gotama, when asked if *devas* exist, do you say that you know certainly for a fact that super-*devas* exist? Even if this were so, is your answer not useless and misleading?" "If anyone, when asked if *devas* exist, replies that super-*devas* exist, then someone with sense can deduce that *devas* must exist." "Then why, Gotama, did you not say in the first place that *devas* exist?" "It is firmly accepted in the world, Bhāradvāja, that *devas* exist." (II 212–13)

In the Kaṇṇakattalasutta (90) he is asked if *adhidevas* exist. He concedes that they do, but his follower Ānanda makes it clear that the pre-eminent position of such *adhidevas* was of no importance. Elsewhere in the canon, however, the word *atideva* is used of the Buddha, and since this and *adhideva* are synonymous it seems likely that in the Saṅgāravasutta the Buddha was referring to himself as being superior to the *devas*, and in the Kaṇṇakattalasutta it was the brahmanical *adhidevas* which were being disparaged.<sup>94</sup>

<sup>89</sup> Th 769–88.

<sup>90</sup> Ja (9) I 137–39.

<sup>91</sup> Th 866–91.

<sup>92</sup> See M I 144, 18–22.

<sup>93</sup> See K. R. NORMAN, "The Buddha's view of *devas*," in *Beiträge zur Indienforschung: Ernst Waldschmidt zum 80. Geburtstag gewidmet*, Berlin 1977, pp. 329–36.

<sup>94</sup> See K. R. NORMAN, "Devas and Adhidevas in Buddhism," in *JPTS* 1981, pp. 145–55. The corruptions which have led to the loss of the word *adhideva* in both the Saṅgāravasutta and the Kaṇṇakattalasutta must be very old.



## 3.2.3. The Uparipannāsa

As already noted, this *paññāsa*, despite its name, contains 52 *suttas*, since there are twelve *suttas* in the fourth *vagga*. It has been suggested that *suttas* (132), (133) and (134), which are all three by followers of the Buddha, and are based upon (131), should perhaps be regarded as forming one *sutta*, which would make the number correct.<sup>95</sup> On the other hand, since the Saccavibhaṅgasutta (141) seems to be no more than an early commentary on the Buddha's first sermon about the four noble truths, and the Dakkhināvibhaṅgasutta (142) repeats Ānanda's pleading of Mahāpajāpati's cause found in the Vinaya,<sup>96</sup> it is possible that both *suttas* are interpolations.<sup>97</sup>

It has been pointed out that this section contains more *suttas* for which a late origin can be postulated than the other two *paññāsas*.<sup>98</sup> In particular, the *suttas* in the Vibhaṅgavagga (131–42) foreshadow the method of analysis and classification found in the Vibhaṅga in the Abhidhamma-piṭaka. The Isigili-sutta (116) gives a list of *paccekabuddhas* in prose and then a longer list in verse. The concept of the *paccekabuddha* seems to be a late borrowing into Buddhism from some other religion.<sup>99</sup> The Acchariyabbhutadhammasutta (123) describes the conception and birth of a Buddha in words very similar to those found in the Mahāpadānasutta of the Dīgha-nikāya (14), where they are applied to the Buddha Vipassin, and in the Nidāna-kathā of the Jātaka.<sup>100</sup>

The Gopakamoggallānasutta (108) is said to have been delivered not long after the Buddha's *parinibbāna*<sup>101</sup> by Ānanda, who was asked whether the Buddha had designated any of his followers as a support (*paṭisaraṇa*) to the Saṅgha after his death. Ānanda replied that no-one had been designated, but the Saṅgha was nevertheless united because the *dhamma* was the support.<sup>102</sup> The Sāmagāmasutta (104) tells of the quarrelling which took place among the Jains after the death of their leader Nātaputta. As in the case of the Saṅgīti-sutta of the Dīgha-nikāya (33), this led to the Buddha promulgating some sets of numerical categories.

A number of *suttas* show disciples preaching. In *suttas* (132) and (133) Ānanda and Mahākaccāna repeat and explain the Buddha's words in the Bhaddekarattasutta (131). In the Dantabhūmisutta (125) and the Bhūmijāsutta (126) prince Jayasena approaches the novice Aciravata and the venerable Bhūmija respectively, and asks to hear the *dhamma*. Both preachers sub-

<sup>95</sup> By HORNER, *MLS*, I, p. ix n. 1.

<sup>96</sup> Cf. *Vin* II 254–55.

<sup>97</sup> As suggested by Mrs C. A. F. RHYS DAVIDS in her review of *M II* in *JRAS* 1902, p. 475.

<sup>98</sup> PANDE, *SOB*, p. 117.

<sup>99</sup> See K. R. NORMAN, "The *pratyeka-buddha* in Buddhism and Jainism," in *Papers on Buddhology*, Curzon Press, London 1982.

<sup>100</sup> Cf. *Jā* I 52–53.

<sup>101</sup> *acira-parinibbute Bhogavati* (*M III* 7, 14–15).

<sup>102</sup> *sappāṭisaraṇā mayam ... dhammapaṭisaraṇā* (*M III* 9, 23–24).

sequently visit the Buddha and are told how they could have improved their teaching.

The Cūlakammavibhaṅgasutta (135) and the Mahākammavibhaṅgasutta (136) both give an account of the working of *kamma* including a description of the suffering in hell (*niraya*) which awaits a wrong-doer. Another account of hell, with even greater detail, is found in the Bālapaṇḍitasutta (129). Comparable descriptions of suffering in hell are found in Jain texts,<sup>103</sup> and presumably represent a more popular conception of the doctrine of *kamma*.

Most of the *suttas* in the Vibhaṅgavagga (131–42) follow a distinctive pattern. The subject is first presented as a brief statement (*uddesa*) and is then followed by an exegesis (*vibhaṅga*), supplied in four *suttas* by leading *theras*, a detail which perhaps correctly reflects the Buddha's way of teaching.<sup>104</sup> The Saccavibhaṅgasutta (141), however, after an initial statement about the setting of the wheel of the *Dhamma* in motion, provides the same exegesis of the four noble truths as is found in the Mahāsatipatthānasutta in the Dīgha-nikāya (22).<sup>105</sup>

It has been established that the Chinese translation of the Madhyamāgama is based upon a Sarvāstivādin original.<sup>106</sup> An examination of the contents of the Chinese version shows that, of its 222 *sūtras*, 98 correspond to *suttas* in the Pāli Majjhima-nikāya, 79 in the Aṅguttara-nikāya, 10 in the Saṃyutta-nikāya, and 9 in the Dīgha-nikāya.<sup>107</sup> Since the majority of texts found in Turkestan belong to the Sarvāstivādin school, it is remarkable that comparatively few portions of Madhyamāgama texts from that area have as yet been published.<sup>108</sup>

## 3.3. The Saṃyutta-nikāya

The Saṃyutta-nikāya<sup>109</sup> gains its title from the fact that its *suttas* are grouped together (*saṃyutta*) according to their contents. There are 56 *saṃ-*

<sup>103</sup> Cf. *Utt* XIX 47–72.

<sup>104</sup> See Mrs C. A. F. RHYS DAVIDS, rev. of R. CHALMERS, *Majjhima-nikāya*, Vols II and III, in *JRAS* 1902, p. 475.

<sup>105</sup> See p. 40 above.

<sup>106</sup> See WALDSCHMIDT, *CASF*, p. 136.

<sup>107</sup> See P. V. BAPAT (ed.), *The Majjhima Nikāya* (I. Mūla-paññāsakaṃ), Nalanda 1958, p. xxiv.

<sup>108</sup> For the Bimbasārasūtra, represented in the Chinese Madhyamāgama, see WALDSCHMIDT, *CASF*, p. 138. See also E. WALDSCHMIDT, "The Rāstrapālasūtra in Sanskrit remnants from Central Asia," in *Indianisme et Bouddhisme* (Festschrift Lamotte), Louvain 1980, pp. 359–74, and *The Varṇasatam*: an eulogy of one hundred epithets of Lord Buddha spoken by the Gṛhapati Upālī(n), in *NGAW* 1979 Nr. 1. A number of other Sarvāstivādin Madhyamāgama texts are listed in E. WALDSCHMIDT, *Sanskrithandschriften aus den Turfanfunden*, IV, 1980, pp. 20–73.

<sup>109</sup> Ed. L. FEER, 5 vols., PTS London, 1884–98. Tr. C. A. F. RHYS DAVIDS, *Kindred Sayings*, PTS London, Vol. I, 1917; Vol. II, 1922; F. L. WOODWARD, Vols. III–V, 1925, 1927, 1930; (German) W. GEIGER, *Saṃyutta-Nikāya*, Vol. I, Munich 1930; Vol. II, Munich 1925. For an analysis of the text see PANDE, *SOB*, pp. 180–229.



*suttas*, arranged in five *vaggas*. They contain 2,889 *suttas* in all, in the European edition, although Buddhaghosa states that there are 7,762 *suttas*.<sup>110</sup>

The arrangement is made by (1) subject or doctrine, (2) class of god, demon, or man, (3) some prominent person as speaker or hero,<sup>111</sup> e.g. the Sakkasamyutta (11) contains *suttas* where Sakka plays a part, while the Bojjhaṅgasamyutta (46) is composed of those *suttas* in which the seven elements of enlightenment are discussed. This method does, however, lead to a great deal of repetition, e.g. the Saḷāyatanasamyutta (35) contains 207 *suttas* about the six senses. It is possible that the repetition arises from the fact that there were in existence many *suttas* on the subject, collected from various individuals, different *vihāras*, etc., all of which were of equal religious merit, and all of which deserved to be included in the collection.<sup>112</sup> This method of arrangement does mean that the Samyutta-nikāya contains some of the most important Buddhist teaching, e.g. the Saccasamyutta (56) contains 131 *suttas* dealing with different aspects of the four truths.

The arrangement by *samyuttas* represents an obvious editorial practice, and the existence of a number of the *suttas* elsewhere in the canon probably indicates a conscious selection of material to group together in this way. There is inevitably an overlap with the Aṅguttara-nikāya, because some of the *samyuttas* deal with numerical subjects. Sometimes a comparison with the version of a *sutta* which occurs elsewhere shows quite substantial differences. A version of the *Parinibbāna* story is included in the Brahmaṣamyutta (6), because Brahmā gives a eulogy over the dead Buddha just as in the Mahāparinibbānasutta of the Dīgha-nikāya (16), but it reverses the order of the utterances by Ānanda and Anuruddha, omits the attainment of *saññāvedayitanirodhasamāpatti*, and also Ānanda's mistaking of this for *parinibbāna*.<sup>113</sup> These differences show that changes have been introduced into one or other, or both, of the narratives at some time, but the tradition has not changed since then, doubtlessly because the Dīgha-*bhāṇakas* and Samyutta-*bhāṇakas* preserved their texts independently.

### 3.3.1. The Sagāthavagga

This *vagga* contains the great majority, but by no means all, of the *suttas* which contain verses.<sup>114</sup> The layout indicates that a certain amount of editorial work had already been carried out before the *vagga* was fixed in its present form.

<sup>110</sup> Sp 18, 9–10.

<sup>111</sup> See WINTERITZ, HIL, p. 56.

<sup>112</sup> WINTERITZ, HIL, p. 57 n. 1, quoting Mrs REYS DAVIDS.

<sup>113</sup> See M. PRZYLUCKI, "Le Parinirvāna et les funérailles du Buddha," in JA 1918, pp. 485–526, quoted by PANDE, SOB, p. 189.

<sup>114</sup> Despite FEER's statement (S I, p. xv) that all the verses have been gathered together in the Sagāthavagga, there are some in other *vaggas*. He later (S IV, p. 9) comments on the inconvenience of having another Sagāthavagga in the Vedanā-samyutta (36).

The first *sutta* of the Devatāsamyutta (1) has a short introduction describing how a *devatā* visited the Buddha and asked a question. The second *sutta* has an abbreviated introduction, while the third and subsequent *suttas* in the *vagga*<sup>115</sup> merely state that a *devatā* uttered the verse. Similarly, the first *sutta* of the second *vagga* has an introduction, while the second and third *suttas* have only a single sentence. The remainder of the *vagga* consists simply of verses, which, because they are in the Devatāsamyutta, must be presumed to have been originally uttered by a *devatā*. A similar pattern can be seen in later *vaggas*.

The subject matter of the Sagāthavagga is predominantly ethical, and most of the *suttas* deal with the Buddhist ideal of life. Many of the verses are of a question and answer nature. Some are riddles, while others are puns, e.g. *sutta* I.2.2. depends upon the two meanings, religious and secular, of *upadhi*: a man does not rejoice who is without *upadhi* (material possessions), but a man does not lament who is without *upadhi* (the clinging to existence which results from having material possessions). Sometimes both a religious and secular answer is given to the same question, e.g. in *sutta* I.8.4 there are two answers to the question of what is the best of things that rise and things that fall: seed and rain, and also knowledge and ignorance. In a number of *suttas* where only a religious answer to a question is given, it would seem probable that the secular answer has been omitted and forgotten, leaving only the paradoxical religious answer. The fact that some of the verses are also found in Jain literature prove their non-Buddhist nature.<sup>116</sup>

The Bhikkhunīsamyutta (5) collects together stories about *bhikkhunīs* who were tempted by Māra. Many of the verses are also found in the Therīgāthā,<sup>117</sup> but some do not occur there, and others are ascribed to different *therīs*.<sup>118</sup> Once again, the solution to the problem probably lies in the fact that the early tradition was doubtful about the form of the verses and the speakers, and the Samyutta-*bhāṇakas* and Khuddaka-*bhāṇakas* transmitted independently a differing tradition. The *uddāna* to a Sanskrit version of this *samyutta* has been discovered in Turkestan.<sup>119</sup> It agrees with the Pāli Bhikkhunīsamyutta in its contents, showing that the differentiation of the *bhāṇaka* tradition pre-dates the schism between the Theravādins and Sarvāstivādins.

It is debatable whether the prose of the introductions to the verses in the Sagāthavagga is as old as the verses themselves, or whether it represents the work of the *saṅgītikāras* at the first or a subsequent council. Since only the verses of the Bhikkhunīsamyutta are found in the Therīgāthā, it is clear that the prose did not have canonical status for the Khuddaka-*bhāṇakas*. The same is true of Vaṅṣa's verses, found in the Vaṅṣisatherasamyutta with prose intro-

<sup>115</sup> The five *vaggas* are divided into *samyuttas*, which are in turn divided into *vaggas*. FEER (S I, p. viii) comments upon the inconvenience of this system.

<sup>116</sup> E.g. S I 40, 4 and 40, 6 have parallels at Utt XIV 22–23.

<sup>117</sup> Thi 182–203.

<sup>118</sup> See NORMAN, EV II, pp. xxvi–xxvii.

<sup>119</sup> See WALDSCHMIDT, CASF, pp. 144–47.



ductions, but without them, and with some differences, in the Theragāthā.<sup>120</sup> A fragment of the Vangīsaṃyutta has been found in Turkestan,<sup>121</sup> and portions of the Dhvajāgrasūtra<sup>122</sup> and Candrasūtra<sup>123</sup> have been discovered and published.

### 3.3.2. The Nidānavagga

The *sūttas* in this and the subsequent *vaggas* of the Saṃyutta-nikāya deal mainly with epistemology, metaphysics and psychology. The *vagga* takes its name from its first *saṃyutta*, the Nidānasamyyutta (12), which in 93 *sūttas* deals with the subject of the twelve *nidānas*, i.e. the twelve links of the chain of cause and effect (*puṭṭhasamuppāda*). A number of *sūtras* from the Nidānasamyyutta have been found in Turkestan and published.<sup>124</sup>

The Anamataggasamyyutta (15) in the same *vagga* contains 20 *sūttas* which include the words "endless"<sup>125</sup> is this *samsāra*," with the exception of *sūttas* (15.16–18), which are so abbreviated in the European edition that the words do not appear therein.<sup>126</sup>

### 3.3.3. The Khandhavagga

This *vagga* takes its name from the Khandhasamyyutta (22), which is its first *saṃyutta*. Despite its division into three groups of 50 (*paññāsa*), the Saṃyutta actually contains 158 *sūttas*. In them the subject of the *khandhas* is examined with great repetition, and the impression is given that every *sutta* which mentions the *khandhas*, and a few which do not,<sup>127</sup> has been collected together. Many can be found elsewhere in the canon. The Sāriputtasamyyutta (28) contains 10 *sūttas* which record ten sayings of Sāriputta, some of them a single sentence presented in a stereotyped setting. The Nāgasamyyutta (29) contains 50 *sūttas*, of which the last 30 are merely sketched out in a very abbreviated form, dealing with the different sorts of snake (*nāga*) and explaining the reasons for their birth and practices.

<sup>120</sup> Th 1209–79.

<sup>121</sup> WALDSCHMIDT, CASF, pp. 147–48.

<sup>122</sup> = S I 218–20. See WALDSCHMIDT, CASF, p. 138.

<sup>123</sup> = S I 50. See ERNST WALDSCHMIDT, "Buddha frees the disc of the moon (Candrasūtra)," in BSOAS 33, pp. 179–83.

<sup>124</sup> See S. LÉVI, "Textes sanscrits de Touen-houang," in JA 1910, pp. 438–40 (tr. J. M. COOPER, "A fragment of the Nidānasūtra," in PBR, 5, 3 (1980), pp. 53–58); E. WALDSCHMIDT, "Sūtra 25 of the Nidānasamyyutta," in BSOAS 20, 1957, pp. 569–79; CHANDRABHĀL TRIPĀṬHĪ (ed.), Fünfundzwanzig Sūtras des Nidānasamyyutta, Berlin 1962 (STT, VIII).

<sup>125</sup> For the meaning "endless" for *anamatagga* see T. BURROW, The problem of *śiva* in Sanskrit, Oxford 1979, p. 42.

<sup>126</sup> S II 189–90.

<sup>127</sup> As noted by FEER, S III, p. vii.

### 3.3.4. The Saṃyatanavagga

The first *saṃyutta* of this *vagga* is the Saṃyatanasamyyutta (35), which despite the fact that it is divided into four groups of 50 (*paññāsakas*) seems to contain 207 *sūttas*. Many of the *sūttas* differ from their neighbours in one word only, e.g. *sutta* (33) explains that everything is subject to birth (*jāti-dhamma*), while *sūttas* (34–42) replace *jāti* by *jarā*, *vyādhi*, *maraṇa* etc. The Upasenāsutta (69) tells of Upasena being bitten by a snake, but remaining unchanged in appearance because he had no ideas about the eye or the tongue or the mind being "mine." Fragments of the Sanskrit Upasenāsūtra, used as a charm against snake-bite, have been found in Turkestan and published.<sup>128</sup> The Avasutasutta (202) of the same Saṃyutta tells of Moggallāna preaching to his fellow *bhikkhus*, at the request of the Buddha who was indisposed. Moggallāna chose for his subject the letting in (*avassuta*) and not letting in (*anavassuta*) of harmful influences through the eyes, etc. Two fragments of a Sanskrit version of this *sutta* have been found and published.<sup>129</sup>

The Asaṅkhatasamyyutta (43) deals with the uncompounded (*asaṅkhata*), i.e. *nibbāna*,<sup>130</sup> and the path leading to it. Each synonym for *nibbāna*, and each means of attaining it, is the subject of a separate *sutta*, and the whole is abbreviated by an instruction to treat each of the synonyms under the same 45 heads as *asaṅkhata*.<sup>131</sup>

### 3.3.5. The Mahāvagga

A number of the Saṃyuttas in this *vagga* deal with matters of vital importance to Buddhism, including the Maggasamyyutta (45) which deals with the eightfold path, the Bojjhaṅgasamyyutta (46), which treats the seven elements of enlightenment, the Satipaṭṭhānasamyyutta (47), dealing with the bases of mindfulness, and the Jhānasamyyutta (53), which deals with trance, but in so abbreviated a way that several of the *vaggas* consist of nothing more than *uddāna* verses with instructions to expand them.<sup>132</sup>

The final *saṃyutta* of the fifth *vagga* is the Saccasamyyutta (56). Here among a number of very abbreviated *sūttas* is found the Dhammacakkappavattanasutta (56.11), which also occurs in the Vinaya-piṭaka.<sup>133</sup> Several *sūttas* tell of the difficulty of hearing the truth, including the Chiggaḷasuttas (56.45, 47–48),

<sup>128</sup> = S IV 40–41. See ERNST WALDSCHMIDT, Das Upasenāsūtra, Ein Zauber gegen Schlangenbiß aus dem Saṃyuktāgama, NGAW 1957, pp. 27–44.

<sup>129</sup> E. WALDSCHMIDT, "Mahāmaudgalyāyana's sermon on the letting-in and not letting-in (of sensitive influences)," in JIABS, 1, 1978, pp. 25–33.

<sup>130</sup> In the rubric to the first *vagga* it is called Nibbānasamyyutta (S IV 361, 25).

<sup>131</sup> *Yathā asaṅkhataṃ tathā viṭhāretabbam* (S IV 368, 26–27 = 373, 18).

<sup>132</sup> E.g. *viṭhāretabbam* (308, 13); *yathā Maggasamyyuttam evaṃ Jhānasamyyuttam viṭhāretabbam* (310, 7–8).

<sup>133</sup> Vin I 10, 10–12, 18.

in which comparison is made with shooting an arrow through a keyhole, or the possibility of a blind turtle pushing his head through the hole in a yoke drifting in the sea.

As already noted, there is an overlap between the Saṃyutta-nikāya and the Aṅguttara-nikāya in the Pāli canon, which arises from the possibility of classifying *suttas* in two different ways. An examination of the contents of the Chinese translation of the Saṃyuktāgama, which is based upon the Sarvāstivādin version,<sup>134</sup> shows that it includes a number of *sūtras* which in the Pāli canon appear in the Aṅguttara-nikāya.<sup>135</sup> This would seem to indicate that at the time when the *āgamas* were collected the distinction between the "connected" and "numerical" classifications was not very clearly drawn.

### 3.4. The Aṅguttara-nikāya

The name of the *nikāya*<sup>136</sup> means literally "the by-one-limb-more collection," and the text is of the type already seen in the Dasuttarasutta of the Dīgha-nikāya (34). Buddhaghosa mentions 3557 *suttas*,<sup>137</sup> but the number in the text as we have it is approximately 2,308 (or 2,363).<sup>138</sup> It is difficult to decide the number accurately because the text and the commentary do not always agree on the way in which the *suttas* are to be divided.<sup>139</sup> The *suttas* are divided into eleven sections (*nīpātas*), arranged in about 160 *vaggas*. Each *vagga* contains as a rule ten *suttas*, although the highest number in any one *vagga* is 262 and the lowest seven.

The Aṅguttara-nikāya is called the Ekuttara-nikāya in the Milindapañña,<sup>140</sup> and the Sanskrit version is called the Ekottarikāgama. Each *nīpāta* contains *suttas* dealing with subjects in some way connected with the number of the section, e.g. the *eka-nīpāta* begins with the single form which enslaves a man's heart, i.e. that of a woman, while the *ekūdasaka-nīpāta* ends with the eleven qualities which must be cultivated to ensure the comprehension and destruction of lust.

<sup>134</sup> See WALDSCHMIDT, CASF, p. 136.

<sup>135</sup> BENYU NANJIO, Catalogue of the Chinese translation of the Buddhist Tripitaka, Oxford 1883, p. 135, quoted by PANDE, SOB, p. 181.

<sup>136</sup> Ed. R. MORRIS, The Aṅguttara-Nikāya, PTS London, Vol. I, 1885 (Second edition, revised by A. K. WARDER, 1961); Vol. II, 1888; E. HARDY, PTS London, Vols. III–V, 1897, 1899, 1900; M. HUNT, Vol. VI (Indexes), 1910. Tr. F. L. WOODWARD, The Gradual Sayings, PTS London, Vol. I, 1932; Vol. II, 1933; Vol. V, 1936; E. M. HARE, Vol. III, 1934; Vol. IV, 1935; (German) BIRKHIT NĀṬILOKA, Reden des Buddha aus dem Aṅguttara-Nikāya übers., 5 vols., Munich 1911–23. For an analysis of the text see PANDE, SOB, pp. 230–47.

<sup>137</sup> Sp 18, 10–12.

<sup>138</sup> "There are, in fact, at most about 2,344 *suttas* in the Aṅguttara" according to HARDY (A V, p. vi).

<sup>139</sup> See HARDY's comment at A IV, p. iii.

<sup>140</sup> Mil 362, 17; 392, 2.

In some of the higher-numbered *nīpātas*, i.e. from the *chukka-nīpāta* onwards, combinations of smaller numbers are sometimes resorted to to get the higher designations, e.g. *sutta* (9.28)<sup>141</sup> contains the five *bhayas* and the four *soḍaṭṭhiyaṅgas*, while *sutta* (11.11)<sup>142</sup> contains three different sets of three *dharmas* and a set of two *dharmas*. With a few exceptions, however, the component parts of such composite *suttas* are not mere repetitions of the material found in the appropriate places in earlier *nīpātas*.<sup>143</sup> Sometimes the complements have no obvious connection. Sometimes some connection can be deduced, e.g. the five *cetokhīlas* and the four *satipaṭṭhānas* in *sutta* (9.71),<sup>144</sup> where the latter are to be practised for the destruction of the former. Sometimes the component parts are opposites, e.g. the five *dukkhas* and the five *sukhas* in *sutta* (10.65).<sup>145</sup>

Many of the *suttas* occur elsewhere in the canon, and it seems reasonable to assume that in part, at least, the Aṅguttara-nikāya consists of compilations of such numerical matters as already existed. Sometimes, however, it is impossible to be certain whether the Aṅguttara-nikāya is the borrower, or has been borrowed from, e.g. the eight cardinal rules for *bhikkhunis* occur as an independent *sutta* in the Aṅguttara-nikāya,<sup>146</sup> but occur as part of the *Bhikkhuni-kkhandhaka* in the Vinaya-piṭaka<sup>147</sup> in an entirely appropriate place. On the other hand, the eight earthquakes which occur in the *aṭṭhaka-nīpāta*<sup>148</sup> seem to be an insertion in the Mahāparinibbānasutta of the Dīgha-nikāya (16).<sup>149</sup> It is noteworthy that, while many of the enumerations in the Aṅguttara-nikāya occur without any introduction, in the case of the eight earthquakes the narrative story which leads up to their enumeration in the Mahāparinibbānasutta is also given in the Aṅguttara-nikāya, which seems to indicate that borrowing took place in both directions. The statement about eight types of assemblies which also occurs in the Mahāparinibbānasutta is extracted from there and given in the previous *sutta* in the Aṅguttara-nikāya.<sup>150</sup>

There are certain noteworthy omissions in the Aṅguttara-nikāya, e.g. the three refuges (*saraṇas*) and the three characteristic properties (*lakkaṇas*) are not found as such, nor are the four noble truths<sup>151</sup> nor the eight-fold path.<sup>152</sup>

<sup>141</sup> A IV 407.

<sup>142</sup> A V 326.

<sup>143</sup> See HARDY's comment at A V, p. vii, and his list of composite *suttas* at A V 421–22.

<sup>144</sup> A IV 460.

<sup>145</sup> A V 120–21.

<sup>146</sup> A IV 274–79.

<sup>147</sup> Vin II 253–56.

<sup>148</sup> A IV 308–13.

<sup>149</sup> D II 107–109.

<sup>150</sup> Cf. D II 109–110 and A IV 307–308.

<sup>151</sup> Mrs RHYS DAVIDS points out that the four truths occur in the *catukka-nīpāta*, but under the titles of *dukkha* and *loka*, not of *ariya*, as elsewhere. See A VI, p. viii n. 2.

<sup>152</sup> The eight-fold path, with the addition of *sammāñāṇaṃ* and *sammāvimutti*, occurs in the *dasaka-nīpāta* (A V 223).



With reference to the *saraṇas* and the *lakṣhaṇas* it has been suggested that the omission arises from the fact that these doctrines had not yet become important by the time the *tika-nipāta* was closed.<sup>153</sup> Such an explanation would not suit the four truths and the eight-fold path, and it seems likely that these doctrines were omitted because they were so important and so well-known that they were remembered in their original settings, and did not need to be transplanted to the *Anguttara-nikāya*. The fact that they had been included in the *Samyutta-nikāya* was perhaps also a factor contributing to their omission, although as has already been noted a certain amount of duplication has taken place. The fact that there is not more perhaps implies that there was a conscious "sharing" of *suttas* between the two *bhāṇaka* traditions, i.e. the *Samyutta*- and *Anguttara-nikāyas* are not entirely independent compilations.<sup>154</sup>

One reason for the blurring of distinction between the *Samyutta-nikāya* and the *Anguttara-nikāya* can be seen in the way in which some *vaggas* contain *suttas* which all deal with one and the same subject, so that they resemble a *samyutta*. The ten *suttas* of *vagga* (1.1) deal with the relationship between husband and wife; *vagga* (1.14) has 80 *suttas* giving the names of the most prominent male and female disciples and their virtues; *vagga* (1.20) contains 262 *suttas* on different kinds of meditation leading to *nibbāna*; *vagga* (5.18) has ten *suttas* about *upā-sakas*. There seem to be certain inconsistencies in the way in which the *suttas* and *vaggas* have been constituted. The first two *suttas* of *vagga* (1.6) are a continuation of *vagga* (1.5) and should have belonged to it.<sup>155</sup>

Many of the *suttas* in the *Anguttara-nikāya* are of a non-narrative type, following a stereotyped formulaic presentation. This allows for interpolation into the appropriate *nipāta* at any time up to the final fixing of the canon. Some of the *suttas* at the end of the tenth *nipāta* seem to be additions, since they include groups of 20, 30 and 40.<sup>156</sup> It is probable that the whole of the eleventh *nipāta* is an addition.<sup>157</sup> It has hardly anything original in it,<sup>158</sup> and its three *vaggas* represent the smallest number of any *nipāta*. The *Abhidharmakośa-vyākhyā* states that the *Ekottarikāgama* has only ten sections,<sup>159</sup> and the same seems to be true of the Chinese translation.<sup>160</sup> It seems possible that some of the *suttas* at the very end of the tenth *nipāta* are, in fact, based upon the added eleventh *nipāta*. After the *suttas* dealing with 20, 30 and 40, there are three

<sup>153</sup> See PANDE, *SOB*, p. 232.

<sup>154</sup> As suggested by Mrs RHYS DAVIDS (*A VI*, p. viii).

<sup>155</sup> The *vagga* is entitled "Finger-snap" (*acchara-saṅghāta*), but this applies from the third *sutta* onwards. The first two *suttas* deal with the luminous mind (*pabbhas-saraṇi cittaṃ*), which is the subject of the last two *suttas* of the previous *vagga*. The mechanical division of *suttas* into *vaggas* of ten has led to connected *suttas* becoming separated.

<sup>156</sup> See *A V* 304–308.

<sup>157</sup> See PANDE, *SOB*, p. 231.

<sup>158</sup> As noted by HARDY (*A V*, p. vii n. 1).

<sup>159</sup> Quoted (from MINAYEFF) by PANDE, *SOB*, p. 231.

<sup>160</sup> PANDE, *SOB*, p. 231.

*suttas* listing groups of ten.<sup>161</sup> These are, however, the ten qualities required to destroy lust, and are parallel to the eleven qualities which are found in the eleventh *nipāta*.<sup>162</sup> It is likely that the compiler of the *ekādasaka-nipāta* realised that his material could easily be adapted to fit the earlier *nipāta*, and therefore compiled appropriate *suttas* and inserted them there.

It is likely that the Chinese version of the *Ekottarikāgama* belongs to the school of the *Mahāsāṅghikas*, and was translated not from Sanskrit but from some dialect of MIA or a mixed dialect of Prakrit with Sanskrit elements.<sup>163</sup> An extract from the *Saptamaithunasamyuktasūtra*, quoted by Śāntideva in his *Śikṣāsamuccaya*, is in all probability to be traced to a Sanskrit counterpart to the Prakrit original of the Chinese translation.<sup>164</sup>

Sanskrit fragments of the *Ekottarikāgama* have been found in Turkestan and published.<sup>165</sup> They all belong to the *eka-nipāta*, and correspond to the *Nivaraṇapahānavagga* of the *Anguttara-nikāya*. A comparison with the Chinese version of the same *sūtra* shows a certain amount of deviation. Portions of a Sanskrit *Ekottarikāgama*, belonging to the first and second *nipātas*, have been found in Gilgit and published.<sup>166</sup> By chance there is an overlap with some of the Turkestan fragments, which makes it possible to state that there is a verbal correspondence between the two versions. This is perhaps not surprising, since they belong to the *Sarvāstivādin* (Turkestan) and *Mūla-Sarvāstivādin* (Gilgit) schools.

### 3.5. The *Khuddaka-nikāya*

#### 3.5.1. *Khuddakapāṭha*<sup>167</sup>

As has already been noted,<sup>168</sup> both the *Dīgha-bhāṇakas* and the *Majjhima-bhāṇakas* excluded this work from their lists of canonical texts, which probably means that it had not yet attained canonical status at the time when their lists were closed. The *Khuddakapāṭha* is also omitted from the Chinese translation<sup>169</sup> of Buddhaghosa's *Samantapāsādikā*, which implies that either a recension of his work existed in which the *Khuddakapāṭha* was excluded, or the Chinese trans-

<sup>161</sup> *A V* 309–10.

<sup>162</sup> *A V* 360–61.

<sup>163</sup> See WALDSCHMIDT, *CASF*, p. 137.

<sup>164</sup> See WALDSCHMIDT, *CASF*, p. 189.

<sup>165</sup> Discussed by WALDSCHMIDT, *CASF*, pp. 169–74.

<sup>166</sup> CHANDRABHĀL TRIPĀTHI, *Ekottarikāgama-Fragmente der Gilgit-Handschrift*, Reinbek 1981.

<sup>167</sup> Ed. H. SMITH, PTS London, 1915. Tr. BHIKKHU ÑĀṆAMOLI, *The Minor Readings*, PTS London, 1960.

<sup>168</sup> See p. 9 above.

<sup>169</sup> P. V. BAPAT and A. HIRAKAWA (tr.), *Shan-Chien-P'i-P'o-Sha*, Poona 1970, p. 11 n. 22.

lators were influenced by someone who knew that some schools did not accept the work as canonical. If we can be certain of our assumption that it had not yet gained canonical status when the schools of *bhāṇakas* closed their lists, then we can conclude that it is the latest text in the *nikāya*.

It consists of nine short texts. The first is the Buddhist confession of faith (the three refuges), the second a list of ten commandments for *bhikkhus* (*veramaṇi-sikkhāpadāni*), the third a list of 32 parts of the body, and the fourth a list of ten novice's questions set out in numerical order—"What is one, etc.?"—including some of the most important Buddhist terms, such as the four noble truths and the eight-fold path. The other five pieces are short *suttas*, used for liturgical purposes: Maṅgalasutta, Ratanasutta, Tirokuḍḍasutta, Nidhikaṇḍasutta, and Mettasutta. The first two and the last also occur in the Suttanipāta.<sup>170</sup> while the Tirokuḍḍasutta occurs in the Petavatthu.<sup>171</sup> The first four compilations have parallels in the Vinaya-piṭaka, so that in effect all but the Nidhikaṇḍasutta are found elsewhere in the canon, and the whole work was probably compiled as an extract from the canon to serve as a handbook for novices.<sup>172</sup> It probably owes its canonical nature to the fact that it is (nearly) all from the canon.

### 3.5.2. Dhammapada

The Dhammapada<sup>173</sup> is a collection of 423 verses arranged in 26 *vaggas*, each containing between ten and 26 verses, except for the last, entitled Brāhmaṇavagga, which has 41 verses. The titles for the most part reflect the subject matter of the verses, e.g. the Puppha-vagga (4) contains verses which with only two exceptions contain either the word *puppha* or the names of individual flowers, or include the key-word in a refrain, e.g. the Brāhmaṇavagga (26) includes the word *brāhmaṇa* in every verse except one (394), and has the refrain *am ahaṃ brūmi brāhmaṇam* in 32 verses.

More than half the verses occur elsewhere in the canon,<sup>174</sup> although it is difficult to be certain whether they were collected together from those sources, or whether both took them from a third source. The existence of some of these verses in Jain or brahmanical texts<sup>175</sup> suggests that they were taken from the

general store of floating verses which seems to have existed in Northern India in early times. The metres included in the Dhammapada are *Trigubh* (with some *Jagati*), *Varāṇīya* (with some *Aupacchandasaṅga*), and *Anuṣṭubh*. Although small groups of verses, linked together by refrain, structure, or metre, clearly make small poems whose pre-existence is shown by the fact that they occur in the same form in other traditions as well,<sup>176</sup> for the most part the arrangement of verses, including their presence in particular *vaggas*, can be seen, by comparison with other texts, to be the choice of the compiler. In many cases verses are, by their content, appropriate to more than one *vagga*,<sup>177</sup> which accounts for the differences which can be observed between various recensions.

Although there are differences of opinion about the poetic quality of the verses in the Dhammapada,<sup>178</sup> the number of different versions we have of it are evidence for the popularity of this type of literature. From Turkestan there is a Sarvāstivādin version entitled Udānavarga,<sup>179</sup> which includes about 1050 verses, including *uddānas*, in 33 *vargas*. There is also an incomplete version in Gāndhārī Prakrit<sup>180</sup> which was acquired in Khotan. This perhaps belonged to the Dharmaguptaka school.<sup>181</sup> It contains, in its incomplete form, 342 verses of which many are fragmentary, and probably had 26 *vargas*, of which (4–5), (9), and (23–26) are lost. It is probable that both the Udānavarga and the Gāndhārī Dharmapada had originally about 360 verses in common with the Pāli Dhammapada,<sup>182</sup> but although there are close parallels between these various texts, there are also considerable differences, e.g. the Śīlavarga of the Udānavarga (6) contains none of the verses found in the *varga* which probably had the same name in the Prakrit version, and the verses which the two texts have in common are spread over eight other *vargas*. The Pāli Dhammapada has no *vagga* entitled Śīla, and the verses it has in common with the (presumed) Śīlavarga of the Gāndhārī version are found in seven *vaggas*.<sup>183</sup> Nevertheless, there is presumably some significance in the fact that the first three *vargas* of the Gāndhārī Dharmapada occur, in reversed order, as the last three of the Pāli version.<sup>184</sup>

<sup>170</sup> E.g. Dh 228–30 = Udāna-v XXIX 46–48 = G Dh 240–42.

<sup>171</sup> As Dh 158 contains both the word *attānam* and the word *paṇḍito*, it is appropriate to the Attavagga in the Dh and to the Paṇḍitavarga in the G Dh (227).

<sup>172</sup> See the assessment by BROUGH, G Dh, p. xvii.

<sup>173</sup> F. BERNHARD (ed.), Udānavarga, Vol. I, Göttingen 1965. See also L. SCHMITT-HAUSEN, „Zu den Rezensionen des Udānavargah“, in WZKS 14, pp. 47–124.

<sup>174</sup> J. BROUGH (ed.), The Gāndhārī Dharmapada, London 1982.

<sup>175</sup> BROUGH (G Dh, p. 45) considers the Dharmaguptakas and the Kāśyapiyas as eligible claimants to the text.

<sup>176</sup> See BROUGH, G Dh, p. 23.

<sup>177</sup> See *ibid.*, p. 25.

<sup>178</sup> See *ibid.*, p. 28. This does not necessarily imply that either text was known to the redactors of the other.

<sup>170</sup> = Sn pp. 46–47; vv. 222–38; vv. 143–52.

<sup>171</sup> Pv 14–25 (= I. 5).

<sup>172</sup> Some of the texts are used as *parittas*. See p. 174 below.

<sup>173</sup> Ed. V. FAUSBELL, Hauniae (Copenhagen) 1855; second ed., London 1900; S. SUMANGALA THERA, PTS London, 1914; ed. and tr. S. RADHAKRISHNAN, London 1950; Tr. F. MAX MÜLLER, London 1881 (SBE X. 1); (Latin) V. FAUSBELL, Hauniae 1855; (German) L. VON SCHROEDER, Worte der Wahrheit, Leipzig 1892; K. E. NEUMANN, Der Wahrheitspfad, Leipzig 1893; R. O. FRANKE, Dhamma-Worte, Jena 1923.

<sup>174</sup> WINTERNITZ, HIL, p. 83.

<sup>175</sup> Cf. Dh 404 with Ut XXV 26; and Dh 223 with MBh V 39, 58.



The Mahāsāṅghika-Lokottaravādin Mahāvastu contains two *vargas*, one called the Sahasravarṇa,<sup>183</sup> the other unnamed but probably the Bhikṣuvarga,<sup>184</sup> and a few sporadic verses ascribed to the Dharmapada.<sup>185</sup> There has recently been published a complete Dharmapada belonging to the same school, which was found in Tibet.<sup>186</sup> It is in Prakrit, with some attempts made at Sanskritisation, and contains 415 verses in 22 *vargas*, of which only 13 have titles found in the Pāli version.<sup>187</sup> The relationship between these various versions and the four translations of the Dharmapada which exist in Chinese is not clear, although the oldest of these, dating from A.D. 244, seems to have some affinity with the Pāli Dharmapada, since it includes in its 39 sections all 26 of the Pāli version (9–32, 34–35), with corresponding titles in the same order. The remaining verses seem to have come partly from the Udānavarga, and partly from another text or texts. Although the verses in the sections which correspond are not exactly the same as those in Pāli, the changes, additions, and omissions seem to be no greater than are usual in normal manuscript transmission.<sup>188</sup>

### 3.5.3. Udāna

The Udāna<sup>189</sup> consists of eight *vaggas*, each containing ten *suttas* which end with a solemn utterance (*udāna*). This is usually a single verse, but it is occasionally more, and in a few cases is in prose.

To some extent, as in the case of other collections, some reasons can be seen for certain of the arrangements of *suttas* into *vaggas*. e.g. in *vagga* (1) all the verses contain the word *brāhmaṇa*. In *vagga* (2) the *udānas* of nine of the ten *suttas* contain the word *sukha*, and the exception has the compound *piyarūpaṃ* in common with the *sutta* following it, and is doubtless placed there by association of ideas. The same association of ideas probably accounts for other connections which can be seen in *vaggas* which do not have as obvious a theme, e.g. *suttas* (3.2) and (3.3) have a refrain in common; *suttas* (3.3) and (3.4) have the words *pabbata* and *vedhātī* in common; *suttas* (3.8) and (3.9) have *pādas* in common.

<sup>183</sup> Mvu III 434–36.

<sup>184</sup> Mvu III 421–23.

<sup>185</sup> Mvu II 212, 19–20; III 156, 16–17.

<sup>186</sup> Ed. N. S. SHUKLA, The Buddhist Hybrid Sanskrit Dharmapada, Patna 1979; G. ROTH, "Particular features of the language of the Ārya-Mahāsāṅghika-Lokottaravādins and their importance for early Buddhist tradition," in BECHERT, LEHT, pp. 78–135.

<sup>187</sup> See SHUKLA, op. cit. (in n. 188), p. vi.

<sup>188</sup> See BROUGH, G. Dhp, pp. 35–38.

<sup>189</sup> Ed. P. STEINTHAL, PTS London, 1885. Tr. D. M. STRONG, London 1902; F. L. WOODWARD, Verses of Uplift, SBB London, 1948; (German) K. SEIDEN-STÜCKER, Augsburg 1920.

The term *udāna* is one of the categories found in the nine-fold classification of the canon. Although Buddhaghosa states that in that classification the term actually refers to this text,<sup>192</sup> it is more likely that it refers to a general type of literature, of which the Udāna is an example. In this connection it is of interest to note that Dhammapāla states<sup>193</sup> that the majority of the Buddha's *udānas* are in the Dharmapada. As has just been noted, the Sarvāstivādin version of the Dharmapada is entitled Udānavarga.

The commentator also states<sup>194</sup> that the verses of *theras* and *theris* in the Theragāthā and the Therīgāthā are not *udānas*, but *sihanādas*. This is probably an attempt to explain why the collection contains only 80 *udānas*. It is nevertheless clear that there are many other *udānas* in the canon, and it is uncertain why this collection should be so small. Some of the *udānas* which are found here occur elsewhere in the canon, with and without the narrative story which introduces them, e.g. the first four *suttas* of the first *vagga* occur at the beginning of the Mahākhandhaka of the Vinaya-piṭaka.<sup>195</sup> Sometimes the narrative portion of the *sutta* occurs elsewhere without the *udāna*, e.g. the first *sutta* of the fourth *vagga*.<sup>196</sup> As is usual, it is not always easy to see which text has borrowed from which, and in some cases it may be that both texts took the *suttas* directly from the great body of oral material which must have existed in the early days of Buddhism.

Although some of the *udānas* are in what was probably their true historical setting, it seems clear that some of the *suttas* have either been adapted, or even invented, to provide an occasion for the utterance. The first four *suttas* of the eighth *vagga* have the same story, which is merely a brief statement that the Buddha was preaching a sermon concerned with *nibbāna*. The fifth and sixth *suttas* of the sixth *vagga* also share an introductory story. It did not escape the commentator's notice that the verses and narrative portions are separate, and he ascribes the narrative portion to Ānanda,<sup>197</sup> who at the first council introduced each of the *suttas* with the words *evaṃ me sutaṃ*.

The metres found in the *udānas* include *Triṣṭubh* (and *Jagatī*), *Vaitālīya* (and *Aupacchandāsaka*), *Anuṣṭubh*, and Old *Āryā*.<sup>198</sup> Some of them are prose, e.g. *suttas* (6.6–8, 10) and (8.1, 3–4). The *udāna* in *sutta* (3.10), which is found elsewhere,<sup>199</sup> is a mixture of prose and verse, some of the latter being prose which has been forced into verse form.

<sup>192</sup> Sp 28, 18–19.

<sup>193</sup> Ud-a 3, 23–28.

<sup>194</sup> Ud-a 3, 12.

<sup>195</sup> Vin I 1–3.

<sup>196</sup> It occurs at A IV 354–58.

<sup>197</sup> Ud-a 5, 16–17.

<sup>198</sup> Ud 15, 1–5. See ALSDORF, AS, pp. 18–19.

<sup>199</sup> = Pet 26, 9–27, 4 = Nett 156, 22–157, 14. For the better readings of these versions see BHICKHU NĀṆAMOLI, The Guide, PTS London, 1962, p. 207 n. 843/1–6.

3.5.4. Itivuttaka<sup>200</sup>

The Itivuttaka presumably takes its name from the opening words of each *sutta*: *vuttam k' etam Bhagavatū*.<sup>201</sup> The text is stated by Buddhaghosa to be the work of that name included in the nine-fold classification of the canon.<sup>202</sup> It is, however, likely that as in the case of the Udāna, *itivuttaka* is simply a general term, and the text we possess is only one example of the type. The name appears in the form Itivṛttaka in the Sanskrit lists, but this would appear to be an incorrect back-formation.<sup>203</sup>

The Itivuttaka consists of 112 *suttas* arranged in four *nipātas*, sub-divided into *vaggas*, and is written in a mixture of prose and verse. The prose is not intended as a narrative, giving the circumstances in which the verse was uttered, as in the case of the Udāna, but the prose and verse complement one another, so that the same idea, whether in the form of doctrine or admonition, is presented partly in prose and partly in verse. It seems likely that the prose passages are, in fact, explanations of the verses, despite the fact that they precede them. Sometimes only a single verse of a set has a prose counterpart, with nothing in the prose corresponding to the other verses. In many cases the prose and verse treat the same subject, but one is a supplement to the other. Occasionally the link between the two is very weak, e.g. in *sutta* (92 = 3.5.3) the verse states that the man who is full of lust (*ejā*) is far removed from one free from lust, whereas the prose tells of a man who might be near to the Buddha physically but far removed morally, and vice versa. The reason for the juxtaposition of prose and verse seems to be nothing more than the verbal similarity based upon "near" and "far."<sup>204</sup> The prose of *sutta* (93 = 3.5.4) consists of the statement that there are three fires, i.e. those of lust, hate and delusion. The seven verses of the *sutta* constitute a short poem about those who by extinguishing the fires gain release from rebirth.

Like the Āṅguttara-nikāya, the Itivuttaka is arranged on the *nipāta* system, with items arranged numerically from one to four. It is not surprising that there are some parallels with both the Āṅguttara-nikāya and the Puggala-paññatti, which is also arranged on the same system. This is particularly so of the short fourth *nipāta*, which has only 13 *suttas* of which seven are identical with *suttas* in the *catukka-nipāta* of the Āṅguttara-nikāya,<sup>205</sup> and one is similar

<sup>200</sup> Ed. E. WINDISCH, PTS London, 1889. Tr. J. H. MOORE, *Iti-vuttaka or Sayings of Buddha*, New York 1908; F. L. WOODWARD, *Itivuttaka: as it was said*, SBB London, 1948; (German) K. SEIDENSTÜCKER, Leipzig 1922.

<sup>201</sup> The phrase appears at the beginning and end of every *sutta* until 79 (= 3.3.10). Thereafter it appears only intermittently. That not all sayings were uttered by the Buddha can be deduced from the fact that the last *sutta* (112 = 4.13) refers to the Buddha in both the third and second persons.

<sup>202</sup> Sp 28, 20–21.

<sup>203</sup> See p. 16 above, and BHS Dictionary, s.v. *itivṛttaka*.

<sup>204</sup> Such phenomena imply the work of a redactor, and not a very clever one.

<sup>205</sup> 4.2 = A II 27; 4.6 = A II 10; 4.7 = A I 132 = II 70; 4.9 = A II 26; 4.11 = A II 13; 4.12 = A II 15; 4.13 = A II 24.

to a section of the Puggalapaññatti.<sup>206</sup> Some of the *suttas* do not really fit into the *nipāta* pattern, e.g. the verse in *sutta* (78 = 3.3.9) tells of the danger of the energetic consorting with the slothful, and has no reference to the number three. The prose is somewhat inappropriate, since it tells of like meeting with like, but its position in the *tika-nipāta* is justified by the inclusion of the triad past, present, and future. The first *sutta* of the *catukka-nipāta* (100 = 4.1) lists four groups of two (*dānāni*, *saṃvibhāgā*, *anuggahā*, and *yāgā*). The verse includes a mention of the *dharmā-yāga*.

The fact that a large proportion of the fourth *nipāta* seems to have been borrowed from elsewhere in the canon has led to the suggestion<sup>207</sup> that the *nipāta* as a whole is a later addition to the text. This suggestion is supported by the Chinese version<sup>208</sup> of the Itivuttaka, which was presumably translated from a Sanskrit or Prakrit original.<sup>209</sup> In this, the fourth *nipāta* is completely lacking, while a number of *suttas* found in the third *nipāta* of the Pāli version do not occur. The origin of the Chinese version would seem to belong to the Sarvāstivādin school.<sup>210</sup>

## 3.5.5. Suttanipāta

The Suttanipāta<sup>211</sup> consists of 1,149 verses, with some prose passages, arranged in five *vaggas*. There is evidence for believing that the text is a compilation of material from different sources, and some of its contents can claim to be among the oldest Buddhist poetry known to us.<sup>212</sup> The last two *vaggas*, the *Atthakavagga* and the *Pārāyanavagga*, are mentioned by name in other Pāli canonical texts<sup>213</sup> and in Sanskrit texts, and the quotations which are given from them coincide with the text as we have it now. This does not, of course, prove that the whole text existed in its present form at the time of the Buddha. The great age of the two *vaggas* is also supported by the fact that a commentary upon them, the *Niddesa*, was composed at a sufficiently early date for it to be

<sup>206</sup> With 4.5 cf. Pp 54.

<sup>207</sup> See F. L. WOODWARD, *It* tr., p. ix.

<sup>208</sup> See K. WATANABE, "A Chinese collection of Itivuttakas," in *JPTS* 1906–1907, pp. 44–49.

<sup>209</sup> WATANABE states, op. cit. (in n. 208), p. 45, that the original of the Chinese translation was a Sanskrit text, because the texts brought to China were alleged to be "in the Fan language." "Fan," however, means "Indian (language)" and may refer either to Sanskrit or Prakrit. See K. R. NORMAN, "The role of Pāli in early Sinhalese Buddhism," in BECHERT, *BCSR*, p. 39.

<sup>210</sup> See WATANABE, op. cit. (in n. 208), p. 49.

<sup>211</sup> Ed. V. FAUSBØLL, PTS London, 1884; DINES ANDERSEN and HELMER SMITH, PTS London, 1913. Tr. V. FAUSBØLL, *The Sutta-nipāta*, London 1881 (SBE 10.2); LORD CHALMERS, *Buddha's Teachings*, Harvard 1932; E. M. HARE, *Woven Cadences of early Buddhists*, SBB London, 1945; (German) NYANAPONIKA, Konstanz 1955.

<sup>212</sup> See WARDER, *PM*, § 303.

<sup>213</sup> See pp. 67 and 69 below.



included in the canon. A number of individual *suttas* from other *vaggas* are found in Sanskrit texts of other traditions, suggesting that the *suttas* are old enough to pre-date the schisms between the sects.

The fact that the Niddesa deals with two *vaggas* and one independent *sutta*, and the separate existence of individual *suttas* in other traditions, suggest that at the time of the compilation of the Niddesa, and even later, not only were the *vaggas* still regarded as independent works, but so too were the *suttas*. It is, however, unwise to press this too far. At the time of the composition of the Chinese translations, which must have been long after the formation of the Theravādin canon, the *vaggas* were still separate in the tradition from which the Chinese made their translation, since it seems that only the *Aṭṭhakavagga* has a Chinese counterpart.<sup>214</sup>

The *Uragavagga* begins with the *Uragasutta*, a short poem in the *Aupacchandasaka* metre, in which a *bhikkhu* ridding himself of worldly emotions is likened to a snake casting its slough, a simile which serves as a recurring refrain.<sup>215</sup> That this was originally a separate text is shown by the fact that in other traditions it is found as a part of the collection of the *Dhammapada*.<sup>216</sup> Linguistic differences between it and the other *suttas* of the *vagga* can also be seen.<sup>217</sup> The second *sutta* is a conversation between the herdsman *Dhaniya* and the Buddha, in which the two speakers, in alternate *Vatūliya/Aupacchandasaka* verses,<sup>218</sup> contrast the domestic and ascetic life. Of considerable interest are hypermetric insertions into each verse (*iti Dhaniyo gopo, iti Bhagavā*) which make the identity of each speaker clear. These are probably to be regarded as reciter's remarks, which have been incorporated into the text. Their age is shown by the fact that comparable instructions in the *Aṭṭhakavagga* and *Pārāyanavagga* are commented upon in the Niddesa, and must therefore pre-date the composition of that text. The later commentary upon the *Suttanipāta*, the *Paramatthajotikā* II, states that these insertions are due to the *saṅgītikāras*.<sup>219</sup>

The third *sutta* of the *vagga* is the *Khaggavisāṇasutta*, a set of 41 verses extolling the life of a wanderer, of which all but one have the refrain "He should wander alone, like a rhinoceros horn."<sup>220</sup> The *sutta* itself gives no indication of

<sup>214</sup> See M. ANESAKI, "Sutta-nipāta in Chinese," in *JPTS* 1906–1907, pp. 60–51. WINTERNITZ (HIL, p. 92 n. 3) states that the *Pārāyanavagga* also occurs in the Chinese *Tipitaka*, whereas ANESAKI mentions only quotations from it there.

<sup>215</sup> So *bhikkhu jahāti orapāraṃ urago jñāma eva tacam purāṇam* (Sn 1–17).

<sup>216</sup> It, or much of it, occurs as a separate *varga* in *Udāna-v*, G Dhp (in *Bhikkhuvarga*), and P Dhp (in an unnamed *varga* which is not the *Bhikkhuvarga*). In *Udāna-v*, part is in the *Bhikkhuvarga*, but the flower verses are in the *Puspavarga*.

<sup>217</sup> BROUGH has pointed out (G Dhp, p. 200) that the *Uragasutta* contains nine compound verbs forming their absolutes in *-tvā*. In the other eleven *suttas* of the *vagga* there is only one further example, viz. *virājetvā* in 139 and 171.

<sup>218</sup> The verses fall into pairs, with the Buddha making a punning reply to *Dhaniya* in the second verse of each pair. The fact that verses 20 and 21 seem unconnected suggests that two verses have been lost from the *sutta*.

<sup>219</sup> "iti Sāṅgiro" ti ādi saṅgītikārehi [vuttam] (Pj II 193, 27–28).

<sup>220</sup> *Eko care khaggavisāṇakappo* (Sn 35–44, 46–75). The Niddesa makes it clear

the speaker(s) of these verses, but the Niddesa, which also comments upon this *sutta* as well as the last two *vaggas*, states that they were uttered by *pacceka-buddhas*,<sup>221</sup> and when the verses recur in the later canonical *Apadāna* they are attributed to the same class of speaker.<sup>222</sup> Although the idea of the *pacceka-buddha* is probably a late introduction into Buddhism,<sup>223</sup> the early date of the composition of these verses is shown by the inclusion of a commentary upon them in the Niddesa, and by the fact that a version of them appears in the *Mahāvastu*, where they are said to have been uttered by *pratyekabuddhas*.<sup>224</sup>

A number of *suttas* in this and other *vaggas* contain passages of prose, often as an introduction to the verses, setting the scene in which they were first spoken, but sometimes they are interspersed with the verses, and sometimes serve as a conclusion to the *sutta*. For the most part these prose passages give the impression of being later additions,<sup>225</sup> although in some cases the addition must have been made at an early date, for the Niddesa comments upon the portion of prose in the *Pārāyanavagga*. The *Paramatthajotikā* ascribes it to the *saṅgītikāras*.<sup>226</sup> In a few cases, however, some of the verses are scarcely intelligible without the help given by the prose passages, and we may assume that from the very earliest days of Buddhism such verses had to be explained by their reciters, and the prose which we have now is doubtless a refinement of the impromptu comments which were made to audiences who needed help to understand them.

A number of the *suttas* in this *vagga* are dialogues in which someone questions the Buddha and is converted as a result of his replies. The *Parābhavasutta* (6) tells of a *devāta* asking about the things by which a man loses and by which he gains in the world; the *Hemavatasutta* (9) tells of two *yakkhas* who talk together about the qualities of the Buddha, and then visit him to put their questions personally; in the *Ālavakasutta* (10) another *yakkha* is converted as a result of the Buddha's answers. In the *Mettasutta* (8) the virtues of a peaceful mind and goodwill are set forth in the Old *Āryā* metre,<sup>227</sup> which is a clear sign of antiquity. As already seen, this *sutta* is part of the *Khuddakapāṭha*.<sup>228</sup>

that the comparison is with the horn of the rhinoceros: *yathā khaggassa nāma visāṇaṃ ekaṃ hoti adutiyaṃ, evaṃ eva so paccekasambuddho takkappo tassadiṣo tappatibhāgo* (Nidd II [Ne] 248, 6–8). Doubtlessly the singularity of the fact that the Indian rhinoceros, of all the horned animals known to the Indians, had only one horn, impressed them and resulted in its use as an example of "one-ness."

<sup>221</sup> *Ten' āha so paccekasambuddho* (Nidd II [Ne] 248, 15).

<sup>222</sup> *Pacceka-buddhehi jinehi vuttā gāthā* (Ap 14, 1–2).

<sup>223</sup> See p. 48 above.

<sup>224</sup> *Sarvā khaggavisāṇagāthā vistareṇa kartavyā. paṃcānām pratyekabuddha-satānām eka-ekā gāthā* (Mvu I 359, 16–17).

<sup>225</sup> See the discussion of the prose passages in PANDE, SOB, pp. 52–53.

<sup>226</sup> *Iti param saṅgītikāraṇaṃ desanaṃ thomentā 'idam avoca Bhagavā' ti ādin āhamsu* (Pj II 603, 28–29 ad Sn p. 218).

<sup>227</sup> See ALSDORF, AS, pp. 15–16.

<sup>228</sup> See p. 58 above.



The first *sutta* of the Cūlavagga is the Ratanasutta, which explains that salvation is to be obtained only through the Buddha, the *Dhamma*, and the *Śaṅgha*. It too is in the Khuddakapāṭha, as is also the Mahāmaṅgalasutta (2.4).<sup>229</sup> A number of *suttas* are attacks upon the brahman caste. The Brāhmaṇadhammikasutta (2.7) tells of an ideal society, along Buddhist lines, without wealth and sacrifices, and wins brahmans over to Buddhism by explaining that this ideal state once existed in the past, and was peopled by brahmans who followed the practices which the Buddha advocates. A number of *suttas* are composed in the *Triṣṭubh* or mixed *Triṣṭubh/Jagatī* metre, which is found predominantly in the oldest stratum of Pāli verse.<sup>230</sup> Among these *suttas* is the Nāvāsutta (2.8), in which the good teacher is likened to a skilful man who is able to help people across the stream (of *saṃsāra*) in his boat.

A man should honour one from whom he can learn the doctrine, just as the *devatās* honour Indra. Being well-disposed and learned, he reveals the doctrine when he is honoured.

If anyone cultivates such a man carefully, making it his aim and listening attentively, entering upon the doctrine and what conforms with the doctrine, he becomes wise, understanding, intelligent, and subtle.

But consorting with a poor fool, who has not learned the truth and is envious, one goes to one's death, having failed to understand the doctrine clearly in this world, and not having overcome doubt.

How can a man who has gone down into a river, a swift-flowing stream in spate, and is carried along by the stream, help others to cross?

In the same way, how can one who has not learned the doctrine, and has not listened to the explanation given by the learned ones, who is ignorant of it himself and has not overcome doubt, help others to realize it?

Just as one embarking on a stout boat, provided with oar and rudder, could bring many others across there, being skilful, thoughtful, and knowing the means thereof,

In the same way, one who has knowledge and has developed himself, who is learned and unshakable, understanding it himself could make others realize it, if they have the ability to listen attentively.

Therefore one should cultivate a good man who is wise and learned. Understanding the meaning, and following (the path), knowing the doctrine, one attains happiness. (316–23)

The Mahāvagga includes a number of *suttas* which contain biographical data about the Buddha. The Pabbajjāsutta (3.1) praises the ascetic's life, and gives a description of the way in which King Bimbisāra of Magadha tried to tempt the Buddha with wealth. The Padhānasutta (3.2) tells of the exertion which was needed to gain enlightenment on the banks of the Nerañjarā, and leads into a dialogue with Māra. Both of these *suttas* occur in Sanskrit in the Mahāvastu,<sup>231</sup> as does the Sabhiyasutta (3.6) in which the wanderer Sabhiya visits the Buddha<sup>232</sup> and asks him to explain the meaning of a number of terms,

<sup>229</sup> See p. 58 above.

<sup>230</sup> See WARDER, IKL, II, pp. 28–29.

<sup>231</sup> Mvu II 198–99; II 238–40.

<sup>232</sup> Mvu III 394–401.

including *brāhmaṇa*, *samaṇa*, *nhātaka* and *bhikkhu*. The Buddha answers his questions, in some cases by making use of "folk" etymologies.<sup>233</sup> The Selasutta (3.7) relates the story of the brahman Sela who visited the Buddha to see if he possessed the 32 marks of a great man. In the way in which we have already seen in other texts,<sup>234</sup> the Buddha's supernormal power permits Sela to see the two marks which are normally hidden. This *sutta* also occurs in the Majjhima-nikāya<sup>235</sup> and, without the prose introduction, in the Theragāthā,<sup>236</sup> which suggests that in this example, at least, the prose is not an original part of the *sutta*. The prose introduction of the Kokāliyasutta (3.10), however, makes the meaning of some of the verses clear, and it is probable that some such commentarial passage was needed, and therefore probably existed, from the time of the composition of the *sutta*.<sup>237</sup>

The Nālakasutta (3.11) tells of the descent of the sage Asita from the Tusita heaven to see the newly-born Buddha. He takes the child in his arms and prophesies its future greatness. This portion of the *sutta* is entitled the *vaṭṭhugāthā*.<sup>238</sup> The remainder of the *sutta* consists of a description of the highest state, that of wisdom, given by the Buddha to Nālaka, Asita's nephew. As it stands, the *sutta* is a combination of two separate parts, and this view is supported by the fact that the episodes of Asita meeting the young Gotama and Nālaka questioning the Buddha are quite separate in the Mahāvastu.<sup>239</sup> The *vaṭṭhugāthās* in this *sutta* are composed partly in the *Triṣṭubh/Jagatī* metre and partly in an extended version of the *Triṣṭubh* with a redundant long syllable resolved into two short syllables.<sup>240</sup> This metre occurs in the Mahāvastu, but not in the Asita episode, which suggests that these biographical details are taken from a common store of history and legend concerning the Buddha, but are not closely related. The Dvayatānupassanāsutta (3.12) deals with a series of pairs (*dvayatās*), of which *dukkha* is always the second, and explains how the pairs are causally linked, the second element arising from the first. It has been suggested that the *paṭiccasamuppāda* system is only a recast of this "primitive fragment of *Abhidhamma*."<sup>241</sup>

The fourth *vagga* is the Aṭṭhakavagga. The fact that it is an early text is shown by its mention by name in other Pāli canonical texts, and in Sanskrit

<sup>233</sup> See K. R. NORMAN, "Four etymologies from the Sabhiya-sutta," in BALASOORIYA, BSWR, pp. 173–84.

<sup>234</sup> See pp. 34 and 47 above.

<sup>235</sup> M II 146, where the Eo merely refers to Sn.

<sup>236</sup> Th 818–41.

<sup>237</sup> It is interesting to note that there appears to be an interpolation in the verses, for the commentator notes that there was no old commentary upon Sn 677–78: *avasāne gāthādvayaṃ eva pana Mahā-aṭṭhakathāyaṃ vinicchitapāṭhe n' atthi* (Pj II 477, 13–14).

<sup>238</sup> Sn 679–98.

<sup>239</sup> Mvu II 31–43; III 382–89.

<sup>240</sup> See WARDER, PM, p. 213 n. 2.

<sup>241</sup> See L. DE LA VALLÉE POUSSIN, rev. of Mrs C. A. F. RHYDS DAVIDS, *Dukap*, I, in JRAS 1907, p. 453.



texts belonging to other traditions.<sup>242</sup> The name is Sanskritised as either *Arthavargiya* or *Aṣṭavarga*,<sup>243</sup> and although arguments can be produced for following either form, the existence of four *suttas* in the *vagga* with the term *aṭṭhakasutta* in their titles (3.2–5), each containing eight verses, suggests that the *vagga* was called after the *suttas*, as frequently happens,<sup>244</sup> and is correctly Sanskritised as *Aṣṭakavarga*. In view of the fact that many of the *suttas* in other *vaggas* are found elsewhere in the canon, it is perhaps remarkable that none of the *suttas* in the *Aṭṭhakavagga* is found elsewhere in Pāli. The reason is, perhaps, that the *vagga* was regarded as a closed body of *suttas* very early in the history of Buddhism, as is shown by the fact that it is already in the *Udāna*<sup>245</sup> described as having sixteen *suttas*, which led to its obtaining a status of being original and indivisible. It seems that it is the only *vagga* to have been translated into Chinese,<sup>246</sup> which presumably means that it was the only *vagga* found in the canon from which the Chinese translation was made. The only fragments which have been published from Turkestan corresponding to any portion of the *Suttanipāṭa* also belong to this *vagga*.<sup>247</sup> They presumably belong to the Sarvāstivādin canon.

There are other indications that the *vagga* is old. As already noted,<sup>248</sup> a commentary upon it, entitled the *Niddesa*, is regarded as canonical. The *Tuvaṭṭakāsutta* (4.14) is in the Old *Āryā* metre,<sup>249</sup> which is found only in a few very old texts. From the number of variant readings which are mentioned and commented upon in the *Niddesa*<sup>250</sup> it would seem that the *vagga* had already had a long history of tradition and development by the time of the *Niddesa*'s composition. The *suttas* have no prose introductions, although they are found in the Sanskrit and Chinese versions.<sup>251</sup> Those found there do not, however, agree with the *uppattis* which are given in the *Paramatthajotikā*, which indicates

<sup>242</sup> *Sabbān' eva aṭṭhakavaggikāni sarena abhāsi* (Vin I 196, 36); *soḷasa aṭṭhakavaggikāni sabbān' eva sarena abhāsi* (Ud 59, 23). It is referred to by name at S III 9, 19 = 12, 20, where Sn 844 is quoted from the *Māgandiyasutta*. See also KOEN Mizuno, "Dharmapadas of various Buddhist schools," in NARAIN, SPB, pp. 261–62.

<sup>243</sup> See PANDE, SOB, pp. 53–54.

<sup>244</sup> Just as the *Uragavagga* is called after its first *sutta*, the *Uragasutta*.

<sup>245</sup> Ud 59, 23.

<sup>246</sup> See p. 64 above.

<sup>247</sup> See A. F. RUDOLF HOERNLE, "The Sutta Nipāṭa in a Sanskrit version from Eastern Turkestan," in JRAS 1916, pp. 709–32 and JRAS 1917, p. 134. Fragments from the Sanskrit *Pārāyanasūtra* are, however, listed in E. WALDSCHMIDT, *Sanskrithandschriften aus den Turfanfunden*, IV, 1980, pp. 236–38. Verses from a Sanskrit equivalent of the *Suttanipāṭa* are quoted in the *Abhidharmakośa* and the *Bodhisattvabhūmi*, as noted by S. LÉVI, "Sur la récitation primitive des textes bouddhiques," in JA 1915, p. 414.

<sup>248</sup> See p. 63 above.

<sup>249</sup> See ALSODORF, AS, pp. 16–18.

<sup>250</sup> See p. 85 below.

<sup>251</sup> See HOERNLE, JRAS 1916, pp. 718–19 and P. V. BAPAT, *The Arthapada Sūtra*, Santiniketan 1951.

that such introductory stories are of later, independent, composition. Neither the *Niddesa* nor the *Paramatthajotikā* includes any comment upon verse 836, which suggests that it is a later interpolation.

Several *suttas* in the *vagga* warn the *bhikkhu* against sensual pleasures. The uselessness of philosophical systems is pointed out, and it is emphasised that purity is not gained by disputation. The ideal *muni* is described,<sup>252</sup> and the duties of a *bhikkhu* are enumerated. The *Tissametteyyasutta* (4.7) warns of the dangers of sexual intercourse, and the *Māgandiyasutta* (4.9) tells how the Buddha rejected *Māgandiyā*'s daughter when she was offered as his wife. The philosophical speculation which is attacked seems to be of a very general nature, and there is an absence of deep philosophical concepts, which tends to confirm the early date of the *vagga*.

The *Pārāyanavagga* begins with 56 *vathugāthās*<sup>253</sup> which tell of the brahman *Bāvari* sending his sixteen followers to the Buddha. There follow the sixteen questions they put to the Buddha, and the final section of the *vagga* tells how the sixteen resolved to stay with the Buddha. The *vathugāthās* are not commented upon by the *Niddesa*, which means that either they did not exist when the *Niddesa* was composed or, if they did exist, they were not yet regarded as canonical. The *Paramatthajotikā* ascribes them to Ānanda.<sup>254</sup> The concluding section, including a prose passage, is commented upon by the *Niddesa*. The *Paramatthajotikā* attributes it to the *saṅgītikāras*.<sup>255</sup>

The sixteen questions (*pucchās*) are of a more metaphysical nature than the *suttas* of the *Aṭṭhakavagga*, and are concerned with the crossing of the stream, and the escape from birth and death, which accounts for the title of the *vagga*.<sup>256</sup> It is not surprising, considering the nature of the *vagga*, that individual portions of it do not occur elsewhere in the canon. Its antiquity is shown by the fact that five verses are quoted from the *Pārāyanavagga* in the Pāli canon, each time being specifically attributed to a particular question (*pañha*) in the *vagga*.<sup>257</sup> Despite its age, there are indications that it has been made up from earlier sections. If it had been composed as a single entity, one might have expected the metre to be standard throughout, but this is not so. Some sections are in the *Triṣṭubh/Jagatī* metre, and some are written entirely in the *Anuṣṭubh* metre. Some are in a mixture of the two, and in the case of the *Puṇṇakamānavapucchā* (5.4) interpolations have crept in to such an extent that it is

<sup>252</sup> The *Munisutta* (Sn 207–21) is probably the *Munigāthā* recommended for study by Asoka. See WINTERNITZ, HIL, p. 607.

<sup>253</sup> Sn 976–1031.

<sup>254</sup> *Tam attham gahetvā āyasmā Ānando saṅgītikāle Pārāyanavaggassa nidānaṃ āropento imā gāthāyo abhāsi* (Pj II 580, 29–30).

<sup>255</sup> *Iti param saṅgītikāraṃ desanaṃ thomentā "idam avoca Bhagavā" ti ādi āhamsu* (Pj II 603, 28–29).

<sup>256</sup> *Maggo so pārāṇagamanāya, tasmā Pārāyanam* (Sn 1130).

<sup>257</sup> Sn 1038 (*Ajītapāṇha*) at S II 47, 11; 1042 (*Metteyyapāṇha*) at A III 399, 22 = 401, 24; 1048 (*Puṇṇakapāṇha*) at A I 133, 6 = II 45, 35; 1106–7 (*Udayapāṇha*) at A I 134, 9.

not easy to decide what the original readings might have been.<sup>256</sup> The "reciter's remarks" which have been inserted in each *pucchā* to make the identity of the speakers clear are commented upon by the Niddesa, which means that they must have been added at an early date.

Even in the *vaggas* and *suttas* which are not commented upon in the Niddesa there are metrical and linguistic features which are generally reckoned to be old.<sup>257</sup> Although it is not easy to date such phenomena, there seems little doubt that the Suttanipāṭa contains some of the oldest Pāli verse which we possess.

### 3.5.6. Vimānavatthu

The Vimānavatthu<sup>260</sup> consists of 83 stories in seven *vaggas*, describing the grandeur of the heavenly abodes (*vimānas*) enjoyed by those who have been reborn as *devas* as a reward for meritorious actions done during their births as human beings. The stories all follow the same pattern, in which a *deva* is asked by Moggallāna the reason for his enjoying the *vimāna* in which he dwells, and the *deva* thereupon relates his previous good conduct. The stories are doubtless intended for laymen, to induce them to live a good life by promising rebirth as a *deva* as a reward. The text is probably a late addition to the canon, and represents a period when the doctrine of *kamma* had come to be represented as a simple deed-and-reward mechanism.

The metre<sup>261</sup> and style of these stories, in general, merit little attention, and most scholars agree that as we have it the Vimānavatthu must be one of the latest texts to be admitted to the canon. There is, however, no reason to doubt that the style of story is old. The existence of the *Kaṇṭhakasya vyākaraṇa* in the Mahāvastu<sup>262</sup> which corresponds closely with the Kaṇṭhakavimānavatthu (7.7) indicates a date of origin prior to the split between the sects. There was also in the Sarvāstivādin Kṣudrakāgama a text known as the Vimānāvadāna, which may, on the strength of the fragment of that text which has been published,<sup>263</sup> be assumed to have been a collection of the same character as the Vimānavatthu, and also based upon the same concept of punishment and reward, which must therefore have been older than the two works.

<sup>256</sup> W. B. BOLLÉE, *The pādas of the Suttanipāṭa* (Studien zur Indologie und Iranistik, Monographie 7), Reinbeck 1980, p. 33, queries whether *khattiyā brāhmaṇā devatānaṃ yaññaṃ* at Sn 1043–45 is metrical.

<sup>257</sup> See N. A. JAYAWICKRAMA, *A critical analysis of the Pāli Sutta Nipāṭa illustrating its gradual growth*, Ph.D. dissertation London, published in parts in the University of Ceylon Review, January 1948–April 1951 (Vol. VI No. 1–Vol. IX No. 2).

<sup>258</sup> Ed. E. R. GOONERATNE, PTS London 1886; N. A. JAYAWICKRAMA, PTS London, 1977; tr. J. KENNEDY, SBB London, 1942; I. B. HORNER, SBB London, 1974.

<sup>259</sup> There are no verses in *garacchandās* metres, and those in *mātrācchandās* metres are probably late. See WARDER, PM, § 193.

<sup>260</sup> Mvu II 191–95.

<sup>261</sup> See H. BECHERT, "On a fragment of Vimānāvadāna, a canonical Buddhist Sanskrit work," in COUSINS, BSIBH, pp. 19–25.

Despite the fact that the stories in their present form are not likely to be very old, there are nevertheless signs that some of the stories may be older than the rest, for three of them contain verses in the *Āryā* metre.<sup>264</sup> The fact that this metre went out of use in Pāli literature at an early date means that anything composed in it must be presumed to be comparatively early. There are, moreover, indications that the Vimānavatthu has been subject to a long history of development, during which time it was enlarged by late additions and the re-arrangement of material from other texts, especially the Jātaka collection, from which a number of verses have been borrowed.<sup>265</sup>

### 3.5.7. Petavatthu

The Petavatthu<sup>266</sup> consists of 51 stories in four *vaggas*, which tell the stories of the departed ones (*petas*) who are suffering because of the bad actions they have committed during their previous existence. As in the case of the Vimānavatthu, the work seems to have been intended for laymen, to warn them against bad behaviour.

The pattern of most stories is similar. A *bhikkhu* sees someone suffering in some way and asks the reason, and the *peta* explains the wicked deed which has led to the present predicament. Some of the verses, however, seem to have been included in the collection simply because they include the word *peta*. The first *vatthu* (story) is the "Field-simile" (Khettūpamapetavatthu), which states that honouring *arahants* and *petas* is like planting seeds in a field. In due course one will receive the due reward (*phala*). The Samsāramocakapetavatthu (2.1) seems to be a mixture of a *peta* story with a *vimāna* story. A woman who was suffering because of her evil deeds then received the reward of a generous action by the *thera* Sāriputta which was transferred to her. She was thereby released from her suffering.

There can be little doubt that in its present form the Petavatthu is a late composition. The Nandakapetavatthu (4.3) mentions Piṅgala as the name of a king of Surāṭṭha. Dhammapāla informs us<sup>267</sup> that Piṅgala lived during the reign of Dhammāsoka 200 years after the Buddha's *nibbāna*. The date of composition would, therefore, be comparable to that of some of the *gāthās* in the Theragāthā and Therīgāthā collections, whose authors were also said to have lived at that time.

<sup>264</sup> See ALSDORF, AS, pp. 80–88.

<sup>265</sup> E.g. Guttillavimāna (33) includes the two verses of the Guttillajāṭaka (Ja II 252), which in turn refers to the Vv in its proso story and quotes from it. The Agūriyavimānavatthu (65), the Dutiyā-agūriyavimānavatthu (66), and the Serisakavimānavatthu (84) include verses which occur in the Vidhurapanditajāṭaka.

<sup>266</sup> Ed. J. MINAYEFF, PTS London, 1888; N. A. JAYAWICKRAMA, PTS London, 1977; tr. H. S. GEHMAN, SBB London, 1942.

<sup>267</sup> *Sathu parinibbānato vassasatadvayassa accayena Surāṭṭhavisaye Piṅgalo nāma rājā ahoṣi* (Pv-a 244, 15–16).



As in the case of the *Vimānavatthu*, there are parallels with the *Jātaka* collection,<sup>268</sup> and there must have been a period of development, during which time enlargement of some of the stories took place. The existence of a text named *Pretāvadāna* in the *Ksudrakāgama* of the *Sarvāstivādin* canon suggests that that text had a text comparable to the *Petavatthu*, and fragments of it have been discovered.<sup>269</sup>

As already noted, the *Tirokuḍḍapetavatthu* (1.5) has been borrowed by the *Khuddakapāṭha*.

### 3.5.8. Theragāthā

The *Theragāthā*<sup>270</sup> is a collection of 1279 verses, arranged in poems, ascribed to 264 *theras* who, for the most part, lived during the lifetime of the Buddha or shortly afterwards. The poems are arranged in *nipāṭas* according to the number of verses which they contain, e.g. all the poems of one verse are in the *eka-nipāṭa* and so on. For the *visati-nipāṭa* and thereafter the *nipāṭa* number gives only a rough guide to the number of verses which the poems contain.

Within the *nipāṭas* there is no obvious arrangement, but certain patterns are apparent,<sup>271</sup> as verses are linked together by subject, or refrain, or by "catch-word," e.g. Th 55–60 have the common theme of *kuṭi(kā)*. Sometimes verses are placed together because of some relationship between the authors, either of name or family, e.g. Th 11 is by Cūla-gavaccha and Th 12 by Mahā-gavaccha; Th 107 by Dhammasava and Th 108 by his father. Doubtless this is a reflection of the way in which the collection was made. Verses were recited by the *saṅgītikāras* as they remembered them, and the recitation of one verse prompted the memory of another.

Not all verses were in fact recited by the *thera* to whom they are attributed. Sometimes they were addressed to him, or are about him, but they became "his" by virtue of the fact that they were connected with his name in the tradition. Sometimes verses ascribed to one and the same *thera* occur in two places;<sup>272</sup> sometimes verses under his own name are in one place, and those ut-

<sup>268</sup> The first and last half-verses of the *Kūṭavinicchayikapetavatthu* (34 = III.9) are to be compared with verses 28 and 32 of the *Kimchanda-jātaka* (511 = Ja V 9–10). The *Kaṇhapetavatthu* (18 = II.6) closely resembles the *Ghaṭajātaka* (454 = Ja IV 84–87). The verses of the *Uragapetavatthu* (12 = I.12) are the same as those of the *Uragajātaka* (354 = Ja III 164–67). The verses of the *Gopapetavatthu* (1.8) closely resemble those of the *Sujātajātaka* (352 = Ja III 156–57).

<sup>269</sup> See H. BECHERT, op. cit. (in n. 263), pp. 19–20 and E. WALDSCHMIDT, *Sanskrithandschriften aus den Turfanfunden*, IV, 1980, pp. 227–33.

<sup>270</sup> Ed. H. OLDENBERG, PTS London, 1883; 2nd edition with appendices by K. R. NORMAN and L. ALSDORF, PTS London, 1966. Tr. C. A. F. RHYS DAVIDS, *Psalms of the Brethren*, PTS London, 1913; K. R. NORMAN, *Elders' Verses* I, PTS London, 1969; (German) K. E. NEUMANN, *Die Lieder der Mönche und Nonnen Gotamo Buddhos*, Berlin 1899.

<sup>271</sup> See NORMAN, EV I, pp. xxiii–xxv.

<sup>272</sup> E.g. there are verses ascribed to Kimbila at Th 116 and 155–56.

tered under a nickname are elsewhere.<sup>273</sup> Sometimes the verses are collections in themselves, e.g. Ānanda's verses are said by the commentator<sup>274</sup> to have been uttered on several occasions, and include verses spoken to him as well as verses recited by him. Some verses in the poems are clearly additions, in that they explain the circumstances in which the verses were uttered, or link various parts of the poems together. This fact was recognised by the commentator, who explains that these verses were added by the *saṅgītikāras*.<sup>275</sup> Certain defects in the collection are also probably to be attributed to the *saṅgītikāras*. It would seem that Sumaṅgala's verse (43) should not have been in the *eka-nipāṭa*, since it is really two *gaṇacchandās* verses,<sup>276</sup> but the compilers seem not to have recognised this. Vaddha's verses (335–39) seem at one time to have been a whole with his mother's verses in the *Therīgāthā*,<sup>277</sup> and the compilers would appear to have divided what was originally a single poem into two parts in an entirely arbitrary way.

There are also, as in the *Suttanipāṭa*, certain hyper-metrical phrases inserted into some narrative-style poems, e.g. *itī Selo brāhmaṇo*,<sup>278</sup> which are perhaps also to be ascribed to the *saṅgītikāras*, or perhaps to early reciters, as remarks intended to make the identity of the characters in the narrative clear to the audience. It is possible, and Dhammapāla asserts in his commentary,<sup>279</sup> that the *saṅgītikāras* concerned were those at the first council, immediately after the death of the Buddha. The same commentator, however, states that Sambhūta uttered his verses at the time of the second council,<sup>280</sup> while Tekicakāṇi's verses were recited at the third council.<sup>281</sup> If Vitasoka and Ekavihāriya were Asoka's brothers, as Dhammapāla states,<sup>282</sup> then their verses must also be dated to the time of the third council.

Some of the verses found in the *Theragāthā* occur elsewhere, attributed to the same *thera*, e.g. Vaṅgisa,<sup>283</sup> but in a slightly different form. This is perhaps due to the fact that the same *thera* might possibly utter his verses, in slightly

<sup>273</sup> E.g. Revata's verses are at Th 645–58; Th 42 is also ascribed to him under his nickname of Khadiravaniya.

<sup>274</sup> *Tattha tattha bhikkhūnaṃ ovāda-dāna-vasena attano paṭipatti-dīpanādi-vasena ca bhāsita-gāthā ekajjhaṃ katvā, anukkamena Khuddaka-nikāyaṃ saṅgāyana-kāle Theragāthāsu saṅgītiṃ āropento* (Th-a III 113, 7–10).

<sup>275</sup> *Ayam saṅgītikārehi vuttagāthā* (Th-a III 14, 6 ad Th 720).

<sup>276</sup> See NORMAN, EV I, p. 132.

<sup>277</sup> Th 204–12. See NORMAN, EV I, p. 183.

<sup>278</sup> Th 825.

<sup>279</sup> *Ayam paṭhama-mahāsaṅgīti-kāle āyasmato Ānandena tesam therānaṃ thoma-nattham bhāsita-gāthā ādi* (Th-a I 4, 18–19).

<sup>280</sup> *Vassa-sata-parinibbute Bhagavati, Vesālikenu Vajji-puttakeṇa dasa-vatthūni paggayha thilesu ... therō ... imā gāthā bhananto aññam vyākāsi* (Th-a II 123, 5–19).

<sup>281</sup> *Ettha ca Bindusāraraṇṇo kāle imassa therassa uppannatā tatiya-saṅgītiyaṃ imā gāthā saṅgīti ti vedītabbhaṃ* (Th-a II 165, 32–33).

<sup>282</sup> [Vitasoka] *Dhammasoka-raṇṇo kaniṭṭha-bhātā hutvā nibbatti* (Th-a II 45, 9); [Ekavihāriya] *Dhammasoka-raṇṇo kaniṭṭha-bhātā hutvā nibbatti* (Th-a II 227, 27–28). See NORMAN, EV I, p. xxvii.

<sup>283</sup> With Th 1209–79 cf. S I 185–96.

different ways, on a number of occasions. Different schools of *bhāṇakas* might remember different versions of the verses, and the independence of the schools prevented one version being "corrected" in the light of another version. A number of the verses occur elsewhere in Pāli literature as the verses of other *theras*. This shows nothing more than the absence in ancient times of a law of copyright, and anyone could repeat any verse, which then became "his" verse if it was remembered in connection with his name. Even in the Theragāthā there are identical verses ascribed to two different *theras*, while the number of *pādas*, or even lines, which are held in common merely emphasises that anyone who wanted to become a poet could do so simply by stringing together verses from the storehouse of floating *pādas*. There are also verses found elsewhere, particularly in the *Milindapañha*, which are not included in the Theragāthā collection.<sup>284</sup> This shows that the original collectors were quite capable of failing to remember all the verses which existed, and also that, once the collection had been closed, no new additions were made to it. There is, however, a certain amount of confusion about the number of verses which the collection should contain, for the *uddāna* at the end of the text states that it contains 1,360 verses,<sup>285</sup> while the total obtained by adding together the numbers in the *uddānas* to each *nīpāta* is 1,294. The total in the text as we have it is, as already stated, 1,279. Whether these *uddāna* figures are based upon a different recension from that which we possess, or whether they are simply incorrect, is not yet clear. In favour of the latter suggestion is the fact that the *uddāna* to the *catukka-nīpāta* states that there are 13 *theras'* verses in the *nīpāta*, while in fact there are only 12 names listed in the *uddāna*,<sup>286</sup> unless one counts the word *bhāvati* as a name, which agree completely with the 12 names given at the end of the 12 sets of verses in the *nīpāta*.

There is a wide range of metres included in the collection, the majority being *Anuṣṭubh* and *Triṣṭubh/Jagatī*, but there is also a number of *mātrācchandas* and *gayacchandas* metres,<sup>287</sup> some of the latter being the Old *Āryā* type which went out of use early on in the history of Buddhism. Not only does the metre support the commentarial tradition in telling us that the composition of the Theragāthā covered a long period of time, perhaps three centuries, but there are also references to beliefs and practices of the type which in other texts has seemed to point to lateness. There are references to miracles, to great congregations of gods, and to great rewards coming from worshipping the Buddha with a single lotus flower,<sup>288</sup> which are all reminiscent of the later Mahāyāna.

Many of the verses in the Theragāthā are descriptions of the *thera's* attempts to attain, and his attainment of, the peace of *nibbāna*. Some are merely sermons

<sup>284</sup> See C. A. F. RHYS DAVIDS, *Psalms of the Brethren*, PTS London 1913, pp. 423–24.

<sup>285</sup> *Sahasam honti tū gāthā tīni saṃphissatāni ca* (Th p. 115).

<sup>286</sup> Th p. 36.

<sup>287</sup> For a survey of the metres in Th see NORMAN, EV I, pp. xxxiii–xxxiv.

<sup>288</sup> See Th 96.

of a general nature, while in others the description of the attainment of peace is coupled with a statement of personal conditions and surroundings, frequently giving a poetic account of the scenery in the midst of which the *thera* is meditating. Quite often the poem consists of a secular portion, in which such descriptions of nature are given, followed by a religious section in which we learn of the *thera's* attainment of his goal. The first part of the verse is similar to the style found in the later *Māhārāṣṭrī* Prakrit collection attributed to Hāla,<sup>289</sup> although Hāla's material undoubtedly goes back to an earlier period. It seems likely that the genre was known to the *theras* who composed the verses found in the Theragāthā, but whereas the examples found in the *Sattasai* have a description of some natural phenomenon, e.g. the beginning of the rains, which is then linked to a secular occurrence, e.g. the absence of the traveller, the Theragāthā verses begin with the natural phenomenon which is then linked with a religious experience.<sup>290</sup>

Spread with garlands of *kareri* flowers, the regions of the earth are delightful.  
Resounding with elephants those lovely rocks delight me.

Those rocks delight me, the colour of blue clouds, beautiful, cool with water,  
having pure streams, covered with *Indagopaka* insects.

Like the ridge of a blue cloud, like an excellent gabled house, resounding with  
elephants those lovely rocks delight me.

The lovely surfaces are rained upon; the mountains are resorted to by seers.  
Made to resound by peacocks, those rocks delight me.

It is enough for me, desiring to meditate, resolute, mindful. It is enough for me,  
a resolute *bhikkhu* desirous of the goal. (1062–66)

Although it is probably true to say that the authors of these verses were not trying to be poets, but were merely aiming to give an account of their religious experiences in the way in which they felt was most appropriate for such a statement, i.e. in verse, nevertheless it is noteworthy that, together with some of the verse of the Dhammapada and the Suttanipāta, the Theragāthā and its companion collection the Therīgāthā form some of the more poetical, as opposed to more Buddhist, parts of the Pāli canon.

Fragments of the Sarvāstivādin *Sthaviragāthā* have been discovered in Turkestan and published.<sup>291</sup>

### 3.5.9. Therīgāthā

The Therīgāthā<sup>292</sup> consists of 522 verses forming 73 poems, arranged in *nīpātas*. As with the Theragāthā, the final *uddāna* verse causes problems, since

<sup>289</sup> A. WEBER (ed.), *Über das Saptasātakam des Hāla*, Leipzig 1831.

<sup>290</sup> See S. LIENHARD, "Sur la structure poétique des Theratherīgāthā," in JA 263, 1975, pp. 375–96.

<sup>291</sup> H. BECHERT, *Bruchstücke buddhistischer Verssammlungen: 1. Die Anavataptagāthā und die Sthaviragāthā*, Berlin 1961 (STT VI).

<sup>292</sup> Ed. R. PISCHEL, PTS London, 1883; 2nd edition with appendices by K. R. NORMAN and L. ALSDORF, PTS London, 1966. Tr. C. A. F. RHYS DAVIDS, *Psalms*



it refers to 494 verses<sup>292</sup> uttered by 101 *therīs*. Since one poem is said to be by a group of 30 *therīs*, it would be possible to obtain a total of about 100 *therīs*, but this ignores the fact that another poem is said to have been uttered by 500 *therīs*.

The *nīpāta* system is the same as in the Theragāthā, and the method of collection by association of ideas seems to have been very similar.<sup>294</sup> There are similar problems concerning the omission of verses and the attribution of some to other *therīs* in other texts. There is also the difficulty, already mentioned, of the verses found in the Bhikkhunīsaṃyutta of the Saṃyutta-nikāya (5), of which some do not appear in the Therīgāthā, and others are ascribed to different *therīs*. We may assume that there was uncertainty in early times about the authors and the circumstances in which they uttered their verses,<sup>295</sup> with the result that different *bhāṇaka*-schools followed different traditions about this.

Although some of the verses are of such a nature that it is impossible to tell the sex of the authors, many are indubitably by women. We read of mothers who are led to the *Saṅgha* by the death of a child or husband, and of courtesans who give up their way of life and become *bhikkhunis*. One of the most beautiful poems in the whole collection is the lament, in *Rathoddhātā* metre, by the former courtesan Ambapālī for her lost beauty.<sup>296</sup>

My hair was black, like the colour of bees, with curly ends; because of old age it is like bark-fibres of hemp; not otherwise is the utterance of the speaker of truth.

Covered with flowers my head was fragrant like a perfumed box; now because of old age it smells like a dog's fur; not otherwise ...

Formerly my breasts looked beautiful, swelling, round, close together, lofty; now they hang down like empty water-bags; not otherwise ...

Formerly my body looked beautiful, like a well-polished sheet of gold; now it is covered with fine wrinkles; not otherwise ...

Formerly my thighs looked beautiful, like an elephant's trunk; because of old age they are like stalks of bamboo; not otherwise ...

Formerly my calves looked beautiful, possessing delicate anklets, decorated with gold; because of old age they are like sticks of sesame; not otherwise ...

Formerly my feet looked beautiful, like (shoes) full of cotton-wool; because of old age they are cracked, and wrinkled; not otherwise ...

Such was this body; now it is decrepit, the abode of many pains; an old house, with its plaster fallen off; not otherwise is the utterance of the speaker of truth. (252–53, 265–70)

The last two poems of the collection are long compositions in the *Āryā* metre.<sup>297</sup> Although they contain features which might be regarded as late, the

of the Sisters, PTS London, 1909; K. R. NORMAN, *Elders' Verses II*, PTS London, 1971; (German) K. E. NEUMANN, *Die Lieder der Mönche und Nonnen Gotama Buddhas*, Berlin 1899.

<sup>292</sup> *Gāthā satāni cattāri asīti puna cūddasa* (Thi, p. 174).

<sup>293</sup> See NORMAN, EV II, p. xxiv.

<sup>294</sup> See p. 51 above and NORMAN, EV II, pp. xxvi–xxvii.

<sup>295</sup> Thi 252–70.

<sup>297</sup> See ALSDORF, Thi (Appendix II), pp. 233–50.

fact that they are both in this metre, which went out of use quite early on in the history of Pāli literature, shows that they cannot be very late.

In the first of these two poems,<sup>298</sup> Isidāsī tells of unhappy marriages as a result of which she leaves home and becomes a wanderer. She gains the three knowledges and is able to relate the details of her last seven births and to explain how her unhappiness is the result of previous misconduct. Such explanations are a feature found more frequently in the *Petavattu* and the *Apādāna*. A similar feature appears in the second of this pair,<sup>299</sup> in which Sumedhā renounces the world and goes forth on her wedding day. It is noteworthy that the similes she employs to illustrate the endlessness of *samsāra* are taken from a canonical text.<sup>300</sup> She too describes her former births, including one at the time of the former Buddha Koṇāgamana, which implies the growth of the cult of former Buddhas by the time when this poem was composed. This does not, however, necessarily imply a late date of composition. As we have already seen, the six Buddhas who lived before Gotama are mentioned in both the *Vinaya-piṭaka* and the *Dīgha-nikāya*,<sup>301</sup> and since Asoka records that he enlarged an earlier *stūpa* dedicated to that same Buddha,<sup>302</sup> there is nothing in the poem which seems to put it outside the limit of about three centuries after the time of the Buddha which has already been established for the Theragāthā.

As in the case of the Theragāthā, the quality of the poetry found in these poems varies greatly. Some are complete literary compositions, while others are merely compilations of the same types as Ānanda's verses in the Theragāthā. Uppalavaṇṇā's poem is made up of four separate episodes, as the commentary tells us,<sup>303</sup> and no attempt has been made to make an organic whole of verses uttered at different times.

### 3.5.10. The Jātakas

The Jātaka<sup>304</sup> stories are a set of Indian fables which, as adapted by the Buddhists, purport to tell the previous births of Gotama Buddha before the final birth in which he gained enlightenment, i.e. while he was still a Bodhisatta (a being destined for enlightenment). In their Pāli version, the Jātaka stories consist of verses set in a prose setting. With a very few exceptions, only the verses are regarded as canonical. The stories are arranged in *nīpātas*, according to the number of verses they contain, so that in the *eka-nīpāta* the stories contain

<sup>298</sup> Thi 400–47.

<sup>299</sup> Thi 448–522.

<sup>300</sup> With Thi 496–99 cf. S II 178–93.

<sup>301</sup> See pp. 36 and 43 above.

<sup>302</sup> See E. HULTZSCH, *Inscriptions of Asoka*, Oxford 1925, p. 165.

<sup>303</sup> See C. A. F. RHYS DAVIDS, *Psalm of the Sisters*, PTS London, 1909, p. 115 n.

<sup>304</sup> Ed. V. FAUSBELL, 6 vols. London, 1877–96. Tr. T. W. RHYS DAVIDS, *Buddhist Birth Stories*, London 1880; E. B. COWELL et al., *The Jātaka*, 6 vols., London, 1895–1907; (German) J. DUTTOIT, Leipzig, 1908–21.

only one verse. In higher-numbered *nipālas* the number of verses does not always agree with the *nipāta* number, while the last *nipāta* contains ten very long verse stories, and is known merely as the *mahā-nipāta*.

The general form in which the Jātaka stories have come down to us is that of an incident in the present (*paccuppannavatthu*) which gives rise to the Buddha telling of an event from one of his previous births (*atitavattthu*); the *gāthās* are usually embedded in the *atitavattthu*, but are sometimes found in the *paccuppannavatthu*; then follows the word commentary to the verses (*veyyā-karaṇa*), and finally the *samodhāna*, where the characters in the *atitavattthu* are identified with those in the circle of the Buddha's acquaintances (*Buddha-parisā*). The *samodhāna* therefore properly belongs to the *paccuppannavatthu*.<sup>305</sup> The story of the present is often all but omitted, with the words "This story was told about ...", or with a reference to another story to be told later.

It has been shown that the word commentary, the prose of the framework, and the prose of the stories are all the work of the same author,<sup>306</sup> and the question of his identity will be discussed later. Jātaka, however, is one of the classes in the nine-fold classification<sup>307</sup> of the early Buddhist canon, and the presence elsewhere in the canon of a number of stories of the Jātaka type, some of them almost identical with stories found in the Jātaka collection,<sup>308</sup> shows that the stories in which the verses are placed are sometimes of great antiquity. We may therefore assume that, for the most part, the commentator upon the Jātaka collection was making use of older material, some of it already associated with particular verses, when he composed his stories. This view is supported by the fact that Jātaka stories, some of them almost word for word identical with the Pāli version, are also found in Buddhist Sanskrit texts.<sup>309</sup> The background story into which the Jātaka verses are inserted sometimes agrees with, and sometimes differs from, the corresponding Pāli story, showing that the association of verse and prose sometimes, but not always, pre-dates the schism between the sects. Although the prose stories in their present form are so much later than the verses, it is nevertheless convenient to deal with both verse and prose together.

To the Jātaka collection proper is prefixed the Nidānakathā, which gives what is in effect a biography of the Buddha. It is in three sections: 1. The story of the beginning in the remote past (*dūrenidāna*),<sup>310</sup> which tells the history of the Buddha-to-be from his existence as Sumedha during the time of the Buddha Dipaṅkara down to his re-birth in the heaven of the Tusita

gods; 2. The story of the beginning in the not very remote past (*avidūrenidāna*),<sup>311</sup> beginning with the descent from the Tusita heaven, and ending with the attainment of enlightenment (*bodhi*); 3. The story of the beginning in the present (*santikenidāna*),<sup>312</sup> relating the story from the enlightenment down to the donation of the Jetavanārāma by the merchant Anāthapiṇḍika.

The first section is directly connected with the Buddhavaṃsa and Cariyāpiṭaka, from which many verses are quoted, and it is in effect a commentary upon extracts from these two texts. The story of Sumedha is taken directly from the Buddhavaṃsa,<sup>313</sup> and the striving for perfection in each birth is described in the Cariyāpiṭaka, which is quoted in what seems to be a different recension from the text we possess.<sup>314</sup> The miracles which occur at the birth of the Buddha are those which are described as occurring at the birth of the Buddha Vipassin in the Mahāpadānasutta of the Dīgha-nikāya (14) and of all Buddhas in the Acchariyabbhutadhammasutta of the Majjhima-nikāya (123). The agreement between the Nidānakathā and Buddhist Sanskrit sources<sup>315</sup> about these and other details suggests that both the Pāli and the Sanskrit traditions are based upon a common body of biographical material, both legendary and historical, which was in existence in North India before the time of the schisms.

An analysis of the more than 500<sup>316</sup> Jātaka stories of the Pāli collection as we have it shows that it contains a wide variety of different types of verse composition. Many of them seem to be un-Buddhist in origin, and whatever Buddhist qualities they possess are found in the (later) prose story, and arise from the fact that the hero is the Bodhisatta. A number of verses, particularly those in the early *nipālas*, are intended to teach worldly wisdom (*nīti*) and refer to animal fables and fairy stories of the type found in the Sanskrit Pañcatantra and Hitopadeśa. Some of these stories are also found in Aesop's fables and other European literature and the problem of their inter-dependence has been much discussed.<sup>317</sup> Representations of some of them are found in the

<sup>311</sup> Ja I 47–77.

<sup>312</sup> Ja I 77–94.

<sup>313</sup> Cf. Bv II 1–188.

<sup>314</sup> See WINTERITZ, HIL, p. 164.

<sup>315</sup> See Lal 83–87.

<sup>316</sup> FAUSBØLL's edition contains 547 Jātakas, but some of those in the Mahānipāta contain more than one narrative, and the total number of Jātaka stories is difficult to establish. The reference to 500 Jātakas in the Culla-niddesa is probably nothing more than a "round number," and should not be taken as evidence that at the time of the composition of that text the Jātaka collection was smaller than that we possess now: *Bhagavā pañca jātakasatāni bhāsanto attano ca paresaṃ ca atitāṃ ādisati* (Nidd II [Ne] 173, 23). There is, however, evidence that a collection of 550 Jātakas was known in Burma, and the names and order of the Jātakas found in some traditions differ from FAUSBØLL's edition. See G. H. LUCE, "550 jātaka in old Burma," in *Artibus Asiae*, 19, 3–4, pp. 291–307, and G. MARTINI, "Les titres des jātaka dans les manuscrits pāli de la Bibliothèque nationale de Paris," in *BEFEO* 51 (1963), pp. 79–93.

<sup>317</sup> See WINTERITZ, HIL, p. 126.

<sup>305</sup> See BOLLÉE, KJ, pp. v–vi.

<sup>306</sup> See H. LÜDEKE, *Bhārhat und die buddhistische Literatur*, Leipzig 1941, p. 144.

<sup>307</sup> See p. 15 above.

<sup>308</sup> See L. ALSDORF, "The impious brahman and the pious caṇḍāla," in *COUSINS*, BSIBH, pp. 9–13.

<sup>309</sup> See JONES, *Mvu tr.*, II, pp. x–xi.

<sup>310</sup> Ja I 2–47.



reliefs on the Bharhut *stūpa*,<sup>318</sup> showing that they had already become popular by the second century B.C.

Other sets of Jātaka verses are ballads where the verses provide a dialogue and the prose identifies the speakers. Some are narrative stories, where the action may either be supplied in the verses or supplemented by prose insertions. A number of the longer Jātakas in the Mahānipāta are divided up into shorter sections (*khaṇḍas*), which suggests that they were at one time independent texts. If this was not so, then it is difficult to understand why the *khaṇḍas* of the Bhūridattajātaka (543) or the Vidhurapaṇḍitajātaka (545) are not regarded as separate Jātakas.

Certain observations may be made about the relationship between the verses and the prose stories. The fact that the verse in the Bīlārajātaka (128) includes a mention of a cat (*bīlāra*), whereas the prose story is about a jackal (*sigāla*), indicates that the prose is a later, and somewhat careless, addition. In the Vessantarajātaka (547) the use of the word *paccaya* in an unusual sense of "proper" in connection with an elephant has led to the word being misinterpreted as the elephant's name by the prose writer.<sup>319</sup> On the other hand, some of the verses are very difficult to understand without a prose introduction.

One Jātaka presents a problem which from the commentator's remark about it can be assumed to be very old. The Mahāsupinajātaka (77) has only one verse, as is to be expected as it is in the *eka-nipāta*. It seems to consist of seven *pādas*. The *pratīka* at the beginning of the Jātaka,<sup>320</sup> however, begins with the fourth *pāda*. Since the verse narrates the sixteen dreams dreamed by the King of Kosala, it is strange that the *pratīka* seems to begin with the eleventh. The seven *pādas* are given in full in the course of the prose of the *paccuppannavatthu*. They are then repeated, in an abbreviated form, in the *atīlavatthu*, but it is clear that, in a very unusual way, they are canonical in the story of the present because the commentary (upon the one word *hi*)<sup>321</sup> is there. With them, when repeated, is an eighth *pāda*,<sup>322</sup> which is commented upon in the *atīlavatthu*. The commentator adds an explanatory note after the *samodhāna*, stating that the *saṅgītikāraḥ* after the death of the Buddha put the first three *pādas* into the commentary,<sup>323</sup> presumably because they did not accept them as canonical, and made a *gāthā* of the remaining five *pādas*.<sup>324</sup>

<sup>318</sup> See H. LÜDERS, Bhārhut und die buddhistische Literatur, Leipzig 1941.

<sup>319</sup> See M. CONE and R. F. GOMBRICH, The perfect generosity of Prince Vessantara, Oxford 1977, pp. xxxiii–xxxiv.

<sup>320</sup> Ja I 334, 27.

<sup>321</sup> *Hī-kāro pan' ettha nipāta-mattam eva* (Ja I 342, 17). This seems to be a comment upon the strange form *bhayāhi* (336, 17), but is omitted by Be and Ne.

<sup>322</sup> *Vipariyāso vattatī, na idha-m-atthī* (344, 23–24). This has been overlooked by FAUSBØLL, who includes it in the prose.

<sup>323</sup> *Parinibbute pana Bhagavati saṅgītikāraḥ usabhārukkhādini tīni padāni attha-katham āropetvā lābini ti ādini pañca padāni ekaṃ gātham katvā eka-nipāta-pālini āropesum* (345, 14–16).

<sup>324</sup> See L. ALSDORF, "The ākhyāna theory reconsidered," in JOI(B) 13, p. 200 n. 2.

It has been suggested that the solution to this problem lies in the fact that the first three *pādas* are in fact prose, and could therefore not be included in a *pratīka* in a verse text. Although there is actually canonical prose in the Jātakas, it is possible that what seems to be a prose *pratīka* in the Kuṇālaajātaka was thought to be verse.<sup>325</sup>

Although many Jātakas can be regarded as being non-Buddhist, or even pre-Buddhist, there are some which are certainly Buddhist. The verses of the Kālīṅgabodhi-jātaka (479) tell of King Kālīṅga visiting the *bodhi* tree and honouring with 60,000 cartloads of flowers the place where the Buddha had gained enlightenment. The whole poem is purely and devoutly Buddhist. The fact that it is composed in the *Āryā* metre,<sup>326</sup> which went out of general use in Pāli literature at an early date, indicates that it is not particularly young. This shows clearly that the Buddhists added material of their own to the Jātaka collection.

The Kuṇālaajātaka (536)<sup>327</sup> is unique in the Jātaka collection in that it alone contains prose which is regarded as canonical, as is shown by the fact that there is a word commentary upon it.<sup>328</sup> This canonical prose is of two types: there is both narrative prose and also a few descriptive passages characterised by strings of compounds, some of them extremely long.<sup>329</sup> These latter passages are unique in that they are the only places in Pāli literature where we find the type of rhythmical prose called *vedha*.<sup>330</sup> This in itself would reveal the antiquity of the prose, even if we did not know it to be canonical, because this type of prose is elsewhere found only in the very oldest Jain and Buddhist Sanskrit texts.<sup>331</sup> It was doubtless the presence of this prose, which was at the same time verse, which confused the Jātaka-*bhāṇakas* who were responsible for the Jātaka tradition, so that they accepted the words *evam akkhāyati*, which are the first words of the canonical prose, as a *pratīka*, although as has just been suggested they rejected the prose "pādas" of the Mahāsupinajātaka.

The Kuṇālaajātaka is a collection of stories and verses which deal with the wickedness of women. Many of the verses found in it are not Buddhist, but are common to the whole range of misogynous literature which is widespread in India. Such sentiments are found elsewhere in the Jātaka collection. Some of the verses and *pādas* of the Kuṇālaajātaka are also found in the seventh *vagga*

<sup>325</sup> *Evam akkhāyati ti* (Ja V 412, 14).

<sup>326</sup> See ALSDORF, AS, pp. 25–28.

<sup>327</sup> W. B. BOLLÉE (ed. and tr.), Kuṇālaajātaka, SBB London, 1970.

<sup>328</sup> There are also prose passages at Ja II 147, 2–3\*\* and 147, 10–11\*\*, as BOLLÉE (KJ, p. vi n.) points out, which are commented upon. These two short passages are, however, taken from elsewhere in the canon (Vin II 110, 16–18 = A II 73, 6–8), and were therefore canonical prose before they were included in the Jātaka.

<sup>329</sup> As pointed out by ALSDORF, JOI(B) 13, p. 200 n. 2.

<sup>330</sup> See BOLLÉE, KJ, pp. 166–72.

<sup>331</sup> See A. METTE, "Vedhas in Lalitavistara und Divyāvadāna," in WZKS 17, 1973, pp. 21–42.

of the *ekaniṣṭhā*, which is entitled *Itthivagga*<sup>322</sup> and contains a set of Jātaka stories which show how women are so *iniquitous* that they will stop at nothing to deceive their husbands.

Several Jātaka stories can be shown to be old because they have counterparts in Jain canonical texts, and sometimes the similarity between them is so close that one version can be used to restore the text of the other. The *Mātanga-jātaka* (497) and the *Cittasambhūtajātaka* (498) both belong to the class of what has been called "ascetic poetry"<sup>323</sup>, in which the piety and self-control of the wandering ascetic is contrasted with the formal ceremonialism of the brahmins. These two Jātakas have direct parallels in Jain literature.<sup>324</sup> The *Kumbhakārajātaka* (408) also has parallels in Jain texts. The verses contain a memorial *gāthā* which gives the names and home cities of the four *paccekabuddhas* and four other *gāthās*<sup>325</sup> which describe the signs which led them to enlightenment. The verses do not state that they were *paccekabuddhas*, although the prose story makes this clear. The situation in Jain literature is the same. One verse gives the four kings and their cities; another gives the four signs.<sup>326</sup> The verses do not state that they were *paccekabuddhas*, but the (later) prose stories do. As in the case of the *Mātanga-jātaka* and the *Cittasambhūtajātaka*, although the resemblances are great, there are sufficient differences to make it clear that, while it is obvious that the Buddhist and Jain texts must go back ultimately to a common ancestor, they had been so worked over by the redactors of the two traditions that it is not possible to restore in full whatever original lay beneath all the changes they had introduced.

In some cases it is possible to distinguish such insertions from the older material by means of metrical analysis. In the oldest stratum of Buddhist literature the *Triṣṭubh/Jagatī* metre was used for narrative verse, while at a later date the *Anuṣṭubh (Śloka)* metre replaced it for this purpose. A Jātaka story which in its present form consists of a mixture of *Triṣṭubh* and *Anuṣṭubh* verses can sometimes be restored to something nearer its original form by removing the verses in the latter metre. The *Sivijātaka* (499) tells the story of King Sivi who gave his eyes away as an act of extreme generosity. It consists of a mixture of *Triṣṭubh/Jagatī* and *Anuṣṭubh* verses. It has been shown that the removal of the latter leaves a poem which is complete in itself.<sup>327</sup>

The *Bhūridattajātaka* (543) is an anti-brahmanical Jātaka. In a long and complicated story it tells how the Bodhisatta was reborn as a *nāga* prince. He was captured by a treacherous brahman, who kept him in a basket and made

him dance before audiences. The climax of the story is a long denunciation of the brahman caste and a rejection of their claim to be superior because of their knowledge of the *Vedas* and sacrificial ritual. It is written in a mixture of *Triṣṭubh* and *Anuṣṭubh* verses, and by removing the latter it is possible to restore an earlier version of the *Nāga*-story in *Triṣṭubh* metre.<sup>328</sup>

In the *Dasabrāhmaṇajātaka* (495) a minister named *Vidhūra* tells King *Yudhiṭṭhila* of the ten classes of those who are brahman by name alone, having by their evil conduct forfeited their right to be so called. He then describes the only true brahmins and when instructed to show these genuine brahmins invites 500 *paccekabuddhas* to a meal. The *Vidhuraṇḍitajātaka* (545) tells of the same minister being won in a game of dice by a *yakkha* and taken to the *nāga* world. There he delighted the *nāga* king by the answers he gave to questions put to him, and was released. An analysis of the metre shows that over half of the Jātaka is in the *Anuṣṭubh* metre. The removal of the verses in this metre leaves a narrative poem (*ākhyāna*) consisting of about 150 verses in the *Triṣṭubh* and *Vaitāliya* metres.<sup>329</sup>

The *Vessantarajātaka* (547)<sup>330</sup> is the last, longest, and most important of the whole Pāli Jātaka collection. It tells of the Buddha's earlier birth as Prince *Vessantara*, a man so generous that he gave away everything he possessed, including his two children and, finally, his wife. Because of the emphasis upon generosity, one of the greatest Buddhist virtues, this Jātaka story seems obviously Buddhist in character, and it has been regarded as a purely Buddhist legend, where the hero is already the Bodhisatta of the later dogma.<sup>331</sup> It has, however, been shown that when a small number of verses borrowed from the later *Ekaviṃśatī* are removed from the text, the remaining verses are entirely un-Buddhist—in the sense that generosity might be expected to be a virtue in many Indian religions—and its hero is made a Bodhisatta only in the commentarial prose story.<sup>332</sup>

The text consists of over 700 *Śloka (Anuṣṭubh)* verses. There are clear signs that the author of the later prose story did not understand some of the details in the verses, and has consequently invented features to fit in with what he thought the verses meant. The way in which *Vessantara*'s elephant has acquired the name *Paccaya* has already been explained.<sup>333</sup> Other misunderstandings have arisen from the fact that verses have been somehow transposed during the

<sup>322</sup> See L. ALSDORF, "Das Bhūridatta-Jātaka. Ein antibrahmanischer Nāga-Roman," in WZKS 21, 1977, pp. 25–55.

<sup>323</sup> See L. ALSDORF, "Das Jātaka vom weisen Vidhura," in WZKS 15, 1971, pp. 23–56.

<sup>324</sup> M. CONE and R. F. GOMBRICH (tr.), *The perfect generosity of Prince Vessantara*, Oxford 1977.

<sup>325</sup> WINTERNITZ, HIL, p. 152.

<sup>326</sup> See L. ALSDORF, "Bemerkungen zum Vessantara-Jātaka," in WZKS 1, 1957, pp. 1–70.

<sup>327</sup> See p. 80 above.

<sup>322</sup> Ja I 285–315.

<sup>323</sup> See WINTERNITZ, HIL, p. 145 n. 2.

<sup>324</sup> See Utt XII and XIII.

<sup>325</sup> Ja III 381, 16–18 and 380, 6–21.

<sup>326</sup> See H. JACOBI, *Ausgewählte Erzählungen in Māhārāṣṭrī*, Leipzig 1886, p. 34.

<sup>327</sup> See L. ALSDORF, "Das Sivijātaka (499): Ein Beitrag zu seiner Textgeschichte," in HEESTERMAN, *Pratid.*, pp. 478–83.



transmission of the story, and the author of the prose version has invented details to fit in with, and explain, the confusion which has resulted.<sup>344</sup>

Despite the large number of stories found in the Jātaka collection, it is clear that it by no means includes all the Jātaka stories which existed in North India in the early days of Buddhism. There are stories found elsewhere in the Pāli canon which are technically Jātaka stories because they purport to tell of the Buddha in an earlier birth, and conclude with an identification of the characters, and are nevertheless not found in the collection.<sup>345</sup> There are also several Jātaka stories in the Mahāvastu which do not have a parallel in the Pāli collection.<sup>346</sup> The Dipavaṃsa tells of the Mahāsāṅghikas making changes in the canon after their separation from the Theravādins, and states that they rejected a portion of the Jātaka.<sup>347</sup> This presumably means that the contents of the Jātaka collections of the two sects differed, doubtless because they both added to their collections after the schism.

### 3.5.11. Niddesa

The Niddesa consists of two parts. The Mahā-niddesa<sup>348</sup> is a commentary upon the Aṭṭhakavagga of the Suttanipāṭa, while the Culla-niddesa<sup>349</sup> is a commentary upon the Pārāyanavagga and the Khaggavisāṇasutta of the Uragavagga of the same text. The fact that these two commentaries are considered to be canonical shows that they must be very old, for the Theravādin tradition states that the last addition to the canon was the Kathāvatthū, which was recited at the time of the third council during the reign of Asoka.<sup>350</sup> The Niddesa must therefore be earlier than this. On the other hand, the Dipavaṃsa states that the Niddesa was one of the texts rejected by the Mahāsāṅghikas after the second council.<sup>351</sup> This is perhaps not to be taken literally, but means that the Niddesa was not included in the Mahāsāṅghika canon, either because it did not exist at the time of the schism, or because it had not yet attained canonical status.

According to the Saddhammapajotikā,<sup>352</sup> the Niddesa was composed by the Buddha's disciple Sāriputta, but it has been pointed out<sup>353</sup> that if this was so,

<sup>344</sup> See CONE and GOMBRICH, op. cit. (in n. 340), pp. xxxi–xxxii.

<sup>345</sup> At the end of the Ghaṭikārasutta of the Majjhima-nikāya (81), the Buddha identifies himself with the young brahman Jotipāla (*ahaṃ tena samayena Jotipālo māṇavo ahoṣim* [M II 54, 18–19]) in the story of past time (*bhūtapubbam*) he had told. This makes the story technically a Jātaka.

<sup>346</sup> E.g. the Puṇyavanta-jātaka (Mvu III 33–41).

<sup>347</sup> Dip V 37.

<sup>348</sup> L. DE LA VALLÉE POUSSIN and E. J. THOMAS (ed.), Mahāniddesa, PTS London, Part I 1916, Part II 1917.

<sup>349</sup> W. STEDE (ed.), Cullaniddesa, PTS London, 1918.

<sup>350</sup> Dip VII 41; Mhv V 278.

<sup>351</sup> Dip V 37.

<sup>352</sup> Nidd-a I 1, 14–15.

<sup>353</sup> By A. P. BUDDHADATTA, Nidd-a I, p. vii.

then it is surprising that he should give three different explanations of his own words as recorded in the Suttanipāṭa.<sup>354</sup> Although it is possible that some of the explanations given in the Niddesa go back to the time of the Buddha, and were perhaps compiled by Sāriputta, the whole work in its present form must have been produced at some later time. The attribution was probably made because the Niddesa is of the same type as the exegetical explanations attributed to Mahākaccāna and Sāriputta in various canonical texts.<sup>355</sup>

As has already been noted,<sup>356</sup> the three texts on which the Niddesa comments can justly claim to be among the very oldest of Buddhist texts. The Aṭṭhakavagga and Pārāyanavagga are quoted from by name in other canonical texts, while the Khaggavisāṇasutta is not only taken over into another canonical Pāli text,<sup>357</sup> but is also found in the Mahāvastu.<sup>358</sup> It is therefore perhaps not surprising that commentaries should have been compiled upon these texts sufficiently early for the commentaries themselves to be accorded canonical status. Nevertheless there must have been a not inconsiderable period of time between the compilation of the texts and the commentaries upon them, for variant readings had already arisen which necessitated mention with alternative explanations.<sup>359</sup> That other commentarial traditions either existed at the time of the composition of the Niddesa, but were not employed, or were developed later, is shown by the fact that the Paramatthajotikā mentions explanations not included in the Niddesa.<sup>360</sup>

The type of comment made in the Niddesa is very similar to that found in the Old Commentary in the Vinaya-piṭaka,<sup>361</sup> in that it consists of long lists of synonyms or near synonyms. It does, however, also include exegetical passages, which presumably means that it represents a slightly later type of commentary. There is no attempt made at abbreviation, and passages are given in full every time they are repeated. The beginning of stereotyped explanation can be seen, e.g. every time the word *kappa*, or a verb based upon the root *kapp*, occurs, the Niddesa states that there are two types of *kappa*, i.e. *taṇhā-kappa* and *diṭṭhi-kappa*.<sup>362</sup> This happens even if the words occur in successive verses. The result is not an organic structure of exegesis, but a series of disconnected phrases

<sup>354</sup> Nidd I 446, 29–447, 6 (ad Sn 955).

<sup>355</sup> E.g. M I 111, 31–113, 7 and S III 7, 1–9, 8.

<sup>356</sup> See pp. 63 and 65 above.

<sup>357</sup> Ap 8–13.

<sup>358</sup> Mvu I 357–59.

<sup>359</sup> E.g. *givanto ti givanto kujjanto nadanto saddaṃ karonto. athavā kivanto kati kiṭṭhakā kivatā kā kivatāhukā* (Nidd I 467, 5–7 ad Sn 959: *givanto tattha bheravā*).

<sup>360</sup> Pj II 572, 12–14 ad Sn 959 reads *kivanto* in the lemma and explains it as *kiṭṭakā*. It quotes *khivanto* (glossed as *kijjanto*) as a variant reading, but dismisses this as inappropriate in the context (*na pana pubbenāparaṃ sandhiyati*).

<sup>361</sup> As noted by M. H. BODE, rev. of Mahāniddesa Part I, in JRS 1918, p. 575.

<sup>362</sup> Cf. Nidd I 97, 1–3 ad Sn 793 (*vikappayeyya*) with 97, 28–30 ad Sn 794 (*kappayanti*).

which serve as explanations of the individual words, not in the particular setting of the Suttanipāṭa, but in any setting. This state of affairs led the editor of the European edition of the Culla-niddesa to adopt a modified form of presentation instead of editing the text in the usual way. As a result of this arrangement, he hoped to facilitate the tracing of such expository material back to its source.<sup>363</sup>

Sometimes, however, the exposition is improved by giving explanations, e.g. *kathāṃkathā* "doubt" is explained as *vicikicchā*,<sup>364</sup> and examples are then given of the ways in which doubt can arise.<sup>365</sup> References to the Nikāyas are frequent, e.g. when explaining Sn 844, which is quoted at S III 9,19 as occurring in the Māgandīyapaṇḍita of the Aṭṭhakavagga, the author of the Niddesa quotes S III 9,14–12,27 verbatim.<sup>366</sup>

A comparison of the Niddesa with the portions of the Suttanipāṭa upon which it comments enables us to deduce certain information about the relative dating of both texts. The presence in the Niddesa of comments upon the reciters' remarks<sup>367</sup> and the prose passages<sup>368</sup> enables us to state that these features, although assumed to be late, are nevertheless not as late as the *vallugāthās* of the Pārāyanavagga which are not commented upon. These *gāthās*, however, are commented upon by the Paramatthajotikā, where they are attributed to Ānanda.<sup>369</sup> This presumably means that the author of the Paramatthajotikā found commentarial material upon the *gāthās* in the Mahā-aṭṭhakathā of the Mahāvihāra, or he would have made a comment to that effect as he did for other verses which lacked comment in the Sinhalese tradition.<sup>370</sup> The fact that neither the Niddesa nor the Paramatthajotikā comments upon Sn 836 presumably means that this verse is a very late interpolation.

The presence of certain geographical data, e.g. the mention of Java, Suvāṇṇabhūmi, Takkola, etc.,<sup>371</sup> in the Niddesa has led to the suggestion of dates as late as the second century A.D. for its compilation.<sup>372</sup> It is true that the inclusion of the name Allasanda in the lists of places means that that particular portion of the lists is post-Alexander, but leaving aside the possibility of a name or names being inserted into an already-existing list, the beginning of the third century B.C. would seem to be quite suitable as the date of its composition.

<sup>363</sup> Nidd II, p. x.

<sup>364</sup> Nidd I 268, 1 ad Sn 868.

<sup>365</sup> Nidd I 268, 10–24.

<sup>366</sup> Nidd I 197, 1–201, 2.

<sup>367</sup> E.g. Nidd I 139, 26–140, 7 ad Sn 814 (*icc āyasmā Tisso Metteyyo*).

<sup>368</sup> See Nidd II (Ne) 206–208 ad Sn p. 218.

<sup>369</sup> *Tam aṭṭhaṃ gahetvā āyasmā Ānando saṅgītikāle Pārāyanavaggaṃ nīdanam āropento imā gāthāya abhāsi* (Pj II 580, 29–30).

<sup>370</sup> *Avasāne gāthādvayaṃ eva pana Mahā-aṭṭhakathāyaṃ vinicchīlapāṭhe n' atthi* (Pj II 477, 13–14 ad Sn 677–78).

<sup>371</sup> Nidd I 154–55 = 415.

<sup>372</sup> See S. LÉVI, "Ptolemée, le Niddesa et la Bṛhatkathā," in *Études asiatiques*, Vol. II, Paris 1925, pp. 1–55.

Recent archaeological evidence<sup>373</sup> has shown that there was trade between India and the East before the time of Asoka, so there is no reason to doubt that these names could have been known in India at a sufficiently early date for such geographical lists to have been compiled before the date of the third council.

Those who suggest late dates for the compilation of the Niddesa forget that the Sinhalese tradition recorded the fact, related to us by Buddhaghosa, that the Niddesa existed before the first century B.C., and had by that time been forgotten by all *bhikkhus* except one. From fear of its disappearing altogether the *thera* Mahārakkhita was persuaded to learn the Niddesa from this one *bhikkhu*, and others learned it from Mahārakkhita.<sup>374</sup> It was the realisation that canonical texts could easily disappear if the oral tradition died out which precipitated the writing down of the canon during the reign of Vaṭṭa-gāmaṇi.

### 3.5.12. Paṭisambhidāmagga

The Paṭisambhidāmagga<sup>375</sup> consists of three *vaggas*, each containing ten topics (*kathās*). It is intended to teach the path of discrimination (*pañisaṃbhida*), and tries to show how understanding of the truth taught by the Buddha occurs. It is attributed by the Saddhammappakāsinī<sup>376</sup> to the Buddha's disciple Sāriputta, just as is the Niddesa. The reason for this may be that there seems to be a close relationship between the Paṭisambhidāmagga and the Dasuttarasutta of the Dīgha-nikāya (34),<sup>377</sup> which is also attributed to Sāriputta.

The form of the text suggests that it is late, and this view is supported by the fact that the term *pañisaṃbhida* does not seem to occur in the older parts of the Vinaya-piṭaka or the first three Nikāyas. It occurs in some Abhidhamma texts, and in the Niddesa, Apadāna and Buddhavaṃsa of the Khuddakanikāya.<sup>378</sup> That the text is later than much of the canon is shown by the quotation of whole passages from the Vinaya-piṭaka and portions of the Sutta-piṭaka. Nearly every section is given a *sutta* basis in this way. A general acquaintance with early Buddhist legends is assumed, e.g. in the section on

<sup>373</sup> See H. MANSU BHUSAN SARKAR, "The date of the Pāli Niddesa and its implication for the history of South-East Asia," in *JAS(B)*, 19, 1977, pp. 44–45.

<sup>374</sup> Sp 695–96.

<sup>375</sup> A. C. TAYLOR (ed.), PTS London, Vol. I 1905, Vol. II 1907. Tr. BHICKHU NĀNAMOLI, The path of discrimination, PTS London, 1982. There is an introduction to this translation by A. K. WARDER which deals at length with the problems of the composition and dating of this text.

<sup>376</sup> Paṭi-a 1, 18.

<sup>377</sup> See WARDER, Paṭi tr., p. xxxiii.

<sup>378</sup> See *ibid.*, pp. vii–viii.



supernormal power (*iddhi*)<sup>379</sup> the names of *arahants* who possessed such powers are given without any further comment, as if their stories were well known.

There is a list of contents (*mātikā*) at the beginning of the text,<sup>380</sup> but this gives only a list of the 73 knowledges discussed in the first section (*Āṇakathā*), and does not apply to the whole work. Such a *mātikā* seems to be an Abhidhamma-type feature, and the various topics are treated in the form of questions and answers, as in the Abhidhamma, but in form it is a *sutta* text, since it includes the standard opening *evaṃ me sutaṃ* in some sections, and the vocative *bhikkhave* also occurs.<sup>381</sup> It is, however, possible that these words occur as parts of quotations from *sutta* texts, and are not fundamental features of the *Paṭisambhidāmagga* itself.<sup>382</sup>

The text is included among the list of those which the *Dīpavaṃsa* states were rejected by the *Mahāsāṅghikas*,<sup>383</sup> which probably means that, if it existed in any form at the time of the schism, it had not yet been accepted as canonical. The existence, however, of the technical term *pratisaṃvid* in Buddhist Sanskrit<sup>384</sup> shows that the concept was not an invention of the Theravādins but was in existence when the other sects separated from them. The *Paṭisambhidāmagga* is not included among those texts which Buddhaghōṣa informs us were not accepted by the *Dīgha-bhāṇakas*,<sup>385</sup> so it may be deduced that it was recognised as canonical before the composition of the *Apadāna*, *Buddhavaṃsa*, *Cariyāpiṭaka* and *Khuddakapāṭha*.

The text presents a systematic exposition of certain important topics of Buddhism, and describes how insight is to be obtained. The way begins with proper knowledge, and the first *kathā*, amounting to almost a third of the whole text,<sup>386</sup> is consequently devoted to *nāṇa*, which includes knowledge of the great pity of a *Tathāgata*. Other important topics to which *kathās* are devoted include the regulation of breathing (*ānāpāna*) as an aid to mindfulness (1.3); *kamma* (1.7); the noble truths (2.2); the factors (*bojjhaṅgas*) of enlightenment (2.3); loving-kindness (*mettā*) towards creatures (2.4); the discriminations (*paṭisambhidās*) which give their name to the entire text (2.6); emptiness (*suñña*), i.e. the fact that all *dhammas* are devoid of self (2.10); supernormal powers (*iddhi*) (3.2); the foundation of mindfulness (*satipaṭṭhāna*) (3.8); and insight (*vipassanā*) (3.9) which together with serenity (*samatha*) is also treated in the section on the couple (*yuganandha*) (2.1).

Although the *Paṭisambhidāmagga* is not an Abhidhamma text, in the sense that it does not appear in the Abhidhamma-piṭaka, it has been suggested that

<sup>379</sup> *Paṭis* I 205–214. See ARNOLD, *Paṭis* II, p. iv.

<sup>380</sup> *Paṭis* I 1–3.

<sup>381</sup> *Paṭis* II p. iv.

<sup>382</sup> See WARDER, *Paṭis* tr., p. xxxiii.

<sup>383</sup> *Dip* V 37.

<sup>384</sup> See BHS Dictionary, s.v. *pratisaṃvid*.

<sup>385</sup> See p. 9 above.

<sup>386</sup> *Paṭis* I 4–134.

at some early date it was in fact classed among the Abhidhamma texts.<sup>387</sup> It seems to have certain features in common with the *Vibhaṅga*, e.g. nearly a half of the section titles of the *Vibhaṅga* appear in it, and like the *Vibhaṅga* it contains an interwoven exegetical *aṭṭhakathā*. To some extent it seems to imply knowledge of the *Vibhaṅga*, e.g. when discussing the four *satipaṭṭhānas* the *Paṭisambhidāmagga* comments only upon *bhāvanā*, which is not included in the comment upon *satipaṭṭhāna* in the *Vibhaṅga*.<sup>388</sup> Sometimes the *Paṭisambhidāmagga* seems to go beyond what is found in Abhidhamma texts, e.g. in place of the seven powers (*balāni*) of an *arahant* ten are given;<sup>389</sup> similarly ten *iddhis* are listed in place of the usual four,<sup>390</sup> and ten *disāpharaṇās*<sup>391</sup> as well as the usual four *disās*.

### 3.5.13. Apadāna

The *Apadāna*<sup>392</sup> is a collection of legends in verse, in which the noble deeds (*apadānas*) done by Buddhist *theras* and *theris* in earlier existences are glorified. It contains in 55 *vaggas* the biographies of 547 *theras* and in four *vaggas* the biographies of 40 *theris*, all of whom lived at the time of the Buddha. Each of these stories gives first of all the life of the hero or heroine in one or more previous births. They all contain a story of the past and a story of the present, but they differ from a *Jātaka* story in that in the *Jātaka* collection the stories of the past and the present always refer to the Buddha, whereas the *Apadāna* deals usually, although not always, with an *arahant*. The stories generally follow the same pattern. The author tells of the adoration made to an earlier Buddha, and the prophecy made by that Buddha that the doctrine of Gotama Buddha would be heard. The story goes on to say how this came true, and how the author became an *arahant*. The purpose is to show that even the smallest meritorious act has the potentiality to give great results even after the passage of immense periods of time.

The *Apadāna* is almost an appendix to the *Theragāthā* and *Therīgāthā*, since it connects together the past and present lives of the *theras* and *theris*. The last two poems in the *Therīgāthā* are, in fact, of an *Apadāna* nature.<sup>393</sup> Many of the authors of *Apadānas* are also mentioned in the *Theragāthā* and *Therīgāthā* collections, and in his commentaries upon those texts *Dhammapāla*<sup>394</sup> includes the *Apadāna* section relevant to the hero or heroine. There are, however, certain discrepancies in his ascriptions,<sup>395</sup> and one of the *Apadānas*

<sup>387</sup> See WARDER, *Paṭis* tr., p. xxxiii, and ARNOLD, *Paṭis* II, p. iv.

<sup>388</sup> See ARNOLD, *Paṭis* I, p. viii, and Mrs RHYS DAVIDS' rev. of *Paṭis* I, in JRAS 1908, p. 591.

<sup>389</sup> *Paṭis* II 168, 12.

<sup>390</sup> *Paṭis* II 205; 6. Cf. As 91–92, where the ten-fold *iddhi* is also found.

<sup>391</sup> *Paṭis* II 130, 17.

<sup>392</sup> Ed. M. E. LILLEY, PTS London, Vol. I 1925, Vol. II 1927.

<sup>393</sup> See p. 77 above.

<sup>394</sup> See p. 135 below.

<sup>395</sup> See MÜLLER, *Thā-a* p. ix.

he includes does not occur in the Apadāna collection in its present form.<sup>396</sup> The collection, however, includes many *theras* who do not appear in the Theragāthā, and does not include all the *theris* who are in the Therīgāthā. On the other hand, there is an Apadāna for Yasodharā,<sup>397</sup> although there is no poem for her in the Therīgāthā. A large number of the *theras* are not identifiable since they have names made up from the deed which is related in their Apadāna, e.g. "Mango-giver."

Many of the stories which are told have a mythological nature, which suggests that the Apadāna is one of the latest books in the canon.<sup>398</sup> The type of act which is glorified also implies lateness, for there is mention of the worship of *thūpas*, shrines and relics, and there is an emphasis upon generosity and humanitarian deeds. Nevertheless, there is already mention of some of these activities in the Theragāthā and Therīgāthā, which can be dated with fair probability to the period between the fifth and the third centuries B.C. One of the Apadānas, however, refers to the Kathāvatthu as an Abhidhamma compilation,<sup>399</sup> which proves that that particular Apadāna must be later than the third council. The nature of the Apadāna collection is such that it was simple for more and more Apadānas to be added until the time when it was fixed as canonical, which was perhaps at the time of writing down, after which additions were probably not made.

A few Apadānas depart from the usual pattern. The first section of the text is entitled Buddhāpadāna,<sup>400</sup> and the use of the word *apadāna* in connection with the Buddha is reminiscent of its usage in the Mahāpadāna of the Dīgha-nikāya (14).<sup>401</sup> In this section<sup>402</sup> the Buddha himself tells of the *Buddhakhetas*, ideal lands of beauty where the Buddhas live. A picture is painted of Buddhas questioning each other, and there is mention of disciples questioning the Buddhas and vice versa. The whole idea would seem to be late, and it has been regarded as foreshadowing Mahāyānic beliefs. It has even been called a completely Mahāyānic passage,<sup>403</sup> but it does not seem to be necessary to go as far

<sup>396</sup> See WOODWARD, Th-a I p. vii.

<sup>397</sup> Ap 584-90.

<sup>398</sup> It is one of the texts rejected by the Dīgha-bhāṇakas (see p. 9 above). MALALASEKERA reports (DPPN, I, p. 116) that the Apadāna contains the names of 35 Buddhas.

<sup>399</sup> *Abhidhammanayaṇṇo 'ham Kathāvatthuvissuddhiyā sabbesaṃ viññāpetvāna viharāmi anāsavo* (Ap 37, 1).

<sup>400</sup> Ap 1-6.

<sup>401</sup> See p. 36 above.

<sup>402</sup> It has been translated by DWIJENDRALAL BARUA. See "'Buddhakhetta' in the Apadāna," in D. R. BHANDARKAR et al. (ed.), B.C. Law Volume, Part II, Poona 1946, pp. 183-90.

<sup>403</sup> See H. BECHERT, "Buddha-Feld und Verdienstübertragung: Mahāyāna-Ideen im Theravāda-Buddhismus Ceylons," in Académie royale de Belgique. Bulletin de la Classe des Lettres et des Sciences morales et politiques, 5e série. Vol. 52, 1976, pp. 27-51.

as that. A simpler and doubtless earlier idea of the *Buddhakhetas* is found elsewhere in the Apadāna,<sup>404</sup> and also in the Theragāthā and the Milindapañha.<sup>405</sup> A more elaborate form of the idea is found in the Mahāvastu,<sup>406</sup> also a Hinayāna text, although not free from some Mahāyānic influence. The form of classification which Buddhaghosa adopts for the *Buddhakhetas*<sup>407</sup> shows that the concept was widespread by his time, although he gives no indication of the nature of these Buddha fields. Whether any Mahāyānic influence should be seen in the idea is doubtful. It has been rightly pointed out that many ideas in Buddhism follow from the dynamics of early Buddhist thought, which lead to the existence of one and the same idea in two forms in two different traditions. Linguistic evidence suggests an unusual origin for this Apadāna, as will be seen, but there is no reason to see here anything more than an idea which was carried further in this text than in any other Theravādin text, but which nevertheless follows on from the concept of a miraculous Buddha which occurs as early as the Dīgha-nikāya.

The second section of the Apadāna is the *Pacceka-buddhāpadāna*, in which the Buddha is asked by Ānanda about the *pacceka-buddhas*. In the course of his reply, the Buddha includes the verses in *Triṣṭubh* metre which occur in the Khaggavisāṇasutta of the Suttanipāta.<sup>408</sup> As has already been noticed,<sup>409</sup> the Suttanipāta says nothing about the speakers of these verses, although the Niddesa attributes them to the *pacceka-buddhas*, and so does the Mahāvastu.

In the Pubbakammapiṭṭi-apadāna (387),<sup>410</sup> the Buddha tells of his bad deeds, as a result of which he suffered numerous rebirths in hells. The remains of these deeds caused him many unpleasant experiences even in his last existence. This Apadāna is called *Buddhāpadāna* in the rubric,<sup>411</sup> and the latter part of it is given and commented upon by the commentator at the end of the *Buddhāpadāna*.<sup>412</sup> It is possible that in an earlier form of the tradition the two *apadānas* were combined in some way. This would explain why the *Buddhāpadāna* in its present lacks the essential feature of an *apadāna*: it says nothing about the Buddha's previous existences, and seems more like an *udāna* than an *apadāna*.

The text seems to be composed entirely in the *Śloka* metre, except for the *Pacceka-buddhāpadāna* which is in the *Triṣṭubh* metre. Somewhat surprisingly, the Apadāna shows traces of features which are known in mainland Prakrits, but are not common, if found at all, in Pāli, e.g. masculine plural forms in *-āni*

<sup>404</sup> The word is used in a less extravagant way at Ap 44, 27, and in a different meaning at Ap 444, 19.

<sup>405</sup> Th 1087; Mil 176, 28.

<sup>406</sup> For references see BHS Dictionary, s.v. *buddha-kṣetra*.

<sup>407</sup> See Vism 414, 19-27.

<sup>408</sup> Sn 35-75.

<sup>409</sup> See p. 64 above.

<sup>410</sup> Ap 299-301.

<sup>411</sup> Ap 301, 18-20.

<sup>412</sup> Ap-a 120-27.



and aorists in -e (the so-called optative used as an aorist).<sup>413</sup> The majority of the latter occur in the Buddhāpadāna. Since there is no reason to assume that these features arose in Ceylon independently, we have to suppose that they are indeed old mainland features. This does not necessarily mean that the verses containing these features were all composed on the mainland of India at an early date, for we cannot rule out conscious archaizing in some cases. What is, however, important is the fact that, whether genuine features or archaisms, they indicate knowledge of phenomena not common in Pāli. If they were at one time more common in Pāli, then they have been edited out of our texts, and their existence in the Apadāna presumably indicates that this text or portions of it, did not undergo the usual editing procedure. An alternative explanation demands that the composers of the verses containing the anomalous features had knowledge of them through a source no longer available to us, from which they borrowed them into Pāli.

The word *apadāna* occurs in Sanskrit<sup>414</sup> in the sense of a great or noble deed, but the more common spelling is *avadāna*, and this, as was noted<sup>415</sup> in the case of the Sanskrit equivalent of the Mahāpādāna of the Dīgha-nikāya (14), is the usual form of the word in Buddhist Sanskrit texts. Just as the Apadāna goes with the Theragāthā and Therīgāthā, similarly in Sanskrit there are texts of a comparable type which go together. The Sanskrit Anavataptagāthā<sup>416</sup> is a collection of Avadānas which goes with the Sthaviragāthā, and fragments found in Turkestan indicate that there are parallels with a number of the Pāli Apadānas. There are also parallels in the Vinaya-piṭaka<sup>417</sup> of the Mūla-Sarvāstivādin, found in Gilgit, and it seems that the Anavataptagāthā has been transferred to that text in the canon belonging to that sect. The fact that a portion of the Avadāna corresponding to the Pubbakammapiṭoti-apadāna has been discovered in Turkestan, and its existence in Tibetan and Chinese versions, indicate that the Apadāna was the common property of both Theravādins and Sarvāstivādins, and is therefore likely to be quite early.

### 3.5.14. Buddhavaṃsa<sup>418</sup>

As has been noted,<sup>419</sup> in the Vinaya-piṭaka and the Dīgha-nikāya there is mention of the six Buddhas who preceded Gotama. The Buddha doctrine

<sup>413</sup> See H. BECHERT, "Grammatisches aus dem Apadānabuch," in ZDMG 108, 1958, pp. 308–16.

<sup>414</sup> See MW, s.v. *apadāna* and *avadāna*, and BHS Dictionary, s.v. *avadāna*.

<sup>415</sup> See p. 37 above.

<sup>416</sup> H. BECHERT, Bruchstücke buddhistischer Verssammlungen: I. Die Anavataptagāthā und die Sthaviragāthā, Berlin 1961 (STT VI).

<sup>417</sup> See YUYAMA, VT, p. 51.

<sup>418</sup> Ed. R. MORRIS, PTS London. 1882; N. A. JAYAWICKRAMA, PTS London, 1974. Tr. B. C. LAW, The Lineage of the Buddhas, SBE London, 1938; I. B. HORNER, Chronicle of Buddhas, SBB London, 1975.

<sup>419</sup> See p. 77 above.

developed, and by the time that the canon was closed the number of Buddhas before Gotama had reached twenty-four.

The Buddhavaṃsa opens with the description of an exquisite Jewel Walk (*ratana-caṅkama*) which Gotama, just after he had become a Buddha, constructed in the sky and paced upon. He was visited by Sāriputta with 500 *arahants*, who asked him about the resolve and aspiration he had made for Buddhahood. In reply, Gotama relates the lives of 24 previous Buddhas, and tells what he, as a Bodhisatta, did under each Buddha. The account he gives of himself as the ascetic Sumedha in the first of these former births is the longest and most detailed.

The 24 chapters devoted to the previous Buddhas chronicle certain features, always substantially the same, although the details vary,<sup>420</sup> in their life on earth both as Bodhisatta and Buddha. As well as being a chronicle of those Buddhas, it is also a history of Gotama through the times of all the Buddhas who preceded him.

The Buddha doctrine shows in fact an even later development, because after the 26th chapter, in which the Buddha gives, very briefly, the details about himself, which probably served as a model for the history of the other Buddhas, he mentions in the 27th chapter three Buddhas earlier than Dipaṅkara.<sup>421</sup> These three were perhaps not thought to be so important because tradition did not tell of Gotama making a resolve and aspiration under them. The commentator states that the 18 verses of this chapter were established by the *saṅgīti-kāras* and should be regarded as the envoi (*niḡamanagāthā*).<sup>422</sup> It would seem that the Buddhavaṃsa, even as added to by the *saṅgītikāras*, should have ended there, but in the text as we have it there are two further verses, in which the Buddha refers to himself and to Metteyya,<sup>423</sup> who, as has been noted,<sup>424</sup> is referred to in the Cakkavattisihanādasutta of the Dīgha-nikāya (26). A further chapter (28) gives an account of the distribution of the relics of the Buddha, which is related to and based upon that at the end of the Mahāparinibbāna-sutta of the Dīgha-nikāya (16). The commentary makes no mention of this chapter.

The reason for the production of the Buddhavaṃsa would seem to be the fact that the history of the one Bodhisatta who would become the Buddha Gotama needed an account of previous Buddhas to show that he did not suffer from the abnormality of uniqueness, and that his enlightenment was gained

<sup>420</sup> See I. B. HORNER, Bv tr., pp. xix–xlvj.

<sup>421</sup> Tanhaṅkara, Medhaṅkara and Sapaṇkara (Bv XXVII 1).

<sup>422</sup> *Aparimeyye ito kappe caturo āsuṃ vināyakā ti ādikā aṭṭharasagāthā saṅgīti-kārahehi thapitā niḡamanagāthā vedītabbā* (Bv-a 295, 31–32).

<sup>423</sup> *Aham etarahi sambuddho Metteyyo cāpi hessati ete p' ime pañca buddhā dhīrā lokānukampakā.*

*cesam dhammarājūnaṃ aññesaṃ nekakoṇiṇaṃ ācikkhūvāna taṃ maggaṃ nibbutā te sasāvaka* (Bv XXVII 19–20).

<sup>424</sup> See p. 41 above.

only after striving through many births for the fulfilment of the ten perfections.<sup>425</sup> To complete them all is a necessary self-preparation for enlightenment. The Buddhavaṃsa is therefore a developed Bodhisatta doctrine, but it was not developed further, even in the Abhidhamma. Whether the Buddhavaṃsa with the idea in it was borrowed from another sect, as has been suggested,<sup>426</sup> or whether it was an idea old enough to be common to both the Theravādins and the Sarvāstivādins, who developed it much further, is impossible to decide.

The whole text is composed in the *Śloka* metre, which shows no particularly early features, and in view of the state of development of both the Buddha and the Bodhisatta doctrines, it would seem that the Buddhavaṃsa is a relatively late addition to the canon. As has been noted, it was not accepted as canonical by the *Dīgha-bhāṇakas*.<sup>427</sup> It has been pointed out, however, that there is no reference to a tooth of the Buddha having been taken to Ceylon in the account of the distribution of the relics, although there is alleged to be a Sinhalese version with such a reference. This therefore implies that the text was in its present form including the additions at the end, before the arrival of the tooth in Ceylon.<sup>428</sup>

### 3.5.15. Cariyāpiṭaka

The Cariyāpiṭaka<sup>429</sup> is the fifteenth and last book of the Khuddaka-nikāya. It consists of 35 Jātaka-type stories arranged in three *vaggas*, intended to illustrate the ten perfections (*pāramis*). At the end it is called Buddhāpadāniya,<sup>430</sup> which again shows the unusual use of the word *apadāna* instead of Jātaka in connection with the Buddha.<sup>431</sup>

According to the commentary, the Cariyāpiṭaka was related by the Buddha at the request of Sāriputta. Each story is told in the first person, of a rebirth in earlier time, in which the Buddha followed his set aim of obtaining enlightenment by mastering the ten perfections. These are mentioned in the Buddhavaṃsa,<sup>432</sup> and the Buddha expressed his wish to bring them to fulfilment. The first *vagga* has ten *cariyās* (lit. "proper conduct"), all concerning the *dāna-pāramī*. The second also has ten, concerning the *sīla-pāramī*. The third *vagga* has fifteen *cariyās*, five for the *nekkhamma*-, one for the *adhiṭṭhāna*-, six for the *sacca*-, two for the *mellā*-, and one for the *upekkhā-pāramī*. One of the *niga-*

<sup>425</sup> See HORNER, Bv tr., p. xiii.

<sup>426</sup> See THOMAS, HBT, p. 204.

<sup>427</sup> See p. 9 above.

<sup>428</sup> See RAHULA, HBC, p. 128.

<sup>429</sup> Ed. R. MORRIS, PTS London, 1882; N. A. JAYAWICKRAMA, PTS London, 1974. Tr. B. C. LAW, The collection of the ways of Conduct, SBB London, 1938; I. B. HORNER, Basket of conduct, SBB London, 1975.

<sup>430</sup> *Buddhāpadāniyaṃ nāma dhammapariyāyaṃ abhāsita* (Cp 103, 11–12).

<sup>431</sup> See p. 36 above.

<sup>432</sup> Bv I 76.

*mana-gūthās* at the end of the text implies that the other three *pāramis* have also been attained.<sup>433</sup> There are terms in various *cariyās* which can be interpreted as implying the three missing *pāramis*,<sup>434</sup> and it is perhaps not necessary to follow those scholars who believe that part of the text must be missing.

The Cariyāpiṭaka is largely based upon the Jātaka collection, from which stories illustrating the perfections have been adapted. Of the 35 *cariyās* 32 can be directly related to the Jātaka collection. Another can be related to the *Dīgha-nikāya*,<sup>435</sup> and one to the *Majjhima-nikāya*.<sup>436</sup> The remaining story consists of a single verse, and is too short for identification.<sup>437</sup> In the *Nidāna-kathā* of the Jātaka, the ten *pāramitās* are mentioned, with examples of each extracted from the Jātakas.<sup>438</sup> Reference is made to the Cariyāpiṭaka for a longer account.<sup>439</sup> There are only 21 Jātakas in common between the two, which has led to the suggestion that the reference may be to a different recension of the Cariyāpiṭaka from that available now.<sup>440</sup>

The metre is *Śloka* throughout, except for two *Triṣṭubh* verses taken over from the Jātaka.<sup>441</sup> Although the stories are, with the exceptions already noted, borrowed from the Jātaka, there is in some cases not a single verse in common with the Jātaka. The longest poem in the Cariyāpiṭaka is devoted to the story of Vessantara, and there are about 20 verses common to it and the *Vessantarajātaka*. Rather than these being borrowed from the Jātaka, however, it has been shown that the reverse is true.<sup>442</sup> The verses have been taken over into the prose story which amplifies the verse of the *Vessantarajātaka*, and are usually introduced with the words *tena vuttam*. Compared with the Jātaka verses those in the Cariyāpiṭaka are mediocre, and introduce sentimental and supernatural features lacking in the Jātaka. The form of presentation and the metre, and the fact that the Cariyāpiṭaka serves in effect as a supplement to the Buddhavaṃsa, all suggest that it is a late text. As already noted, it was not accepted as canonical by the *Dīgha-bhāṇakas*.<sup>443</sup>

<sup>433</sup> *Paṇḍite paripucchitvā viriyaṃ katvāna uttamam khandhiyā pāramiṃ gantvā patto sambodhim uttamam* (Cp 368).

<sup>434</sup> See HORNER, Cp tr., p. vi.

<sup>435</sup> With *Mahāgovindacarīya* (Cp I.5) cf. *Mahāgovindasutta* of *Dīgha-nikāya* (19).

<sup>436</sup> With *Mahālomahamsacarīya* (Cp III.15) cf. *Mahāsihanādasutta* (also entitled *Lomahamsapariyāya*) of *Majjhima-nikāya* (12). See HORNER, Cp tr., pp. viii–ix.

<sup>437</sup> *Saccasavhayaapaṇḍitacarīya* (Cp IIL.3).

<sup>438</sup> Ja I 45–47.

<sup>439</sup> *Ayam ettha saṃkhepo, vitthārato paṇ' esa attho Cariyāpiṭakato gahetabbo* (Ja I 47, 16–17).

<sup>440</sup> WINTERNITZ, HIL, p. 164.

<sup>441</sup> Cp 343–44 = Ja IV 31, 9–15.

<sup>442</sup> See L. ALSDORF, "Bemerkungen zum Vessantara-jātaka," in WZKSÖ 1, 1957, pp. 2–14.

<sup>443</sup> See p. 9 above.



## 4. THE ABHIDHAMMA-PIṬAKA

It is clear that the Abhidhamma is later than the rest of the canon. There is no mention in the chronicles of reciting the Abhidhamma at the first or second councils, although the Mahāvamsa states that the *arhants* who held the second council knew the *tipiṭaka*.<sup>1</sup> The Mahāśāṅghikas who split from the Theravādins after the second council are said to have rejected the Abhidhamma.<sup>2</sup> This presumably means that there was nothing corresponding exactly to the Pāli Abhidhamma in their canon, from which it may be deduced that the Abhidhamma did not exist at that time or at least was not recognised as canonical.

In a number of places in the canon we find the triad *Dhamma-dhara Vinaya-dhara*.<sup>3</sup> From which it appears that *Mātikā* and Abhidhamma are synonymous. The commentaries, however, explain that in this context *Mātikā* means *Pātimokkha*,<sup>4</sup> and this interpretation probably arises from the fact that *mātikā* means "summary," and can therefore be used both of a summary of the *Pātimokkha* rules and of the type of summary of contents which is found at the beginning of the *Paṭisambhādāmagga*,<sup>5</sup> and in the majority of the texts of the Abhidhamma-*piṭaka*. *Mātikās* occur in two places in the *Dhamma-saṅgaṇi* (one at the beginning, and one later),<sup>6</sup> in the *Vibhaṅga* (in four places, not at the beginning),<sup>7</sup> the *Dhātukathā*, *Puggala-paññatti*, *Yamaka*,<sup>8</sup> and *Paṭṭhāna*. Although there is no *mātikā* for the *Kathāvatthu*, nevertheless Buddhaghosa uses the word<sup>9</sup> when he maintains that the Buddha laid down the outline to be followed by Tissa when he recited that text at the third council. The *Mohavicchedanī* is a commentary upon the *mātikās* of all seven Abhidhamma texts: in the case of the *Kathāvatthu* the *mātikā* is simply the index of contents.<sup>10</sup>

It seems likely that by the time of the third council the *mātikās* were already in existence, with perhaps a certain amount of elaboration to show *bhikkhus*

how each term of the *mātikā* should be expanded. In the case of the *Dhamma-saṅgaṇi* it can be assumed that the text was already available at greater length, since the existence of what Buddhaghosa calls an *aṭṭhakathā*<sup>11</sup> in the body of the text as we have it would seem to indicate that the chapter upon which it comments must be very old. The *Buddhavaṃsa* states that the Buddha Koṇāgamana preached seven treatises,<sup>12</sup> and the commentary states that these were the seven texts of the Abhidhamma-*piṭaka*.<sup>13</sup> Although this is clearly an anachronism, it suggests that the Abhidhamma-*piṭaka* was in its present form by the time the *Buddhavaṃsa* was composed.

The word *abhidhamma* is found in the *Vinaya-ṭiṭaka* and the *Sutta-ṭiṭaka*, and seems in origin to be the preposition *abhi* together with the word *dharmā*, with the meaning "as regards the *dharmā*."<sup>14</sup> We find in the *Majjhima-nikāya* the phrase *siyamsu dve bhikkhū abhidhamme nānāvādā*,<sup>15</sup> and the word also occurs in a context with *abhinaya* in the *Vinaya-ṭiṭaka*: *abhidhamme vinetum abhinaya vinetum*.<sup>16</sup> These were then taken as being the locative of *abhidhamma* and *abhinaya* and were given a separate existence, e.g. *ko tatha vinayo, ko tatha abhinayo*.<sup>17</sup>

So the compound *abhidhammakathā* must have meant "discourse about *dharmā*" at first, and then "discourse about *abhidhamma*."<sup>18</sup> When it is said of a *bhikkhu* that *abhidhamme kho pana abhinaya pañham puṭṭho saṃsādeti no vissajjati*,<sup>19</sup> probably an elaboration and analysis of the doctrinal principles is intended, just as *abhinaya* would mean a casuistic discussion of the rules of discipline. There is, however, no separate *Abhinaya*, for the elaboration of the rules of discipline exists in the *Vinaya-ṭiṭaka* itself.<sup>20</sup>

The codification of such principles which require exposition would give rise to the *mātikā* lists which form the basis of the Abhidhamma books, and now serve as tables of contents. The elaboration of these principles, their definition, and their proof by adding *sutta* passages would form the Abhidhamma proper. This is what we find in the Abhidhamma-*piṭaka* collection as we have it. These matters must have been discussed before the separation of the *Sarvāstivādins*

<sup>11</sup> As 6, 38.

<sup>12</sup> Bv XXIV 6.

<sup>13</sup> *Pakarane sattha desento ti tatha devānaṃ sattappakaraṇasaṅkhātāṃ Abhidhamma-ṭiṭakam desento vasi* (Bv-a 259, 25—26).

<sup>14</sup> See CPD, s.v. *abhidhamma*.

<sup>15</sup> M II 239, 4 (= *abhiṃsiṃthe dhamme, imesu sattatīmasobodhapakkhiyadhammesu* [Ps IV 29, 3]).

<sup>16</sup> Vin I 64, 28 (= *nāmarūpaparicchede vinetum na paṭibalo ... sakale Vinayaṭiṭake vinetum na paṭibalo* [Sp 990, 3—4]). See I. B. HORNER, "Abhidhamma Abhinaya," in *IHQ*, 17, 3 (1944), pp. 291—310. See also TERRY C. MUECK, "The meaning of 'Abhidhamma' in the Pāli canon", in *PBR* 5, pp. 12—21.

<sup>17</sup> Vin V 1, 17. Cf. *vinayo vibhatti abhinayo* (Vin V 2, 19).

<sup>18</sup> E.g. *abhidhammakathāṃ kathento* (M I 214, 24).

<sup>19</sup> A IV 398, 1.

<sup>20</sup> *Abhinayo ti Khandhaka-Parivāra* (Mp V 7, 2—3 ad A IV 398, 1).

<sup>1</sup> Mhv IV 62. Buddhaghosa, however, says (As 27, 36) that it was recited.

<sup>2</sup> Dip V 37.

<sup>3</sup> See PTC, s.v. *dhamma-dhara*.

<sup>4</sup> *Mātikādhara ti dvemātikādhara* (Mp II 189, 23 ad A I 117, 29); *mātikādhara ti dvepātimokkhaḍharā* (Mp III 382, 11 ad A III 361, 25). See p. 126 below.

<sup>5</sup> *Paṭi* I 1—3.

<sup>6</sup> Dhs 1—8; 124—33.

<sup>7</sup> *Vibh* 138—43; 244—45; 306—18; 345—49. See p. 100 below.

<sup>8</sup> There is no *mātikā* as such printed at the beginning of the text. See p. 105 below.

<sup>9</sup> *Tathāgatena śhapita-mātikāṃ vibhajanto* (Kv-a 7, 2—3).

<sup>10</sup> Moh 257—77.

from the Theravādins, but not long before. The two sects agree closely in their Vinaya-piṭakas and Sutta-piṭakas, but beyond agreeing about the number of Abhidhamma texts, and the title of one book, there is little agreement in their Abhidhamma-piṭakas.<sup>21</sup> The two collections are two sets of texts compiled by two sects who independently examined and elaborated the same subject matter.

Once the word *abhidhamma* had lost its original meaning, the commentaries interpreted it as "higher, special *dhmma*." At the beginning of the *Atthasālinī* Buddhaghosa asks himself what *abhidhamma* is, and answers the question as follows:

"Herein what is meant by 'Abhidhamma'? That which exceeds and is distinguished from the Dhamma (the Suttas). The prefix *abhi*, like *ati*, is used in the sense of preponderance and distinction, as in such passages as, 'Severe pains overwhelm (*abhiikkamanti*) me, brother, and do not abate,' and 'of eminent (*abhiikkantā*) beauty.' Again: Hence when many sunshades and flags are uplifted, the sunshade which excels the rest in size and is of distinguished colour and form is called *aticchattari* 'the pre-eminent sunshade,' and the flag which is the largest and is replete with various distinguished paints and colours is called *atidhaja* 'the pre-eminent flag' ... Even so this 'dhamma' is called Abhidhamma, because it excels and is distinguished by several qualities from the other Dhamma. In the Suttanta, the five aggregates are classified partially and not fully. In the Abhidhamma they are classified fully by the methods of Suttanta-classification, Abhidhamma-classification, and catechism ... In the Suttantas the four applications in mindfulness are partially classified, not fully. But in the Abhidhamma they are classified in detail under the three methods ... In the Suttantas knowledge is partially classified, not fully ... But in the Abhidhamma there is a detailed classification of knowledge after the table of contents [*mātikā*] has been thus laid down: 'Under the unitary method the basis of knowledge is ... and so forth ... Thus it is to be understood that the Abhidhamma exceeds and is distinguished from the Dhamma.'<sup>22</sup>

The order of texts in the Abhidhamma-piṭaka is, according to Buddhaghosa:<sup>23</sup> *Dhammasaṅgani*, *Vibhaṅga*, *Dhātukathā*, *Puggala-paññatti*, *Kathāvatthu*, *Yamaka*, and *Paṭṭhāna*, but in the Chinese translation of the *Samantapāsādikā*<sup>24</sup> the *Puggala-paññatti* and *Kathāvatthu* come after *Yamaka* and *Paṭṭhāna*. Buddhaghosa states<sup>25</sup> that the textual order of the Abhidhamma originated with Śāriputta, who also determined the numerical order in the *Paṭṭhāna*. He is reported to have done this to make it easy to learn, remember, study and teach the *dhmma*. To guard against accusations that this would mean that the Abhidhamma was not *Buddha-vacana*, Buddhaghosa goes on to say that Śāriputta was not the first to understand the Abhidhamma, for the Buddha was the first *ābhidhammika*.

<sup>21</sup> See WARDER, IB, p. 219.

<sup>22</sup> As 2, 13–3, 20.

<sup>23</sup> As 3, 21–23.

<sup>24</sup> P. V. BAPAT and A. HIRAKAWA (Eds.), *Shōn-Chien-Pi-P'o-Shi*, Poona 1970, p. 11.

<sup>25</sup> As 17, 12–14.

#### 4.1. *Dhammasaṅgani*

The *mātikā* of the *Dhammasaṅgani*<sup>26</sup> consists of a list of 22 triplets (*likas*), beginning with states that are good, bad, and indeterminate, and 100 couplets (*dukas*), beginning with states that are moral roots and not moral roots.<sup>27</sup> These various states (*dhmmā*) comprise all mental material conditions, and the *mātikā* is an outline of a universal system of classification comprising the whole analytical teaching of the Buddha.

The *Dhammasaṅgani* is a "Compilation of States", dealing with the enumeration and definition under particular group headings of these states, in accordance with the Buddha's different modes of analysis. The term *dhmma* is used in a broader sense than the word "state" in English, and comprises not only the discrete states of consciousness whose individual classification depends upon appropriately associated mental concomitants (*cetasikā*), but also those mental concomitants themselves. Material quality (*rūpa*), the four great essentials (*mahābhūti*), the dependent material qualities (*upādāya rūpā*), and even *nibbāna* (*asaṅkhata dhmma*) are included within this term.<sup>28</sup>

The greater part of the *Dhammasaṅgani* is an expansion of the *mātikā* in accordance with the system of analysis. So, to the question "What are good states?", the answer is given that when a good thought concerning the phenomenal world has arisen there is contact (*phassa*), feeling (*vedanā*), and 54 other states. These are then defined in detail, and then subjected to further analysis, with summaries given of the psychological functions involved in each. The whole analysis is then repeated for different types of thought, and then for the *jhānas*. The answer to the question consequently takes 66 pages.<sup>29</sup> The question "What are the bad states?" is answered more briefly, since it is discussed only in connection with twelve bad thoughts.<sup>30</sup>

The final section of the *Dhammasaṅgani*<sup>31</sup> serves as a commentary upon the text, although in the *Dhammasaṅgani* itself no reference is made to it being anything other than a genuine portion of the work.<sup>32</sup> Buddhaghosa, however, calls it *atthakathākaṇḍa*,<sup>33</sup> and gives it the name *atthuddhāra*.<sup>34</sup> He ascribes it to Śāriputta, and states that he uttered it for a pupil who was unable to remember the elucidation of the *Dhammasaṅgani*. He gives, however, an alternative story, informing us that the Mahā-atthakathā rejects Śāriputta's authorship and ascribes it to the Buddha himself.<sup>35</sup> It is stated in the

<sup>26</sup> Ed. E. MÜLLER, PTS London, 1885. Tr. Mrs C. A. F. RHYS DAVIDS, *Buddhist Psychological Ethics*, London 1900.

<sup>27</sup> Dhs 1–8.

<sup>28</sup> See IGGLEDEN, *Vibh* tr., p. xvii.

<sup>29</sup> Dhs 9–75.

<sup>30</sup> Dhs 75–87.

<sup>31</sup> Dhs 234–64.

<sup>32</sup> See Mrs RHYS DAVIDS, *Dhs* tr., p. 334.

<sup>33</sup> As 409, 22.

<sup>34</sup> As 6, 38.

<sup>35</sup> As 410, 1–10.



Dipavamsa<sup>36</sup> that the Atthuddhāra was one of the texts rejected by the Mahāsāṅghikas when they split from the Theravādins. This may mean that this portion of commentary did not exist at the time of the schism, or was not yet accepted as canonical. If the Sinhalese commentarial tradition accepted it as *Buddhavacana*, it is probable that it had already been included in the Dhammasaṅgaṇi by the time of the third council.<sup>37</sup>

## 4.2. Vibhaṅga

There were a number of topics to which the Buddha devoted particular attention in some of his discourses, to which a special degree of further analysis could be afforded, to show that not only could a general statement be made about the subject, but further enquiry would show that the statement of general truth could also be a statement of particular truth.<sup>38</sup> These topics included the five *khandhas*, the *āyatana*s, the *dhātus*, the four truths, the *indriya*s, etc. The beginnings of this type of analysis can be found in a number of *vibhaṅgasuttas* in the Majjhima-nikāya.<sup>39</sup>

The Vibhaṅga<sup>40</sup> has eighteen chapters, most of which have three sections: Suttanta-bhājanīya, Abhidhamma-bhājanīya, and Pañhāpucchaka (catechism). In the Suttanta-bhājanīya portion the method of analysis and the definitions used by the Buddha in general discourses are shown, and some of these analyses are found elsewhere in the canon, e.g. that of the Saccavibhaṅga is found in the Saccavibhaṅgasutta of the Majjhima-nikāya (141),<sup>41</sup> with the difference that there it is a discourse put in the mouth of Sāriputta, whereas in the Vibhaṅga it is an impersonal set of questions and answers. In the Abhidhamma-bhājanīya we find the technical analysis and the definitions employed when the same matter is discussed from a strictly philosophical point of view. In the chapters which have a Pañhāpucchaka section there is an explanation in detail of how each of the special terms used are to be defined within the framework of triplets and couplets which is enumerated in the Dhammasaṅgaṇi.

The Vibhaṅga does not have a *mātikā* at the beginning, although the Mohaviechedanī, which is a commentary upon the *mātikās*, takes the titles of the titles of the sections as forming a *mātikā*.<sup>42</sup> There are, however, separate *mātikās* occurring in four of the *vibhaṅgas*.<sup>43</sup>

<sup>36</sup> Dip V 37.

<sup>37</sup> See K. R. NORMAN, "Four etymologies from the Sabhiya-sutta," in BALASOORIYA, BSWR, p. 184 n. 33.

<sup>38</sup> See IGLEDEN, Vibh tr., p. xviii.

<sup>39</sup> See M III 187–257 (Vibhaṅga-vagga).

<sup>40</sup> Ed. Mrs C. A. F. RHYS DAVIDS, PTS London, 1904. Tr. U THITILA, The Book of Analysis, PTS London, 1969, with a long introduction by R. E. IGLEDEN.

<sup>41</sup> M III 249–52.

<sup>42</sup> Moh 116–230.

<sup>43</sup> Paccavāṅkāravibhaṅga (138–43); Jhānavibhaṅga (244–45); Śāṇavibhaṅga (306–18); Khuddakavattuvibhaṅga (345–49).

The last three *vibhaṅgas* merit comment. The 16th and 17th differ from the earlier *vibhaṅgas* in that they are numerical. The 16th deals with *āṇa*, and collects together the very many groupings into which this subject may be classified in connection with the Buddha's purpose.<sup>44</sup> The classification varies in extent from a single to a tenfold system of grouping. The first, second, and third depend very largely upon the triplet and couplet sections of the Dhammasaṅgaṇi, and are therefore similar in construction to the Pañhāpucchaka section of many other *vibhaṅgas*. The 17th *vibhaṅga* deals with small items (Khuddakavattuvibhaṅga), and approaches the matter of the bad states in a numerical system of classification similar to that found in the 16th *vibhaṅga*. The change of style found in these two *vibhaṅgas* perhaps indicates that they are later than the first fifteen.

The same suggestion has been made about the 18th *vibhaṅga* (Dhammahadaya-vibhaṅga),<sup>45</sup> for it does not contain the three divisions found in most other *vibhaṅgas*. Instead of dealing with a single topic,<sup>46</sup> it concerns itself with an analysis in terms of certain of the triplets and couplets of the Dhammasaṅgaṇi of twelve of the most important matters of the Buddha's teaching, e.g. *khandhas*, *āyatana*s, *dhātus*, and truths. The first five to be discussed have already been examined in the first five chapters of the Vibhaṅga, but the method of approach is somewhat different. It seems to be intended not as a substitute or summary of what has already been given, but as a necessary supplement to it.

## 4.3. Dhātukathā

Although the Vibhaṅga devotes a whole chapter to the analysis of the elements (*dhātus*), the subject itself is of such an intricate and far-reaching nature that particular and detailed attention to its technicalities is required.<sup>47</sup> This great expansion of the analysis of the elements forms the contents of the Dhātukathā,<sup>48</sup> which forms the third volume of the Abhidhamma-piṭaka, and also the third volume, with the Dhammasaṅgaṇi and the Vibhaṅga, of what may be regarded as a sort of trilogy.

It is a short text of 14 chapters, in the form of questions and answers about the elements of psychical phenomena and their mutual relations. The *mātikā*<sup>49</sup> gives the 14 methods, viz. classification and unclassification (*saṃgaho asaṃgaho*), classified and unclassified (*saṃgahitena asaṃgahitena*), etc., under which

<sup>44</sup> IGLEDEN, Vibh tr., p. lxiv.

<sup>45</sup> See H. NAKAMURA, Indian Buddhism: a survey with bibliographical notes, KUFU Publication Japan, 1980, p. 104 n. 10.

<sup>46</sup> IGLEDEN, Vibh tr., p. lxviii.

<sup>47</sup> IGLEDEN, Vibh tr., p. xxi.

<sup>48</sup> Ed. E. R. GOONERATNE, PTS London, 1892. Tr. U NĀRADA, Discourse on Elements, PTS London, 1962, with a preface by THEIN NYUN.

<sup>49</sup> Dhātuk 1.

the internal and external states will be considered, and then lists the 105 internal states, viz. the five *khandhas*, the twelve *āyatanas*, etc., and states that the external states are the 22 triplets and 100 couplets of the *Dhammasaṅgani mātikā*. It also gives the principles of the methods and their characteristics.

The text itself is a working out of the *mātikā*, whereby all the states are classified under the aggregates (*khandhas*), bases (*āyatanas*) and elements (*dhātus*). Although the elements are also dealt with in the *Dhātuvibhaṅga* of the *Vibhaṅga*, and in the *Dhātuyamaka* of the *Yamaka*, the treatment there is in much less detail. The system employed in the *Dhātukathā* has been described as a most beautiful piece of work in the mathematical sense, a work of precision and analytical exactness.<sup>50</sup>

The text was expounded in order to dispel wrong ideas about individuality (*attā*).<sup>51</sup> It deals with the states (*dharmas*), which are the only things to be found, under the categories of *khandhas*, *āyatanas*, and *dhātus*, which are all *anattā* (non-self). Therefore there is no *attā*, but only the rising and passing away of states which are either aggregates, bases, or elements.

#### 4.4. *Puggala-paññatti*

Despite its presence in the *Abhidhamma-piṭaka*, the *Puggala-paññatti*<sup>52</sup> owes much, in both form and content, to the *Sutta-piṭaka*. The non-metaphysical nature of the book is emphasised by the fact that in it *puggala* is not used in the sense of "underlying personality" (that is almost synonymous with *attā*), which is found in the *Kathāvatthu* and the *Milindapañha*, but simply in the sense of "person, individual". This possibly supports the view that the *Puggala-paññatti* is the earliest of the *Abhidhamma* texts.<sup>53</sup>

The text shows signs of having been earlier a work of the *Vibhaṅga* type, for the *mātikā*<sup>54</sup> begins with the statement that there are six *paññattis*, viz. those of the *khandhas*, the *āyatanas*, the *dhātus*, the *saccas*, the *indriyas* and the *puggalas*. It then goes on to list the five *khandhas*, the 12 *āyatanas*, the 18 *dhātus*, the four truths, the 26 *indriyas*, and all the *puggalas* in classes from one to ten. The text itself, however, goes on to explain only the *puggalas* in detail. The form is very similar to that of the *Saṅgītisutta* of the *Dīghanikāya* (33), and a portion of the *cattāro puggalā* section is identical with the *cattāro puggalā* section of the *Saṅgītisutta*.<sup>55</sup> Similarly there are parallels with the *satta* and *aṭṭha puggalā* sections.<sup>56</sup>

<sup>50</sup> See rev. of *Dhātuk tr.*, by R. E. IGGLEDEN, *JRAS* 1964, pp. 78–79.

<sup>51</sup> See THEIN NYUN, *Dhātuk tr.*, pp. xxviii–xxix.

<sup>52</sup> Ed. R. MORRIS, PTS London, 1883. Tr. B. C. LAW, *Designation of Human Types*, PTS London, 1924; (German) NYĀNATILOKA, *Das Buch der Charaktere*, Breslau 1911.

<sup>53</sup> See T. W. RHYS DAVIDS, *Buddhist India*, London 1903, p. 188.

<sup>54</sup> Pp 1–10.

<sup>55</sup> D III 232–33.

<sup>56</sup> See MORRIS, Pp. pp. ix–x.

In the text itself of the *Puggala-paññatti* there are repetitions, inasmuch as the groups of nine and ten merely repeat a list of nine or ten already found in the list of ones. Much of the content of the text is taken from elsewhere, e.g. the *layo*, *cattāro* and *pañca puggalā* sections are almost the same as passages which occur in the *tika*-, *catukka*-, and *pañcaka-nipālas* of the *Ānguttara-nikāya*.<sup>57</sup> The text gives the impression of being a collection of most of the statements made about "person" in the *Sutta-piṭaka*.<sup>58</sup>

The book probably represents the results of the disputes which took place in early Buddhism about the nature of the "person", and which are referred to in the first section of the *Kathāvatthu*. The Theravādins came to the conclusion that the *puggala* had no reality, was not one of the *dharmas*, but was a mere concept (*paññatti*). It was therefore not correct for it to be included in the *Vibhaṅga*, which dealt with the real *dharmas* which existed, but it was made into a text by itself. The title "the concept of a person" shows that to the Theravādins the subject was unreal.

#### 4.5. *Kathāvatthu*

The *Kathāvatthu*<sup>59</sup> is unique among canonical Pāli texts in that it is the only one for which tradition gives us both an author and a date of composition, because the early chronicles state<sup>60</sup> that at the time of the third council the elder Tissa set forth the *Kathāvatthupparakāra*, to refute the heretical doctrines.

This led to a situation where not all the Theravādin schools accepted the text as part of the canon, and Buddhaghosa is at pains to assert its canonical nature in reply to the Vīṭṭṭins' objections<sup>61</sup> that it was uttered by Tissa. He asserts that the table of contents was drawn up by the Buddha, foreseeing that it would be elaborated by Tissa. Consequently Tissa expounded the book not by his own knowledge, but according to the table of contents laid down, and the method given, by the Buddha. Hence the whole book became the word of the Buddha (*Buddha-bhāsita*).<sup>62</sup> The justification is exactly the same as that given for the *Madhupindakasutta* of the *Majjhima-nikāya* (18) and other *suttas*, namely that (in that particular case) Mahākaccāna had answered in exactly the same way as the Buddha would have done, had he been asked. It is possible that Tissa made use of a structure employed by the Buddha and perhaps arguments put forward by him, e.g. in the first statement entitled *Puggalakathā*.

<sup>57</sup> See MORRIS, Pp. pp. x–xii.

<sup>58</sup> WARDER, IB, p. 302.

<sup>59</sup> Ed. A. C. TAYLOR, PTS London, Vol. I, 1894; Vol. II, 1897. Tr. S. Z. ARUNO and Mrs C. A. F. RHYS DAVIDS, *Points of Controversy*, PTS London, 1915.

<sup>60</sup> Dip VII 41; Mhv V 278.

<sup>61</sup> *Vīṭṭṭavādī pan' āha: Kathāvatthum kasmā gahitaṃ?* (As 3, 25–26).

<sup>62</sup> As 5, 32.



The Kathāvatthu consists of a discussion of certain statements, of which 500 were orthodox and 500 were unorthodox, according to Buddhaghosa,<sup>63</sup> although a modern authority states<sup>64</sup> that it contains the refutation of 252 heretical statements. The work is set out in 23 sections, each dealing with between five and twelve questions. The discussion is set in a framework of question and answer, although it is not always possible to be certain whether the protagonist in each discussion is the Theravādin opponent or the heretic. The commentary usually, but not always, indicates who is speaking.

There is no indication in the Kathāvatthu itself of the names of the propagators of the heresies which are being refuted. These are supplied by Buddhaghosa in his commentary,<sup>65</sup> and it has often been pointed out<sup>66</sup> that some of the heresies being refuted are ascribed by him to sects whose origins are usually dated many centuries later than Asoka. There is, however, no need in principle to assume that some of the heresies cannot be as early as the date normally given for the composition of the Kathāvatthu, simply because the schools to which they are attributed did not exist before the first century B.C. Very few of the heresies seem to be anything more than obvious quibbles, which the audience to any sermon could have raised. The date of their adoption by a recognised sect could well have been much later.

The framework of the dialogue is stereotyped and abbreviated, which means that it would have been a simple matter to add refutations of new heresies as they arose, merely by following the pattern of dialogue employed. The latest date for the addition of such refutations was probably the first century B.C., when the canon was written down, or the time of the closing of the commentary upon the Kathāvatthu, i.e. the Sinhalese commentary upon which Buddhaghosa's was based, after which time any insertions would be obvious. There is, however, no need to doubt that the structure itself, and the first few heresies which are refuted, are old. The first section (Puggalakathā) deals<sup>67</sup> with the non-existence of a permanent individuality (*puggala*), which was one of the Buddha's most important teachings. The second section<sup>68</sup> deals with the refutation of a number of points about the nature of an *arahant* which so closely resemble what is stated in other traditions to have been the cause of the schism<sup>69</sup> which followed the second council that there can be no doubt that they are datable to a century or more before the time of Asoka.

The Kathāvatthu is noteworthy for the number of so-called "Māgadhisms" it contains, especially the nominative singular masculine form in -e. An ana-

<sup>63</sup> *Sakavāde pañca suttasatāni paravāde pañca* (As 6, 4).

<sup>64</sup> GEIGER, PLL, p. 6.

<sup>65</sup> See p. 125 below.

<sup>66</sup> See Mrs RHYS DAVIDS, Kv tr., p. xxxiii.

<sup>67</sup> For the methodology of Kv and the method of debate, see JAYAWICERAMA, Kv-a, pp. xvii-xxi.

<sup>68</sup> Kv 163-204.

<sup>69</sup> See L. DE LA VALLÉE POUSSIN, "The 'five points' of Mahādeva and the Kathāvatthu," in JRAS 1916, pp. 413-23.

lysis<sup>70</sup> of these forms indicates that except for repeated occurrences of one stock phrase, all the statements, heretical and otherwise, are in Pāli. The -e forms are in the framework, where there is a consistent pattern of both -o and -e forms. This gives the impression that there must have been at an earlier time a structure in which the two dialects, viz. Pāli and Māgadhī, were completely differentiated, doubtless to make a clear distinction between the two speakers. This probably means that Tissa was using a structure which was already stereotyped in his time, and perhaps did in fact go back to the time of the Buddha, or at least to the second council.

The Kathāvatthu includes more canonical quotations than any other Pāli canonical text. It quotes from the Vinaya and the Sutta-piṭaka, including nine texts of the Khuddaka-nikāya. It also quotes from the Dhammasaṅgapi and the Vibhaṅga of the Abhidhamma-piṭaka.<sup>71</sup> There are, however, a few discrepancies in these quotations from the texts as they exist today,<sup>72</sup> which perhaps means that they were being quoted from another recension, or that the author was quoting from memory.

#### 4.6. Yamaka

The Yamaka<sup>73</sup> is a book on applied logic, and the name "book of pairs" is derived from the fact that all phenomena are considered in the light of a particular thesis and its opposite antithesis. It enables a student to check whether all examples of a phenomenon are covered by a statement, or only some of them, e.g. does the statement "All X is Y" mean that all Y is X?

The text is in ten chapters called Yamakas. Although the printed edition does not have a *mātikā* as such, the commentary treats the chapter titles as though they formed a *mātikā*,<sup>74</sup> and the Mahaviṇchedanī confirms that this is a ten-fold *mātikā*.<sup>75</sup> The title of each Yamaka explains the subjects to be discussed in it: Mūla, dealing with the roots of *kusala* and *akusala dhammas*; Khandha with the five *khandhas*; Āyatana with the twelve *āyatanas*; Dhātu with the 18 elements; Sacca with the four noble truths; Saṃkhāra with the three *saṃkhāras* (*kāya*-, *vacī*- and *citta-saṃkhāra*); Anusaya with the inclinations; Citta with the mind and mental states; Dhāmma with *kusala* and *akusala dhammas*; and Indriya with the 22 *indriyas*.

With the exception of the Mūla-yamaka and the Anusaya-yamaka, the method of treatment in each chapter is threefold.<sup>76</sup> There is first a Paṇṇattivāra,

<sup>70</sup> See K. R. NORMAN, "Māgadhisms in the Kathāvatthu," in NARAYN, SPB, pp. 279-87.

<sup>71</sup> See AUNG and RHYS DAVIDS, Kv tr., pp. 401-404.

<sup>72</sup> See *ibid.*, p. xxx n. 3, and cf. Kv 351, 18-21 with Khp IX 9.

<sup>73</sup> Ed. Mrs C. A. F. RHYS DAVIDS, PTS London, Vol. I, 1911; Vol. II, 1913.

<sup>74</sup> Yam-a 52, 9-13.

<sup>75</sup> Moh 278, 2-4.

<sup>76</sup> Yam I, pp. xix-xxi.

in which the term and its concept are delimited, with a division into the *uddesavāra*, which states only the questions, and the *niddesavāra*, which repeats the questions with their various answers. The main part of the chapter is called in the commentary the *Pavattivāra*. This seems to refer not to procedure generally, but to living process, and considers the problem of where and as what the individual will be reborn. The *Pariññāvāra* deals with the extent to which a given individual, i.e. a class of beings, understands the category under consideration.

It has been suggested<sup>77</sup> that such a text, which seems to be intended for someone who has already studied the system, but wishes to become fully competent in it, is perhaps the latest of the books in the *Abhidhamma-piṭaka*.

#### 4.7. *Paṭṭhāna*

The *Paṭṭhāna*<sup>78</sup> is the last and longest book of the *Abhidhamma-piṭaka*. It deals with the 22 triplets (*tikas*) and 100 couplets (*dukkas*) of the *Dhamma-saṅgani*, i.e. all the realities, with reference to the 24 conditions (*paccayas*). It aims to show how the causes and their results are related. In the *Paṭṭhāna*, the *dhammas* in the form of triplets, couplets, couplet-triplet combinations, triplet-couplet combinations, triplet-triplet combinations, and couplet-couplet combinations are treated by four methods: positive, negative, positive-negative and negative-positive. The triplets, etc., are dealt with under seven headings: dependent, co-nascent, conditional, supported, conjoined, associated, and investigation. Under each heading the relations between the conditioning states and the conditioned states of the conditions involved in each state are treated.

The text consists of a *mātikā*,<sup>79</sup> listing the 24 conditions, viz. *hetu*, *ārammaṇa*, *adhipati*, etc.; a questions chapter; and then the triplets followed by the couplets, etc. In the questions chapter, the questions are asked taking the conditions singly, and then by twos, by threes, etc., up to the maximum combination of 24, referring to each of the seven ways of taking the triplet (i.e. the seven combinations of each), in relation to each way of taking the triplet, by the four methods, viz. positive, negative, etc., and under the seven headings, viz. dependent, co-nascent, etc. If all the possible combinations were taken, there would be about half a billion questions,<sup>80</sup> but not all can be answered, e.g. for the 49 questions obtained by combining the first (= *hetu*) condition with dependent heading, in the positive, only nine answers are obtained. In

<sup>77</sup> See WARDER, IB, p. 302.

<sup>78</sup> Ed. Mrs C. A. F. REYS DAVIDS, *Dukapattāna*, PTS London, 1906; *Tika-pattāna*, PTS London, Vol. I, 1921; Vol. II, 1922; Vol. III, 1923. Tr. U NĀRADA, *Conditional Relations*, PTS London, Vol. I, 1969; Vol. II, 1981. See also U NĀRADA, *Guide to Conditional Relations*, PTS London, Part I, 1979.

<sup>79</sup> See U NĀRADA, *Paṭṭh tr.*, Vol. I, p. 1.

<sup>80</sup> See *ibid.*, p. xv.

the classification (*vibhaṅga*) section these are dealt with at length, but in the enumeration (*saṅkhyā*) section only the numbers are given.

The text does not give all the questions and answers, but only those necessary for illustrating the types of the questions. So, only the 49 questions for the first condition, taken singly, are given in full, the remainder being abbreviated, although the numbers are given in the enumeration chapter. These chapters are very difficult to understand, since they consist mostly of numerals. Since the enumeration chapters of the *Paṭṭhāna* list arithmetically the numbers of answers to each question, the exposition of this subject is very susceptible to presentation by charts.<sup>81</sup>

#### 4.8. *The Abhidharma in Sanskrit*

As already noted,<sup>82</sup> the *Sarvāstivādin*s possessed an *Abhidharma-piṭaka*, which like the *Theravādin* *Abhidhamma-piṭaka* contained seven texts. An examination of the titles of these texts,<sup>83</sup> however, shows that only one, viz. the *Dhātukāya*, resembles any of the *Theravādin* texts, and we must either assume that the number seven in each collection is a coincidence, or deduce that the *Sarvāstivādin*s were aware of the number of texts in the *Theravādin* *Abhidhamma-piṭaka* and deliberately rejected their texts and replaced them by new ones after the schism.<sup>84</sup>

One of the *Sarvāstivādin* texts is entitled *Saṅgiti-paryāya*, and is attributed to Śāriputra in the Chinese translations, but to Mahā-kauṣṭhila in Sanskrit and Tibetan sources.<sup>85</sup> This text seems to be a commentary upon the *Saṅgitisutta* of the *Dīgha-nikāya* (33), which is also attributed to Śāriputta.<sup>86</sup> A fragment has been found at Bamiyan and published,<sup>87</sup> and more fragments have been discovered in Turkestan.<sup>88</sup>

<sup>81</sup> See *ibid.*, between pp. lxiv and lxv.

<sup>82</sup> See p. 17 above.

<sup>83</sup> See J. TAKAKUSU, "On the *Abhidharma* literature of the *Sarvāstivādin*s," in *JPTS* 1904–1905, pp. 66–146.

<sup>84</sup> See WARDER, IB, p. 219.

<sup>85</sup> See TAKAKUSU, *JPTS* 1904–1905, between pp. 74 and 75.

<sup>86</sup> See WARDER, IB, p. 219.

<sup>87</sup> See S. LÉVI, "Note sur des manuscrits sanscrits provenant de Bamiyan (Afghanistan), et de Gilgit (Cachemire)," in *JA* 1932, pp. 1–45.

<sup>88</sup> See VALENTINA STACHE-ROSEN, *Das Saṅgītisūtra und sein Kommentar Saṅgītiparyāya*, Berlin 1968 (STT, IX).



## CHAPTER III

## EARLY POST-CANONICAL TEXTS

## 1. EARLY PROSE TEXTS

It seems clear that early in the history of Buddhism a need was felt for guidance on how to interpret *suttas*, so that those *bhikkhus* who wished to teach and explain the *Dhamma* to their followers might be able to do so. The result of this need was the production of two works which are in effect treatises upon hermeneutics, offering instructions for analysing, construing, investigating, and identifying common themes in the *Dhamma*, so that anyone wishing to interpret could derive from the texts a correct understanding of the meaning of the *Dhamma*.<sup>1</sup>

The *Petaḥapadesa*<sup>2</sup> seems to be the earlier of these two works. Its name presupposes a *piṭaka* of which it is the *upadesa*.<sup>3</sup> As already noted,<sup>4</sup> the word *piṭaka* occurs very rarely in the canon in the metaphorical sense of "a basket of scriptures," but it is not applied to the Buddha's teachings. Since the word *peṭakīn* occurs in inscriptions of the second century B.C., there would be no objection to dating the *Petaḥapadesa* to that century, or even earlier. There is nothing in the text to suggest any connection with Ceylon, and it was probably composed in India.<sup>5</sup>

The work is ascribed to Kaccāna,<sup>6</sup> but if it was in fact composed by an author of that name, then the need to date the work some time after the completion of the canon means that it cannot be the Kaccāna who was a disciple of the Buddha. Since that Kaccāna was renowned for his analytical powers,<sup>7</sup> it is perhaps not surprising that a book entirely devoted to analysis should be attributed to him. It is probably this attribution which has led to the *Petaḥapadesa* being regarded as canonical in Burma.<sup>8</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See G. D. BOND, "The nature and meaning of the *Netti-Pakaraṇa*," in *NARAIN*, SPB, p. 30.

<sup>2</sup> Ed. ARABINDA BARUA, PTS London, 1949. Tr. BHICKHU NĀṆAMOLI. The *Pitaka-Dislosure*, PTS London, 1964.

<sup>3</sup> NĀṆAMOLI, *Peṭ* tr., p. xi.

<sup>4</sup> See p. 16 above.

<sup>5</sup> NĀṆAMOLI, *Peṭ* tr., p. xi.

<sup>6</sup> See *Peṭ*, p. ii.

<sup>7</sup> *Etad aggaṃ bhikkhave mama sāvakaṇaṃ bhikkhūnaṃ ... saṅkhitena bhāsitaṃ viññārena aṭṭhaṃ vibhajanānaṃ yadidaṃ Mahā-Kaccāno* (A I 23, 27-29).

<sup>8</sup> See BOND, PLB, p. 5.

Little is known about the history of the text. Buddhaghosa quotes a passage from a text he calls *Peṭaka*,<sup>9</sup> but the quotation he gives is not in our modern editions. He was perhaps quoting from a different text, with a similar name, or from a different recension of our text,<sup>10</sup> or it is possible that the sentence he quotes occurred in a passage which is now missing. The commentator *Dhammapāla* states that he has collated the *Petaḥapadesa* with the *Nettipakaraṇa*<sup>11</sup> before writing his commentary upon the latter text, but at some later date the *Petaḥapadesa* must have fallen into disuse, doubtless as a result of being eclipsed by its successor, and the manuscript tradition must have been very close to extinction. All available editions of the work must go back to a single manuscript, for they all show the same corruption, arising from the inclusion of a portion of the *Sumaṅgalavilāsiṇi*, from which a page of a manuscript must have intruded at some time without being noticed.<sup>12</sup>

The method the *Petaḥapadesa* teaches is conceived simply for the purpose of the correct rewording of known ideas. It is intended to help those who already know intellectually the Buddha's word and the ideas it promulgates. It is not intended to discover anything new, or to prove any conclusion at all. It is aimed at those who, knowing the Buddha's *Dhamma*, wish to explain it and expand it for the benefit of those who do not know but wish to learn. Its purpose is to avoid wrong exegesis, which may lead to contradictions and departures from the teaching.

The method follows the following pattern.<sup>13</sup> Since any individual "thread" (*sutta*) of the Buddha's teaching must, when reworded in explanation of it, be reworded in agreement with the teaching as a whole, and not in conflict with it, and since the teaching as a whole is enormously bulky, sixteen modes (*hāras*) of conveying a communication are set up, so as to represent the teaching as a whole. When an individual thread is expanded and explained in accordance with these sixteen *hāras*, the resulting new material should thereby avoid conflict with the teaching as a whole. The *hāras* deal only with phrasing. For guiding the phrases, when established in this acceptable way, to the meaning-as-aim, viz. liberation from suffering, which is prescribed by the teaching as a whole, five guide lines (*nayas*) are set out to guide the tested phrasing to the verbal expression of its meaning-as-aim.

Although early Western scholars thought that the *Nettipakaraṇa* was merely a commentary, it is clear that it is, like the *Petaḥapadesa*, a guide to those who wished to write commentaries, or give explanations of canonical texts.<sup>14</sup> A close comparison of the two texts shows that they are very similar

<sup>9</sup> *Vism* 141, 13 = *As* 165, 32 = *Sp* 143, 29. See NĀṆAMOLI, *Peṭ* tr., p. 400.

<sup>10</sup> See NĀṆAMOLI, *Nett* tr., p. xiii n. 18 and p. xv n. 22.

<sup>11</sup> *Peṭakendāpi samsandeva* (*Nett*-a quoted at *Nett*, p. x).

<sup>12</sup> See NĀṆAMOLI, *Nett* tr., pp. xiv-xvi.

<sup>13</sup> See *ibid.*, p. viii.

<sup>14</sup> See *ibid.*, p. vii.

in content.<sup>15</sup> The material which is found in the *Peṭakopadesa*, but not in the *Nettipakaraṇa*, seems sufficiently unimportant to the method for its omission to be justified. The material found in both seems to be in an improved form in the *Nettipakaraṇa*. It therefore seems correct to conclude that neither text is a continuation of the other, but that the *Nettipakaraṇa* is a rewritten version of the *Peṭakopadesa*. Its superiority would explain why it has a commentary by Dhammapāla, while the *Peṭakopadesa* has no commentary. It seems inconceivable that anyone who has read the *Nettipakaraṇa* could then go on to write the *Peṭakopadesa*, while the converse seems quite reasonable.

The fact that the *Nettipakaraṇa*<sup>16</sup> contains verses composed in the *Āryā* metre<sup>17</sup> implies that these portions, at least, of the text were composed in North India<sup>18</sup> at some time prior to the introduction of the text into Ceylon. For it is clear that the knowledge of the *Āryā* metre was lost in Ceylon.<sup>19</sup> Since the use of the metre was lost in Pāli at an early date, it is likely that the verses must have been composed at some time before the beginning of the Christian era. This, of course, implies a date earlier than this for the composition of the *Peṭakopadesa*. Like the *Peṭakopadesa*, the *Nettipakaraṇa* is regarded as canonical in Burma.<sup>20</sup> It is ascribed to Kaccāna,<sup>21</sup> who is identified with the Buddha's disciple by the commentator Dhammapāla.

The influence of the *Nettipakaraṇa* and, through it, of the *Peṭakopadesa* is great. Buddhaghosa makes use of its method, and many of the technical terms and normative details employed by him and other commentators are borrowed from it.<sup>22</sup> Buddhaghosa, on occasion, quotes from it.<sup>23</sup>

Another early prose text for which an Indian provenance has been surmised is the *Milindapañha*,<sup>24</sup> which gives an account of a dialogue between the Greek king Milinda (= Menander) and the *thera* Nāgasena. Nothing is known certainly about the origin of this text. An earlier limit for its date of composition is given by the fact that Menander ruled in the middle of the second century B.C.,<sup>25</sup> while it must have been completed by the fifth century A.D., since

<sup>15</sup> See *ibid.*, pp. xvii–xviii.

<sup>16</sup> Ed. E. HARDY, PTS London, 1902. Tr. BHICKHU NĀṆAMOLI, *The Guide*, PTS London, 1962.

<sup>17</sup> Nett I, 4–13.

<sup>18</sup> A North Indian origin is also suggested by the number of unidentified verses it contains. See HORNER, *Mil tr.*, I, p. xv.

<sup>19</sup> See ALSOP, *Thi* (Appendix II), p. 233.

<sup>20</sup> See BODE, *PLB*, p. 5.

<sup>21</sup> See Nett, pp. viii–ix, and NĀṆAMOLI, *Nett tr.*, pp. x–xii.

<sup>22</sup> See NĀṆAMOLI, *Nett tr.*, pp. liii–liv.

<sup>23</sup> E.g. Ps I 31, 8.

<sup>24</sup> Ed. V. TRECKNER, London, 1880. Tr. T. W. RHYS DAVIDS, *The Questions of King Milinda*, London. Vol. I. 1890; Vol. II 1894 (= SBE Vols XXXV, XXXVI); I. B. HORNER, *Milinda's Questions*, SBB London, Vol. I, 1963; Vol. II, 1964; (French) L. FÉROT, (Books I–III), Paris 1923; (German) F. O. SCHRADER, (Books I–III), Berlin 1905; *Nyāṣāṭhoka*, München 1919.

<sup>25</sup> For suggestions about the date of Menander see HORNER, *Mil tr.*, I, pp. xxii–

Buddhaghosa quotes from it,<sup>26</sup> and clearly regards it as authoritative. Since the words he quotes do not agree entirely with the text as we have it, it is not absolutely certain that the text he had available to him was identical with ours.

From the facts that Menander's kingdom was in North-West India,<sup>27</sup> his ministers have names which can in some cases be related to genuine Greek names,<sup>28</sup> some knowledge of a typical Greek city is shown,<sup>29</sup> all geographical details relate to North India,<sup>30</sup> and there are one or two words and phrases in the text which do not follow the usual pattern of Pāli,<sup>31</sup> it has been assumed that the *Milindapañha* is a Pāli translation from a Sanskrit or Prakrit original composed in North India about the beginning of the Christian era.<sup>32</sup> There is also a Chinese version, which can be dated to a time earlier than the fourth century A.D.<sup>33</sup> Since it differs somewhat from the Pāli version, it has been thought to be based upon the (hypothetical) Sanskrit version. It has also been suggested that the original of the *Milindapañha* was in fact written in Greek.<sup>34</sup>

It is clear that the text is made up of material composed at different times. From the fact that the words *Milindapañhānam pucchāvissajjanā samattā* occur at the end of Book III,<sup>35</sup> it has been deduced that this was the end of the original portion of the *Milindapañha*, but it is possible to see that even in this short portion there are insertions. There is a reference to the six teachers<sup>36</sup> which is entirely anachronistic, since it refers to conditions at the time of the Buddha, and is based upon the *Sāmaññaphalasutta* of the *Dīgha-nikāya* (2). There are also sections<sup>37</sup> dealing with the earlier births of Milinda and Nāgasena, and a biography of Nāgasena from his conception to the attainment of *arahant*-ship.

xxiv. W. W. TARN, *The Greeks in Bactria and India*, Cambridge 1938, pp. 225–28, suggests that he reigned c. 161–150/145 B.C.

<sup>26</sup> See the list of correspondences given by HORNER, *Mil tr.*, I, p. xx.

<sup>27</sup> Milinda is said to have approached Nāgasena at Sāgalā, which is perhaps the modern Siālkot. See HORNER, *Mil tr.*, I, p. 1 n. 3.

<sup>28</sup> See RHYS DAVIDS, *Mil tr.*, I, p. xix, and TARN, *op. cit.* (in n. 25), pp. 422–23.

<sup>29</sup> See TARN, *op. cit.* (in n. 25), pp. 419–20.

<sup>30</sup> There is mention of Alasanda, Kasmira and the village of Kalasi (*Mil* 82–83).

<sup>31</sup> TRECKNER points out (*Mil*, p. vii) that the opening phrase *tamyathā 'nusūyate* is found in no other Pāli writing, and it is only in *Mil* that quotations are introduced by *bhavati*. The word *datta* 'sicklo' (*Mil* 33, 3) with an unexpected long vowel before a geminate consonant must also be a borrowing from a non-Pāli dialect. See R. L. TURNER, *Collected Papers*: 1912–1973, pp. 432–34.

<sup>32</sup> See RHYS DAVIDS, *Mil tr.*, I, p. xi.

<sup>33</sup> See P. DEMÉVILLE, "Les versions chinoises du *Milindapañha*," in *BEFEO*, 24 (1924), pp. 1–258.

<sup>34</sup> See TARN, *op. cit.* (in n. 25), pp. 414–36.

<sup>35</sup> *Mil* 89. 17. See WINTERNITZ, *HIL*, p. 176.

<sup>36</sup> *Mil* 4. 15–5. 30.

<sup>37</sup> See WINTERNITZ, *HIL*, p. 178 n. 1.



In the remaining sections of this older part, the king puts forward problems about human identity<sup>38</sup> and the continuity of human existence, and Nāgasena solves them. Books IV–VII<sup>39</sup> are different in style, and are clearly later than the first portion and probably by a different author. Since Buddhaghosa quotes from this later part, it must have been composed before the fifth century A. D., but there is no way of telling how much before. This portion of the Milindapañha deals with the solution of puzzles which arise from apparently contradictory statements made by the Buddha. These are presented in the form of 82 dilemmas put to Nāgasena by Milinda. The texts from which extracts are quoted in these puzzles include the greater part of the canon,<sup>40</sup> and reveal the wide breadth of knowledge of the author of this portion of the text.

There are other indications in the Milindapañha that the tradition which lies behind it differs somewhat from that of other Pāli texts. One problem which it raises is that of the presence in it of a number of verses which are attributed to *theras*, and yet are not found in the Thera- or Therīgāthā, or elsewhere in the canon.<sup>41</sup> These are quoted by the author of the Milindapañha with as much or as little authority as the other *theras'* verses he quotes. It seems likely that they were transmitted in some non-Theravādin, or at least some non-canonical Theravādin source,<sup>42</sup> perhaps in North India, which is no longer available to us. In support of the first suggestion is the fact that one feature included in the Milindapañha is very likely due to Sarvāstivādin influence.<sup>43</sup>

Although, as already noted, Buddhaghosa sometimes quotes from the Milindapañha by name, there are some verses in the Visuddhimagga and other commentaries which are identical with verses in the Milindapañha, but the latter text is not quoted as the source. On one occasion the verse is ascribed to the *porāṇas*,<sup>44</sup> and this perhaps indicates that both the Milindapañha and Buddhaghosa took it from the mass of floating verses in the commentarial tradition. The author of the Milindapañha was also acquainted with a school of Khuddaka-*bhāṇakas*,<sup>45</sup> which seem not to be mentioned by any other source.<sup>46</sup>

<sup>38</sup> Nāgasena's statement *na h' etha puggalo upalabbhati* (Mil 25, 12–13) is reminiscent of the first question of the Kathāvatthu: *puggalo upalabbhati saccakāṭṭha-paramatthenā ti* (Kv 1, 4).

<sup>39</sup> Mil 90–420.

<sup>40</sup> See RHYS DAVIDS, Mil tr., I, pp. xxvii–xxxvi, and HORNER, Mil tr., p. xi.

<sup>41</sup> These are discussed by HORNER, Mil tr., pp. xii–xv.

<sup>42</sup> See HORNER, Mil tr., p. xv.

<sup>43</sup> Nāgasena states (Mil 268 and 271) that both *nibbāna* and *ākāsa* are *akammaja*. The usual Theravādin teaching is that *nibbāna* alone is *asaṃkhata* (see HORNER, Mil tr., p. xviii). HORNER (p. xlii) comments on the fact that this particular tenet was allowed to remain in Mil, and was not expunged as being contrary to orthodox teaching. The Milindapañha is, in fact, regarded as canonical in Burma (see BODE, PLB, p. 4).

<sup>44</sup> Buddhaghosa attributes Vism 270, 16–18 to the *porāṇas*, while the same verse at Mil 369, 22–24 is said to have been uttered by the *theras* who made a recension of the *Dhamma* (*bhāsitaṃ ... therēhi dhammasaṅgāhakehi*).

<sup>45</sup> Mil 342, 1.

<sup>46</sup> See ADIKARAM, EHBC, p. 25, and HORNER, Mil tr., I, p. xxii.

The relationship between these *bhāṇakas* and the Jātaka-*bhāṇakas*, whom he mentions at the same time, is not clear.

The fourth of these early prose texts which were probably composed in North India is the Vimuttimagga, and as will be noted below there is some doubt as to whether this work is still extant. Its importance lies in the fact that it was made use of by Buddhaghosa when he wrote the Visuddhimagga. Buddhaghosa does not quote the Vimuttimagga by name, but the author of the *ṭīkā* upon the Visuddhimagga states that the word *ekacce* (at Vism 102, 31) refers to the *thera* Upatissa who was responsible for proposing a refuted method of classifying temperaments in the Vimuttimagga.<sup>47</sup> A Chinese translation of this text, made in A.D. 505, exists,<sup>48</sup> and it includes the refuted suggestion. It also includes other points rejected by Buddhaghosa, which Dhammapāla ascribes to the Abhayagiri *vihāra*.<sup>49</sup> This has led to a belief that the Vimuttimagga was an Abhayagiri text,<sup>50</sup> which was regarded as lost with almost all other Abhayagiri texts when the Mahāvihāra finally triumphed over its main opponent. It has, however, been pointed out that all the points which Buddhaghosa refutes are non-Mahāyāna, and are well within the Hinayāna field.<sup>51</sup> The Vimuttimagga has, therefore, been identified as a Theravāda text.<sup>52</sup>

It has been suggested<sup>53</sup> that the author Upatissa was the same as the Upatissa who is mentioned in the lists of *theras* in the Parivāra of the Vinaya-piṭaka. If this suggestion is correct, then the text would date from about the first century A.D., but there is no other evidence to support this suggestion. All that can be said is that, if Dhammapāla is correct, Buddhaghosa knew of the Vimuttimagga, which must therefore be earlier than the fifth century A.D., but not necessarily much earlier.

A comparison of the Visuddhimagga with the Vimuttimagga, in its Chinese form, shows that the latter is much shorter than the former.<sup>54</sup> It follows the same three general divisions of *sīla*, *samādhi*, and *paññā*, but does not superimpose the pattern of the seven *visuddhis*. Less space is devoted to the *paññā* portions and there are no illustrative stories. Although the appearance in both works of what appear to be several nearly identical passages suggests that they both drew much from the same sources, the general style differs. The main differences between the two texts arise from the way of handling the four

<sup>47</sup> *Ekacce ti Upatissattheram sandhāy' āha: tena hi Vimuttimagge tathā vuttam* (Vism-mhṭ [No 1969] I 221, 22).

<sup>48</sup> There is an English translation by N. R. M. EHARA, SOMA THERA, and KHEMINDA THERA, The path of freedom, Colombo 1961.

<sup>49</sup> See NĀṆAMOLI, Vism tr., p. xxvii, and BAPAT, VV, pp. xli–xlii.

<sup>50</sup> See BAPAT, VV, p. xlix, and P. C. BAGCHI, "On the original Buddhism, its canon and language," in Sino-Indian Studies, II (1946–47), p. 113.

<sup>51</sup> See NĀṆAMOLI, Vism tr., p. xxvii.

<sup>52</sup> See A. BAREAU, Les sectes bouddhiques du petit véhicule, Saigon 1953, p. 242.

<sup>53</sup> By M. NAGAI, "The Vimutti-magga: the 'way to deliverance,'" in JPTS 1917–1919, pp. 69–80.

<sup>54</sup> See NĀṆAMOLI, Vism tr., p. xxvii.

measureless states and the four immaterial states, while the way in which the Vimuttimaggā describes the thirteen ascetic practices (*dhutaṅgas*) is quite different too. It has been suggested<sup>55</sup> that the Vimuttimaggā was composed in North India, and the existence of a Tibetan version of the portion dealing with the *dhutaṅgas* possibly supports this view,<sup>56</sup> for translations from Pāli into Tibetan are very rare.<sup>57</sup> Another view, however, concludes that it was the product of either the Abhayagiri *vihāra* or the Jetavana *vihāra*.<sup>58</sup> The presence in it of some points accepted by the Abhayagiri *vihāra* does not, however, prove that it was a product of that centre. It could well have been composed elsewhere and then adopted by the Abhayagirivihārins.

An edition of a text entitled Vimuttimaggā<sup>59</sup> was published in Ceylon in 1963. A reviewer of this edition has stated that in his opinion<sup>60</sup> it is a modern work, based upon a critical analysis of the Visuddhimaggā and the Chinese translation of the Vimuttimaggā, which he himself had published some years earlier.

## 2. THE EARLY CHRONICLES

Tradition, as recorded by Buddhaghosa,<sup>61</sup> states that the commentaries were brought to Ceylon by Mahinda. It can be deduced that included in this commentarial material was information about the early history of Buddhism in North India. To this in the course of time was added material concerning the introduction of Buddhism to Ceylon, and its subsequent progress there.

Nothing is known about the language or languages in which this historical material was composed. It seems probable that, like the canon itself, it was originally in a number of dialects, but it is uncertain whether it was reduced to a single dialect when the canon was rendered into Pāli. It is also probable that the additions made in Ceylon were in the current Sinhalese Prakrit. From the form of later texts which were based upon this historical tradition it has been deduced that it consisted of a mixture of prose and verse, and it has been claimed that the prose was in Sinhalese Prakrit while the verses were in Pāli.<sup>62</sup> The main reason for this belief appears to be the fact that later classical Sinhalese prose is often interspersed with Pāli and Sanskrit verse, but almost never with Sin-

halese verse.<sup>63</sup> As will be seen, there is some evidence that some, at least, of the verses were in a non-Pāli dialect of Middle Indo-Aryan.<sup>64</sup>

The first extant attempt to put together history and legend in verse and to make a continuous chronicle (*vaṃsa*) about Ceylon is the Dipavaṃsa.<sup>65</sup> This tells in 22 chapters the history of the island from the time of the Buddha, who is reported to have visited Ceylon three times, down to the end of the reign of Mahāsena in the fourth century A.D.<sup>66</sup> It must therefore have been written after the time of that king. The fact that it is quoted by name several times by Buddhaghosa<sup>67</sup> suggests that it is to be dated to the period between Mahāsena and Buddhaghosa, but some doubt remains because there are minor differences between Buddhaghosa's quotations and the text which we possess, which may mean that Buddhaghosa was following a different recension of the text,<sup>68</sup> or that he was quoting from an earlier version of the text than the one we have, perhaps even a Dipavaṃsa *atthakūḍa* upon which our Dipavaṃsa is based.

Before beginning the account of the history of Ceylon, the early history of Buddhism in India is related, down to the time of Asoka and the sending out of the missionaries, and including accounts of the three councils. The story of Ceylon proper begins in chapter nine. The text shows signs of being made up from a collection of material which frequently overlaps. The author makes no attempt to assimilate his material, but is content to place different versions of the same occurrence side by side. So we find two slightly divergent names of the same individual,<sup>69</sup> two descriptions of the first council<sup>70</sup> and of the second council,<sup>71</sup> with some verses identical in the two versions. There are also two versions of the third council,<sup>72</sup> while the story of the presents sent to Ceylon by Asoka is treated three times.<sup>73</sup>

Many verses in the Dipavaṃsa are so sketchy that they are unintelligible without help. Where the relevant stories recur in the later Mahāvaṃsa the essential details are added, and we are able to use the later text as a commentary upon the earlier one.<sup>74</sup> There are also verses which were clearly intended to be

<sup>65</sup> See BECHERT, BCSRS, p. 15.

<sup>66</sup> See p. 118 below.

<sup>67</sup> Ed. and tr. H. OLDENBERG, London 1879; B. C. LAW, in Ceylon Historical Journal, 7 (1957-58), pp. 1-266.

<sup>68</sup> Mahāsena is dated A.D. 277-304 by GEIGER in DM, p. 34, but A.D. 325-52 by the same scholar in Mhv tr., p. xxxviii.

<sup>69</sup> See p. 116 below.

<sup>70</sup> See OLDENBERG, Dip, p. 9 n. 1.

<sup>71</sup> E.g. Bhāṭutissa at XXII 18, but Bhāṭikatiṃsa at XXII 30.

<sup>72</sup> At IV 1-26 and V 1-15.

<sup>73</sup> At IV 47-53 and V 16-38.

<sup>74</sup> At VII 34-43 and VII 44-59.

<sup>75</sup> At XI 32-40, XII 1-4, and XVII 83-86.

<sup>76</sup> OLDENBERG draws attention to the story of the conversion of Moggallāna at Dip V 55-68 and Mhv V 95-153. Cf. also Dip II 17-18 with Mhv I 32-37; Dip II 29 with Mhv I 48-51; Dip VI 13 with Mhv V 89-97; Dip VII 49 with Mhv V 238-42.

<sup>55</sup> By BAPAT, VV, p. liv.

<sup>56</sup> P. V. BAPAT, Vimuttimārga Dhutagujanirdeśa, Delhi, 1964.

<sup>57</sup> They do, however, occur. See EHARA, op. cit. (in n. 48), pp. xl-xli.

<sup>58</sup> See BAREAU, op. cit. (in n. 52), p. 242.

<sup>59</sup> Ed. SHRI RATANAJOTI and SHRI RATANAPALA, printed at Government Press, Ceylon 1963.

<sup>60</sup> Rev. by P. V. BAPAT, Journal of Vidyālanakara University of Ceylon, pp. 172-90.

<sup>61</sup> St I 17 = Ps I 1. 23 = Spk I 1, 19 = Mp I 1, 20.

<sup>62</sup> See GEIGER, DM, p. 45, and OLDENBERG, Dip, p. 4.



memory verses.<sup>75</sup> In the form in which they occur in the *Dīpavaṃsa* they are sometimes meaningless, and it is only the fact that they are elaborated in the *Mahāvamsa* which enables us to understand them.<sup>76</sup> These facts are consistent with a belief that the *Dīpavaṃsa* was dependent upon a written tradition which was in turn based upon an oral tradition, in which memory verses were essential.

The author's name is unknown. His command of Pāli seems to have been poor. The syntax of some of his sentences is very difficult, and he is capable of producing grammatical monstrosities.<sup>77</sup> The metre is *Sloka* and *Jagati*, except for a few passages which seem to be in prose,<sup>78</sup> although it has been claimed<sup>79</sup> that these are really verses in irregular metres.

Although the introductory *Bāhiraṇidāna* which Buddhaghosa prefixes to the *Samantapāsādikā*<sup>80</sup> is not a *vamsa*, it is convenient to deal with it here because it is to a large extent based upon the same materials as the *Dīpavaṃsa*. Buddhaghosa wrote this introduction to explain the *Nidāna*, the "inception" or "origin" of the Vinaya, with the aim of establishing the authenticity of the Vinaya before starting to comment upon it.<sup>81</sup> To this end he gives an account of the history of Buddhism down to the proclamation of the Vinaya-piṭaka by Mahā-āriṭṭha in the presence of Devānampiyatissa, under the presidency of Mahinda, after the introduction of Buddhism to the island.

In his account of the first three councils Buddhaghosa is dependent upon the historical material collected at the Mahāvihāra. As we have seen, it is clear from the use made of the same material by the author of the *Dīpavaṃsa* that it consisted of two or three versions of some of the events, which had been transmitted in a quite disjointed fashion. Whereas these versions are simply included side by side in the *Dīpavaṃsa*, Buddhaghosa makes a very successful attempt to integrate them.

Buddhaghosa twice quotes<sup>82</sup> the *Dīpavaṃsa* by name when quoting verses, but the fact that there are slight variations from the text of the *Dīpavaṃsa* which we possess perhaps means that he was quoting from a different recension, or that he was quoting directly from the Sihala version of the *Dīpavaṃsa*, upon which the text we have was based. Since some of the verses are memory verses, it is likely that they are old ones from the Sihala-aṭṭhakathā. On a

<sup>75</sup> E.g. *Dip* XVII 3–4, expanded at 5–25.

<sup>76</sup> E.g. *Dip* XIX 2–3 is expanded at *Mhv* XIX 2–12.

<sup>77</sup> E.g. *therānam* occurs as an accusative singular form at *Dip* XII 83–84 and *XIV* 60, doubtless by analogy with *rājānam*.

<sup>78</sup> *Dip* IV 47 and XII 30–33.

<sup>79</sup> By N. A. JAYAWICKRAMA. "Literary activity in Pāli," in *PBR* 5 (1980), p. 80 n. 12.

<sup>80</sup> Ed. and tr. N. A. JAYAWICKRAMA, *Inception of Discipline and Vinayanidāna*, SBB London, 1962.

<sup>81</sup> JAYAWICKRAMA, *ibid.*, p. xi.

<sup>82</sup> *Dip* XI 15–17 quoted at *Sp* 74, 19–22 and *Dip* XII 1–6 quoted at *Sp* 75, 15–75. 11.

further occasion Buddhaghosa quotes a verse found in the *Dīpavaṃsa*, but he merely introduces it with the words *yathāha*.<sup>83</sup> Another verse is given without any reference to the source,<sup>84</sup> and two further verses, almost identical with two in the *Dīpavaṃsa*, are quoted on the authority of the *porāṇas*,<sup>85</sup> which would suggest that Buddhaghosa was indeed quoting the sources from which the *Dīpavaṃsa* itself drew its material. On the other hand, in his commentary upon the *Kathāvatthu* Buddhaghosa quotes a long passage from the *Dīpavaṃsa*<sup>86</sup> which agrees so closely with the text which we have that it is certain that, for that portion at least, Buddhaghosa had access to a text virtually identical with ours.

The second of the great *vamsa* texts is the *Mahāvamsa*.<sup>87</sup> The commentary upon the text states that the author's name was Mahānāma.<sup>88</sup> He gives as his reason for writing the *Mahāvamsa* the fact that the earlier work compiled by the *porāṇas* was sometimes too lengthy and sometimes too abbreviated, and contained many repetitions.<sup>89</sup> This is so clearly a description of the *Dīpavaṃsa* that it has been thought to apply to it,<sup>90</sup> and it was assumed that the *Mahāvamsa* was intended simply as a replacement of the *Dīpavaṃsa*. The author of the commentary upon the *Mahāvamsa*, however, states that the author of the *Mahāvamsa* was referring to a *Sihalaṭṭhakathā-Mahāvamsa*,<sup>91</sup> which was full of faults. This was presumably a historical text, or an introduction to a work. The commentary further states that the *Mahāvamsa* is a translation of the *porāṇaṭṭhakathā* from the Sihala language into *Māgadika-bhāṣā*, i.e. Pāli, and calls the text *Padyapadoruvamsa* because it is written in verse.<sup>92</sup>

The *Mahāvamsa* begins and ends where the *Dīpavaṃsa* does,<sup>93</sup> but it both adds and subtracts. It omits, for example, the description of the changes made to the canon by the Mahāsāṅghikas after they had split from the Theravādins,<sup>94</sup> but whereas the *Dīpavaṃsa* devotes only 13 verses to *Duṭṭhagāmaṇi*,<sup>95</sup> the *Mahāvamsa* inserts what was doubtless in origin an independent poem about him, comprising eleven chapters.<sup>96</sup>

<sup>83</sup> *Dip* XII 52 quoted at *Sp* 76, 19–20.

<sup>84</sup> *Dip* IV 50–54 quoted at *Sp* 34, 27–35, 6.

<sup>85</sup> *Dip* XII 35–37 quoted at *Sp* 71, 18–23; *Dip* XII 38–39 quoted at *Sp* 70, 24–71, 1.

<sup>86</sup> *Dip* V 30–53 quoted at *Kv-a* 3, 10–5, 9.

<sup>87</sup> Ed. and tr. G. TURNOUR, Ceylon 1837; Ed. W. GEIGER, PTS London, 1908; Tr. W. GEIGER, PTS London, 1912.

<sup>88</sup> *Mhv-t* 687, 4.

<sup>89</sup> *Mhv* I 2.

<sup>90</sup> See GEIGER, DM, p. 17.

<sup>91</sup> *Mhv-t* 36, 5–7.

<sup>92</sup> *Mhv-t*, p. lvii. Cf. *padyapadagāthābandhena kathesi* (*Mhv-t* 42, 8).

<sup>93</sup> Doubtless because both works were based upon the same body of commentarial material.

<sup>94</sup> *Dip* V 32–38.

<sup>95</sup> *Dip* XVIII 53–XIX 11.

<sup>96</sup> *Mhv* XXII–XXXII. See GEIGER, DM, pp. 19–20.

Mahānāma may be said to have succeeded in his aim of writing a work which is free from faults.<sup>97</sup> The reason for the fact that the Mahāvamsa is so superior to the Dipavamsa is perhaps to be seen in Buddhaghosa's work. It has been suggested that Mahānāma educated himself for the task of writing his great chronicle by reading Buddhaghosa's introduction to the Samantapāsādikā.<sup>98</sup> The text has many claims to be regarded as a *kāvya*.<sup>99</sup> The metre throughout is *Sloka*, apart from a prose quotation from the Yamaka,<sup>100</sup> except that the final verse of each chapter is in an ornate metre, e.g. *Sragdharā* (I), *Rucirā* (II), *Vasantatilakā* (III), etc.

Although the Mahāvamsa we possess is a very long work, taking the history of Ceylon right down to the nineteenth century, the older original composition, of which alone the commentary gives an explanation, ends in the middle of chapter XXXVII, where we find after verse 50 the words *Mahāvamsa nīṭhito*. Verse 50 is in the *Sloka* metre, which indicates that it was not the original ending to the chapter, for which an ornate metre would have been expected. Presumably the original ending was removed when the chapter was continued.<sup>101</sup>

It would seem that the Dipavamsa, Buddhaghosa's Bāhiranidāna, and the Mahāvamsa are all based on the Sihala *aṭṭhakathā* material which was kept at the Mahāvihāra, and the differences between these three works are due to the various authors making use of different strands of the material, and laying different emphasis upon the material which they have in common. It has been suggested<sup>102</sup> that some of the differences between the Bāhiranidāna and the Mahāvamsa arise from the fact that the former was translated directly from Sinhalese Prakrit prose into Pāli prose, while the author of the latter was under the restriction of metrical considerations. The differences between verses in the Dipavamsa and the Bāhiranidāna have been put down to recension variation,<sup>103</sup> but such differences could equally well be explained as arising from alternative interpretations of verses in non-Pāli dialects.<sup>104</sup>

### 3. THE EARLY COMMENTARIES

At the beginning of several of his commentaries Buddhaghosa states<sup>105</sup> that he is basing his explanations upon the *aṭṭhakathās* which were first recited by the 500 *theras*, i.e. at the first council, and afterwards brought to Ceylon by

<sup>97</sup> See Mhv I 3.

<sup>98</sup> By GEIGER, DM, p. 74. If this is so, then Mahānāma is later than Buddhaghosa.

<sup>99</sup> See GEIGER, DM, pp. 16–17.

<sup>100</sup> Mhv V 145.

<sup>101</sup> See GEIGER, DM, pp. 18–19.

<sup>102</sup> See JAYAWICKRAMA, Sp tr., p. xxxv.

<sup>103</sup> See p. 115 above.

<sup>104</sup> See K. R. NORMAN, "The role of Pāli in early Sinhalese Buddhism," in BECHERT, BCSRS, p. 36.

<sup>105</sup> Sv I, 15–18 = Ps I, 21–24 = Spk I, 17–20 = Mp I, 18–21.

Mahinda and translated into the Sinhalese language for the sake of the inhabitants of the island. From the many references to events and personages in Ceylon which we find in Buddhaghosa's commentaries, and which were presumably taken from the Sihala *aṭṭhakathās*, we can be certain that additions were made to those *aṭṭhakathās* after their arrival in Ceylon. A critical examination of the commentaries suggests that no additions were made to them after the first century A.D.,<sup>106</sup> but since it is said that the Sihala *aṭṭhakathās* were committed to writing at the same time as the canon in the first century B.C., it may be possible that little exegetical material was added after the latter date.

There is no direct evidence that any commentarial material was in fact recited at the first council, but there is clear evidence that some parts of the commentaries are very old, perhaps even going back to the time of the Buddha, because they afford parallels with texts which are regarded as canonical by other sects, and must therefore pre-date the schisms between the sects.<sup>107</sup> As has already been noted,<sup>108</sup> some canonical texts include commentarial passages, while the existence of the Old Commentary in the Vinaya-piṭaka and the canonical status of the Niddesa prove that some sort of exegesis was felt to be needed at a very early stage of Buddhism.

We cannot be certain whether Buddhaghosa was correct in stating that the early missionaries translated the commentaries they brought with them into Sinhalese Prakrit, but what we know of the development of that dialect between the first century B.C., when the commentaries were allegedly written down, and the fifth century A.D., when Buddhaghosa is believed to have written his commentaries, suggests that he was quite correct when he stated that the *aṭṭhakathās* in the *Sihalabhāsā* were no longer intelligible outside Ceylon.<sup>109</sup> It may be suspected that they were only intelligible to a very small number of *bhikkhus* inside the island.

The fact that the Dipavamsa sometimes gives two or three versions of the same event suggests that the tradition of the Mahāvihāra was based upon a mass of disjointed chronicle material, and there is no reason to doubt that the situation with regard to exegetical material was exactly the same, with comments gathered together from a number of sources. This would explain why we sometimes find commentators giving two or more, sometimes contradictory, explanations of the same word or phrase. Some commentators, especially Buddhaghosa,<sup>110</sup> give information about the commentaries they are following, and from the way in which some views are brought forward only to be rejected

<sup>106</sup> See ADIKARAM, EHBC, p. 87.

<sup>107</sup> See K. R. NORMAN, "The dialects in which the Buddha preached," in BECHERT, LEPT, pp. 72–73.

<sup>108</sup> See pp. 89 and 99 above.

<sup>109</sup> Sp 2, 7–10.

<sup>110</sup> See p. 121 below.



it is clear that those living at the Mahāvihāra also had access to the records of others sects which were regarded as hostile, if not actually heretical.

### 3.1. Buddhaghosa

The Mahāvamsa states<sup>111</sup> that after his conversion to Buddhism in North India Buddhaghosa wrote a book entitled *Nāṇodaya* and then a commentary upon the *Dhammasaṅgaṇi* called the *Atthasālinī*. He then began to compile a commentary upon the *Paritta*, but was advised to go to Ceylon, for only there was the commentarial tradition preserved. In Ceylon he went to the Mahāvihāra, learned the commentaries, and wrote the *Visuddhimagga*, described as a summary of the *Tiṭṭhaka*, to persuade the *Saṅgha* that he was a fit person to be entrusted with their books.

The story in the *Mahāvamsa* states that to test his ability the *theras* of the Mahāvihāra gave him two verses to comment upon, and the account given at the beginning of the *Visuddhimagga* does not contradict this.<sup>112</sup> He begins by quoting two verses from the *Samyutta-nikāya*,<sup>113</sup> and the whole of the *Visuddhimagga* is in effect a commentary upon the first of these. He states that the book was written at the request of the *thera* Saṅghapāla, who is named as his teacher in the *Mahāvamsa*.<sup>114</sup>

The *Visuddhimagga*<sup>115</sup> is not so much a commentary as a sort of encyclopedia, a compendium of Buddhist doctrine and metaphysics presented in a logical and systematic manner under the three heads of *sīla*, *saṃādhi*, and *paññā*, as Buddhaghosa himself states.<sup>116</sup> These three headings have already been noted<sup>117</sup> in the *Vimuttimagga*, and there seems no doubt that Buddhaghosa made use of this earlier text when writing his own work, although it is going too far to say that the *Visuddhimagga* and *Vimuttimagga* are one and the same work appearing in different attires.<sup>118</sup>

The *Visuddhimagga* extracts from the *Piṭakas* all the central doctrines which pivot upon the four truths, and presents them as a coherent systematic whole by way of quotation and explanation, interspersed with treatises on subjects of more or less relative importance. It illustrates by means of a large number of stories, set in either India or Ceylon, the whole being assimilated into an elab-

<sup>111</sup> Mhv XXXVII 225–37.

<sup>112</sup> Vism 2, 15–24.

<sup>113</sup> S I 13, 20–21 and 13, 18–19.

<sup>114</sup> Vism 711, 25; Mhv XXXVII 232.

<sup>115</sup> Ed. C. A. F. RHYSDAVIDS, PTS London, Vol. I, 1920; Vol. II, 1921; H. C. WARREN and D. KOSAMBI, Cambridge Mass., 1950. Tr. PE MAUNG TIN, *The path of purity*, PTS London, Part I, 1923; Part II, 1929; Part III, 1931; BHICKHU NĀNAMOLI, *The path of purification*, Colombo 1956; (German) NYANATILOKA, *Der Weg zur Reinheit*, Konstanz 1952.

<sup>116</sup> *Sīla-saṃādhi-paññā-mukheṇa desitv Visuddhimagge* (Vism 372, 21 = 710, 27–28).

<sup>117</sup> See p. 113 above.

<sup>118</sup> As is claimed by M. NAGAI, "The *Vimutti-magga*: the 'way to deliverance,'" in JPTS 1917–1919, p. 80.

orate edifice. An examination of the stories shows that those referring to India are, where a date can be assigned, none of them later than the third century B.C., i.e. the date when Mahinda brought Buddhism to Ceylon.<sup>119</sup> None of the events in Ceylon can be dated later than the latest datable *thera*, and this, as has been noted,<sup>120</sup> is either the first century B.C. or the first century A.D.

The *Visuddhimagga* is a masterly summary of Buddhist teaching, and can be regarded as an exposition of the ninefold teaching of the Buddha. It is best regarded as a detailed manual for meditation masters, and as a work of reference. As such, it can stand alone, but since many of the passages Buddhaghosa quotes occur in texts upon which he has written independent commentaries, there is some overlap, and many passages commenting upon identical material occur word for word the same in each commentary.

The *Gandhavaṃsa* states<sup>121</sup> that Buddhaghosa was the author of twelve commentaries in addition to the *Visuddhimagga*: those on the *Vinaya-piṭaka*, the first four *nikāyas*, the *Abhidhamma-piṭaka*, the *Pātimokkha*, and the *Dhammapada*, the *Jātaka*, the *Khuddakapāṭha*, the *Suttanipāta*,<sup>122</sup> and the *Apadāna*. Although there is some doubt about the last five, the remainder are generally accepted as being by Buddhaghosa.

At the beginning of the *Samantapāsādikā*<sup>123</sup> Buddhaghosa states<sup>124</sup> that he is basing his commentary upon the *Mahā-aṭṭhakathā*, the *Mahāpaccariya* and the *Kurundi* commentaries, and he is embodying the tradition of the elders (*theravāda*) in it.<sup>125</sup> He also refers to the opinions of individual elders, and clearly holds *Mahāpaduma* and *Mahāsumma* in high regard.<sup>126</sup> He also refers to the *Saṅkhepa*, an abridged form of the *Mahāpaccariya*, and to the *Paccariya* commentary, which is perhaps also an abridged version.<sup>127</sup> He also mentions the *Andhaka-aṭṭhakathā*,<sup>128</sup> although almost always to reject its views.<sup>129</sup> The fact that the *Andhaka* country in South India was a Dravidian-speaking area has led to the suggestion that this commentary came from that area and was in a Dravidian language.<sup>130</sup> There is no evidence for this belief, either as a specific

<sup>119</sup> See NĀNAMOLI, *Vism* tr., p. xx.

<sup>120</sup> See p. 119 above.

<sup>121</sup> Gv 59, 18–30.

<sup>122</sup> Gv 59, 18–30 does not include *Paramatthajotikā*, but at 68, 34 it is stated that Buddhaghosa wrote the *aṭṭhakathā* on the *Suttanipāta* without being requested (*attano matiyā*).

<sup>123</sup> Ed. J. TAKAKUSU and M. NAGAI, PTS London; Vol. I, 1924; Vol. II, 1927; Vol. III, 1930; Vol. IV, 1934; Vol. V, 1938; Vol. VI, 1947; Vol. VII, 1947; Vol. VIII (Indexes, compiled by H. KOPP), 1977.

<sup>124</sup> Sp 2, 16–18.

<sup>125</sup> Sp 2, 21.

<sup>126</sup> See ADIKARAM, EHBC, p. 81.

<sup>127</sup> See *ibid.*, pp. 12–13.

<sup>128</sup> See *ibid.*, p. 12.

<sup>129</sup> Another authority, usually mentioned only to reject, is *keci* "some." See I. B. HORNER, "Keci, 'some' in the Pāli commentaries," in JPTS 1981, pp. 87–95.

<sup>130</sup> See ADIKARAM, EHBC, p. 12.

statement from Buddhaghosa or as a deduction from the views quoted from the *Andhaka* commentary. Although there are one or two references in other commentaries by Buddhaghosa to a *Vinaya-atthakathā*,<sup>131</sup> there are no references to it by name in the *Samantapāsādikā*. The references to it do not fit in well with the *Samantapāsādikā* itself, and it seems likely that it is a *Sihala atthakathā*.

To the commentary upon the *Vinaya-piṭaka* proper, Buddhaghosa prefixes a *Bāhiranidāna* which has already been mentioned.<sup>132</sup> Besides the chronicle portions which can be compared with the other chronicles, there is a great deal of material about the classification and content of the canonical texts.

The *Sumaṅgalavilāsinī*,<sup>133</sup> *Papañcasūdanī*,<sup>134</sup> *Sāratthappakāsinī*,<sup>135</sup> and *Manorathapūraṇī*<sup>136</sup> are Buddhaghosa's commentaries upon the *Dīgha*-, *Majjhima*-, *Samyutta*-, and *Ānguttara-nikāyas* respectively. He states at the beginning of each of these that since certain things have already been dealt with in the *Visuddhimagga*, he will not deal with them again, for the *Visuddhimagga* stands between and in the midst of all four collections.<sup>137</sup> In the *Samyutta* commentary he inserts a stanza referring to the two previous collections,<sup>138</sup> i.e. the *Dīgha-nikāya* and the *Majjhima-nikāya*, for the explanation of the names of towns and illustrative stories. The *Ānguttara* commentary replaces this by another stanza referring to the *Dīgha* and the *Majjhima* by name for the same purposes.<sup>139</sup> Since the *Visuddhimagga* is referred to in this way at the beginning of each of these four commentaries, we must assume that when he refers in the *Visuddhimagga* to the *atthakathās* upon the *Ānguttara*-, *Majjhima*-, and *Samyutta-nikāyas*,<sup>140</sup> he is not referring to his own commentaries upon these texts, but to the *Sihala atthakathās* thereon.

Buddhaghosa's commentaries upon the *Dhammasaṅgaṇi* and the *Vibhaṅga* are individually named as the *Atthasālinī*<sup>141</sup> and the *Sammohavinodanī*,<sup>142</sup>

<sup>131</sup> E.g. *Vism* 72, 23 and 272, 2. See JAYAWICKRAMA, Sp tr., pp. xxii-xxiv.

<sup>132</sup> See p. 116 above.

<sup>133</sup> Ed. T. W. RHYS DAVIDS and J. E. CARPENTER, PTS London, Vol. I, 1886; W. STEDE, Vol. II, 1931; Vol. III, 1932.

<sup>134</sup> Ed. J. H. WOODS and D. KOSAMBI, PTS London, Vol. I, 1922; Vol. II, 1926; I. B. HORNER, Vol. III, 1933; Vol. IV, 1937; Vol. V, 1938.

<sup>135</sup> Ed. F. L. WOODWARD, PTS London, Vol. I, 1929; Vol. II, 1932; Vol. III, 1937.

<sup>136</sup> Ed. M. WALLESE, PTS London, Vol. I, 1924; M. WALLESE and H. KOPP, Vol. II, 1930; H. KOPP, Vol. III, 1936; Vol. IV, 1940; Vol. V, 1957.

<sup>137</sup> *Majjhe Visuddhimaggo esa catunnam pi āgamanāṇi hi* (Sv 2, 6 = Ps I 2, 10 = Spk I 2, 18 = Mp I 2, 24).

<sup>138</sup> Spk I 2, 3-4.

<sup>139</sup> Mp I 2, 9-10.

<sup>140</sup> E.g. *Vism* 315, 24; 72, 24: 387, 8.

<sup>141</sup> Ed. E. MÜLLER, PTS London, 1897; revised edition with indexes by L. S. COUSINS, 1979. Tr. PE MAUNG TIN and Mrs C. A. F. RHYS DAVIDS, The Expositor, PTS London, Vol. I, 1920; Vol. II, 1921.

<sup>142</sup> Ed. A. P. BUDDHADATTA, PTS London, 1923. Tr. BHIKKHU ÑĀṆAMOLI, The Dispeller of Delusion, PTS London, to appear in 1983.

whereas unlike them the commentaries upon the remaining five *Abhidhamma* texts are taken together under the title *Pañcappakaraṇatthakathā* or *Paramatthadīpanī*.<sup>143</sup> The *Gandhavamsa* uses the name *Paramatthakathā*<sup>144</sup> for the commentary upon all seven *Abhidhamma* works. The name *Paramatthadīpanī* is little used, perhaps because of the possible confusion with *Dhammapāla's* commentary<sup>145</sup> upon certain texts in the *Khuddaka-nikāya*.

For the most part, in the *Abhidhamma* commentaries their author avoids discussion of matters which have already been dealt with in the *nikāya* commentaries and the *Visuddhimagga*. That this is a definite policy, and not oversight, is clear from the fact that readers are referred specifically to the *Visuddhimagga*<sup>146</sup> or the *nikāya* commentaries, although he seems not to claim that these are his own work, whereas in the *nikāya* commentaries he does state that the *Visuddhimagga* is his own work.<sup>147</sup> There can, however, be no doubt that all the *Abhidhamma* commentaries are by one author, for at the end of the commentary upon the *Paṭṭhāna* he states that he has now concluded the commentary to the whole *Abhidhamma-piṭaka*.<sup>148</sup> The *Atthasālinī*, *Sammohavinodanī*, and the *Pañcappakaraṇatthakathā* all include the name *Buddhaghosa* in the epilogue,<sup>149</sup> but other than that there is no evidence that they were written by him. In fact, the first two state that they were written at the request of *Buddhaghosa*,<sup>150</sup> which has led to the suggestion that they were both written by a pupil of *Buddhaghosa*.<sup>151</sup> Examples of references to the *Visuddhimagga* and the *nikāya* commentaries can be found in all three works, where they are treated as authoritative, but not as the author's own work.

It has been suggested<sup>152</sup> that the *Atthasālinī* is not by the same author as the *Visuddhimagga*, for there are a number of points where the interpretation of the two texts differ somewhat, while authorities quoted in one text are not always

<sup>143</sup> See JAYAWICKRAMA, Kv-a, p. vii.

<sup>144</sup> Gv 59, 25-26.

<sup>145</sup> See p. 134 below.

<sup>146</sup> E.g. *sabbam atthakathāyena gahetvā Visuddhimagge vithāritam* (As 168, 21-22).

<sup>147</sup> Contrast *iti pana sabbam yasmā Visuddhimagge mayā supariṣuddham vuttam* (Sv 2, 3-5) with *Visuddhimagge pan' idam yasmā sabbam pakāsitam* (As 2, 8).

<sup>148</sup> *Buddhaghoso ti gurūhi gahitanāmadheyyena therena katā ayaṃ sakalassa pi Abhidhammapiṭakassa atthakathā* (Ppk-a [Ne] III 245, 18-20).

<sup>149</sup> As 430, 19-21 ≠ Vibh-a 524, 7-8 ≠ Ppk-a [Ne] III 245, 18-20.

<sup>150</sup> *Visuddhācārasīlena nipuṇāmalabuddhinā bhikkhunā Buddhaghosena sakkaccam abhiyācīto* (As 1, 17-18); *tassāham yācīto phītagunena gatinā adandha-gatinā subuddhinā Buddhaghosena* (Vibh-a 523, 9-10). The work *bhikkhunā* suggests rather that the *ācāriya* *Buddhaghosa* was asked by a pupil to compose these works. This clearly is the view of the author of the *Gandhavamsa*: *sattānam abhiṭṭhamma-gandhānam atthakathāgandho Culla-Buddhaghosanamabhikkhunā āyācītena Buddhaghosācāriyena kato* (Gv 68, 24-26).

<sup>151</sup> See Mrs C. A. F. RHYS DAVIDS, A manual of Buddhism for advanced students, London 1932, p. 30.

<sup>152</sup> See P. V. BAPAT and R. D. VADEKAR, *Atthasālinī*, Poona 1942 (Bhandarkar Oriental Series, 3), pp. xxxv-xl.



included in the other, and on other occasions the views given in the Visuddhi-magga are merely listed as alternatives. It seems strange that someone like Buddhaghosa should give his own interpretations as alternatives, and if he were really revising an earlier opinion it might have been expected that he would mention his change of mind. Strong though these arguments may be, they are not conclusive. The answer perhaps lies in the relative dating of the Visuddhi-magga and the Atthasālinī. The Mahāvamsa states<sup>153</sup> that Buddhaghosa wrote the Atthasālinī in India, before going to Ceylon. If this was so, then he must have re-written it there, because he refers to commentarial material from the Mahāvihāra.<sup>154</sup> If we accept that the Atthasālinī was an early work which was later re-written,<sup>155</sup> then it does not seem unlikely that Buddhaghosa should incorporate later views from the Visuddhimagga while still retaining earlier views expressed in the "first edition" of the Atthasālinī. There are several references in the Sammohavinodanī to the Atthasālinī as the commentary which should take preference over it,<sup>156</sup> and since Buddhaghosa's authorship of the former work has never been disputed it would seem reasonable to suppose that he wrote the latter work too. The suggestion that the Atthasālinī was written by a pupil of Buddhaghosa need not perhaps be taken very seriously. A study of Buddhaddatta's Abhidhammavātāra shows parallels with the Atthasālinī,<sup>157</sup> and although dependence upon the same traditional commentarial material cannot be ruled out as the cause of this, the tradition<sup>158</sup> that Buddhaddatta summarized Buddhaghosa's commentaries suggests that the Abhidhammavātāra is indeed based upon the Atthasālinī. Buddhaddatta is not likely to have summarized something written by a pupil of Buddhaghosa.

Another possible solution for the problem of Buddhaghosa seemingly rejecting the views he had put forward in the Visuddhimagga is that these views may have been his own,<sup>159</sup> as opposed to traditional ones taken over from the

<sup>153</sup> Mhv XXXVII 225.

<sup>154</sup> As 2, 4. One passage (As 82–106), entitled Dvārakathā, is specifically attributed to the Mahā-aṭṭhakathā, while another, entitled Vipākuddhārakathā (As 267–87), seems to have been taken over almost verbatim or perhaps slightly condensed from a rather formalised earlier source, almost certainly a Sihala aṭṭhakathā. It starts with what it calls a *mātikā*, in effect a table of contents, and gives a reference to the Ussadakkittana, which is referred to at Vism 103–104 as an authoritative decision in accordance with the views of the teachers of the aṭṭhakathā. See L. S. COUSINS, "The Paṭṭhāna and the development of the Theravādin Abhidhamma," in JPTS 1981, pp. 22–46.

<sup>155</sup> Re-writing is perhaps indicated by the fact that the Saddhammasaṅgha quotes Mhv XXXVII 225–41 (54, 5–55, 4) but later (56, 22) states that Buddhaghosa wrote the Atthasālinī in Ceylon after composing his commentaries upon the *nikāyas*.

<sup>156</sup> See Vibh-a 43, 14–15; 396, 14–15; 410, 4–5; 479, 13–14.

<sup>157</sup> Cf. Abhidh-av 2, 33–3, 14 with As 62, 1–17.

<sup>158</sup> See p. 130 below. The alternative explanation, that the Atthasālinī is based upon the Abhidhammavātāra, seems untenable, because some of the latter is almost unintelligible without reference to the former.

<sup>159</sup> See U. DIHAMMARATANA (ed.), Sammohavinodanī, Nalanda 1961, p. xxxix.

Sihala aṭṭhakathās. Although the implication is that Buddhaghosa is at all times following the Mahāvihāra tradition, he, and other commentators,<sup>160</sup> do sometimes state that they are giving their own opinion about something, perhaps because their predecessors had given no information about it. It is possible that this happened more frequently than would appear. It is clear that on occasion the views put forward by the commentators lacked authority, since readers are sometimes allowed a choice about accepting the view or rejecting it.<sup>161</sup>

Although, as stated, the Sammohavinodanī several times refers to the Atthasālinī, we also find in the Atthasālinī the statement, repeated,<sup>162</sup> that a point will be clarified in the Vibhaṅga-aṭṭhakathā. This presumably means that Buddhaghosa was carefully planning ahead for one commentary while he was writing another, and was already making decisions about the proper place to deal with the traditional material he was sorting through. It may be assumed that a similar practice accounts for other cross-references which are found in his commentaries,<sup>163</sup> although extensive reworking and rewriting of his commentaries occurred, which would have enabled him to incorporate later views in books written earlier.

The five commentaries included in the Pañcappakaraṇa-aṭṭhakathā<sup>164</sup> are much shorter than the Atthasālinī and Sammohavinodanī. The most interesting of the set is the commentary upon the Kathāvatthu,<sup>165</sup> which makes a considerable contribution to the study of the history of early Buddhism by identifying the greater part of the heretical views put forward in the Kathāvatthu as being the views of particular sects. It starts with a brief account of the origin of the 18 schools which arose before the third council, and then the six more which arose after the end of the second century of Buddhism.

The author of the commentary is clearly aware that some of the views referred to could not have arisen in Tissa's time. He explains this by stating that Tissa spoke to prevent views which were going to arise, by analysing the topics of discourse (*mātikās*) established by the *Tathāgata*.<sup>166</sup> When identifying the

<sup>160</sup> E.g. *ayam ettha amhākaṃ khanti* (Vism 434, 2); *avicāritam etaṃ porāṇehi. ayam pana me attano matī* (Ps I 28, 30–31); *amhākaṃ khanti* (Pj I 19, 34); *ayam amhākaṃ khanti* (Pj II 387, 27–28); *amhākaṃ pan' etaṃ na kkhamaṃ* (Pj II 394, 6). Similarly Dhammapāla: *ayam amhākaṃ khanti* (It-a II 126, 1).

<sup>161</sup> E.g. *yathā ruccati tathā paṭhitaḥ* (Pj I 78, 19); *yathā vā tathā vā hoti* (Pj I 165, 17); *yam ruccati tam gahetabbam* (Pj II 23, 2, 17; 43, 25; 136, 1; 378, 11).

<sup>162</sup> *Vibhaṅga-aṭṭhakathāyaṃ āvibhavissati* (As 368, 2–3 = 407, 16–17).

<sup>163</sup> See BAPAT and VADEKAR, op. cit. (in n. 152), p. xxxiv.

<sup>164</sup> Dhātuk-a ed. E. R. GOONARATNE (with Dhātuk). PTS London, 1892; Pp-a ed. G. LANDSBERG and Mrs C. A. F. REYS DAVIDS, in JPTS 1913–14, pp. 170–254 (reprinted with Pp. PTS London, 1972); Yam-a ed. Mrs C. A. F. REYS DAVIDS, in JPTS 1910–12, pp. 52–107; Paṭṭh-a ed. Mrs C. A. F. REYS DAVIDS (with DUKAP 1906, and Tikap 1921, 1922, 1923).

<sup>165</sup> Ed. J. P. MINAYEFF, in JPTS 1889, pp. 1–199; now ed. N. A. JAYAWICKRAMA, PTS London, 1979. Tr. B. C. LAW, The Debates Commentary, PTS London, 1940.

<sup>166</sup> *Sathārā dinnanayavasen' eva Tathāgatena śapitanātikam vibhajanto* (Kv-a 7, 2–3).

holders of the views the commentator sometimes uses the word "now" (*etarahi*), implying that the schools still existed in his time and still had that view.<sup>167</sup> It is, however, possible that Buddhaghosa took over the word *etarahi* from the Sīhala *aṭṭhakathā* he was following, and "now" refers to the time when the latter were compiled.<sup>168</sup>

Although, as already noted,<sup>169</sup> the Pātimokkha does not have a separate existence in the Pāli canon, being embedded in the Vinaya-piṭaka, Buddhaghosa wrote a commentary upon it, including the introductory portion which has become detached from the rest and is found, together with the Old Commentary, in the Uposathakkhandhaka.<sup>170</sup> He comments upon the Old Commentary as well as upon the Pātimokkha itself. He states that he is doing it briefly (*saṅkhepato*), and he refers to the Samantapāsādikā for a more detailed account.<sup>171</sup>

The Kaṅkhāvitaraṇī<sup>172</sup> calls itself a *mātikā-aṭṭhakathā*,<sup>173</sup> where *mātikā* means the text of the Pātimokkha extracted from the Suttavibhaṅga and, in the case of the introductory portion, the Mahāvagga. This use of *mātikā* is found elsewhere in works by Buddhaghosa. It has already been noted<sup>174</sup> that he explains the word *mātikā-dharā* as *dvēpātimokkadharā*, and in the Kaṅkhāvitaraṇī we find the Mahāvibhaṅga referred to as *mātikā*,<sup>175</sup> and also a distinction drawn between the *mātikā* and the *Padabhājana*.<sup>176</sup> In the Visuddhimagga *mātikā* seems to be used of the Pātimokkha,<sup>177</sup> and in the Atthasālinī it refers to a part of the Vinaya-piṭaka.<sup>178</sup>

The word *mātikā* in this sense must be old, for the Sīhala *aṭṭhakathā* is called the *Sīhala-mātikā-aṭṭhakathā*.<sup>179</sup> Besides this, Buddhaghosa presumably also made use of the same commentaries he employed when writing the Samantapāsādikā, for he mentions the Kurundī and the Mahāpaccari commentaries.<sup>180</sup> These authorities did not always agree, and Buddhaghosa notes that the Sīhala *aṭṭhakathā* differs from the explanation given at one point in the Samantapāsādikā.<sup>181</sup> References to the Samantapāsādikā are frequent, and there are more

<sup>167</sup> See AUNG and RHYS DAVIDS, Kv tr., pp. xxxiii—xxxiv.

<sup>168</sup> Just as *yāva ajjanā* at Sp 62, 10 probably refers to a date in the first century A.D. See ADIKARAM, EHBC, p. 87.

<sup>169</sup> See p. 18 above.

<sup>170</sup> Vin I 102, 33—103, 11; 103, 12—104, 20.

<sup>171</sup> E.g. Kkh 84, 37—38.

<sup>172</sup> Ed. Mrs D. MASKELL, PTS London, 1956.

<sup>173</sup> *Kaṅkhāvitaraṇī nāma Mātikāṭṭhakathā* (Kkh 1, 1—3).

<sup>174</sup> See p. 96 above.

<sup>175</sup> Kkh 153, 40.

<sup>176</sup> *N' eva mātikāya na padabhājanē vuttam* (Kkh 95, 23).

<sup>177</sup> *Dve mātikā paguṇam katvā* (Vism 312, 29). See NĀṆAMOLI, Vism tr., p. 17 n. 11.

<sup>178</sup> As 19, 5.

<sup>179</sup> *Ayam eva hi altho Sīhala-mātikāṭṭhakathāyaṃ vutto* (Kkh 159, 24—25).

<sup>180</sup> See Kkh 138, 11 and 110, 26.

<sup>181</sup> *Samantapāsādikāya pan' assa vicāraṇakathā* (Kkh 159, 25).

than a dozen passages which are very similar in content,<sup>182</sup> although it is impossible to say whether the Kaṅkhāvitaraṇī is actually quoting from the Samantapāsādikā, or whether both texts are quoting from the Sīhala *aṭṭhakathā*.

The exegesis given for all 227 rules of the Bhikkhu-pātimokkha<sup>183</sup> follows the same pattern.<sup>184</sup> There is a parsing of the words of the rule (*sikkhāpada*), followed by a quasi-judicial estimation of defaults against it. Extenuating circumstances are then mentioned, and cases of guiltlessness, including wrong actions due to misconception or errors of judgment. A unique feature of the exegesis is the inclusion of a catechetical and hermeneutic summary of the main points at the end of each rule. These are called *aṅgas* because they form the links of the secondary rule (*anuppaññatti*) which follows from the main rule. They are probably intended to serve as aids to the memory for the trainee *bhikkhu*.

Of the other commentaries attributed to Buddhaghosa in the Gandhavaṃsa it is generally agreed that the Apadāna commentary was not written by him.<sup>185</sup> It is sometimes argued that the commentaries on the Dhammapada and the Jātaka may have been written by another Buddhaghosa because their style is so different from his other commentaries.<sup>186</sup> The commentary upon the Dhammapada<sup>187</sup> is said to have been written at the request of a *thera* named Kumārakassapa,<sup>188</sup> and to be based upon commentarial material in the language of the island (*dīpa-bhāsāya saṅghitā*).<sup>189</sup> At the end it is said that the work was composed by Buddhaghosa while residing in a residence built by king Sirikūta.<sup>190</sup> The reason for the difference in style could be the difference in subject matter. The work consists mainly of popular stories which play only a minor role in Buddhaghosa's other works.<sup>191</sup> There seems, however, to be no great objection to believing that Buddhaghosa collected together a set of traditional stories from commentarial sources and served as little more than an editor for this part of the work. His main commentarial duties were confined to the word for word commentary. In this connection it has been pointed out that while in his other commentaries Buddhaghosa is entirely consistent in his explanations of *Dhamma*, he is not always so consistent when giving different versions of the same story, e.g. the stories which he tells of the *theras* Tissabhūti<sup>192</sup> and Maha-

<sup>182</sup> See MASKELL, Kkh, p. x.

<sup>183</sup> The exegesis for the Bhikkhuni-pātimokkha is not given in full because of overlap with the Bhikkhu-pātimokkha.

<sup>184</sup> See MASKELL, Kkh, pp. viii—ix.

<sup>185</sup> See p. 146 below.

<sup>186</sup> See BURLINGAME, Buddhist Legends (see n. 187), Vol. I, pp. 59—60.

<sup>187</sup> Ed. H. C. NORMAN, PTS London, Vol. I, Part 1, 1906; Part 2, 1909; Vol. II, 1911; Vol. III, 1912; Vol. IV, 1914; Vol. V (Index) compiled by L. S. TAILANG, 1915; H. SMITH, Vol. I, 1925. Tr. E. W. BURLINGAME, Buddhist Legends, Cambridge, Mass., Vols. I—III, 1921.

<sup>188</sup> Dhp-a I 1, 18.

<sup>189</sup> Dhp-a I 1, 14.

<sup>190</sup> Dhp-a IV 235, 6.

<sup>191</sup> See NĀṆAMOLI, Vism tr., p. xvii.

<sup>192</sup> Cf. Ps I 66 with Mp I 39—40.



tissa.<sup>193</sup> It is possible that there was felt to be less need for strictness in such story material, although shortcomings would be much more obvious in a text consisting almost entirely of stories.<sup>194</sup>

The same would apply to the commentary upon the Jātakas.<sup>195</sup> At the beginning the author states that he will give the commentary in accordance with the tradition of the Mahāvihārins, at the request of the three *theras* Atthadassin, Buddhmitta, and Buddhadeva,<sup>196</sup> the last of whom is said to belong to the Mahimsāsaka sect.<sup>197</sup> There is no mention of the author's name at the end. As has already been noted,<sup>198</sup> the stories, the framework, and the word for word commentary have been shown to be composed by the same person, but we may be certain that in the case of the greater part of the stories the author's work, as in the case of the Dhammapada-*aṭṭhakathā*, consisted mainly of an editorial function, whereby a previously existing story was adapted, not always skilfully, for a new purpose.

Something can be seen of the way in which the editorial work was carried out. Although the story of the present is given in full for the first few Jātakas, it is thereafter very often all but omitted, being replaced by the statement that the Buddha told this story of the past.<sup>199</sup> Sometimes the incident which causes the telling of the story is omitted, with a statement that it is the same as one already told or, in many cases, one which is to be told.<sup>200</sup>

Among the commentarial sources which the author states he is following is a Jātakatṭhakathā, which was presumably a Sinhala *aṭṭhakathā*. Its disagreement with the remainder of the *aṭṭhakathās* is noted on one occasion.<sup>201</sup> He also refers to the Aṅguttaraṭṭhakathā<sup>202</sup> and the Saṃyuttaṭṭhakathā,<sup>203</sup> but we cannot be certain whether the commentaries by Buddhaghosa or the Sinhala *aṭṭhaka-*

<sup>193</sup> Cf. Ps I 185 with Mp I 42. See NĀYAMOLI, *Vism* tr., pp. xvii–xviii.

<sup>194</sup> It is not impossible that Buddhaghosa entrusted some of the less important parts of his commentaries to assistants, and he was responsible only for their supervision. See DHAMMARATANA, op. cit. (in n. 159), pp. xxxviii–xxxix.

<sup>195</sup> Ed. V. FAUSBELL, London, Vols. I–VI, 1877–96; Vol. VII (Indexes, compiled by D. ANDERSEN), 1897. Tr. E. B. COWELL et al., Vols. I–VI, 1895–1907; Vol. VII (Indexes), 1913.

<sup>196</sup> Ja I 1, 15–23.

<sup>197</sup> This suggests that the Theravādins and Mahimsāsakas had texts, especially the Jātakas, in common. BAREAU suggests that the Mahimsāsakas were the main-land Theravādins. See BAREAU, op. cit. (in n. 53), p. 183.

<sup>198</sup> See p. 78 above.

<sup>199</sup> *Itoparaṃ pana bhikkhūnaṃ yācanaṃ bhavantarapāṭicchannalaṇ ca avatvā 'atītaṃ dhari ti' ettakam eva vakāhāma* (Ja I 153, 28–154, 2).

<sup>200</sup> E.g. *taṃ heṭṭhā Nidānakathāyaṃ kathitaṃ eva* (Ja I 137, 15–16); *vattum Dvādasanipāte Bhaddasālojātaka āvibhavissatī* (Ja I 133, 23–24).

<sup>201</sup> *Yam pana Jātakatṭhakathāya ... vuttaṃ taṃ sesatṭhakathāsu n' atthi* (Ja I 62, 20–22).

<sup>202</sup> *Tesaṃ viṭṭhāro Aṅguttaraṭṭhakathāya vutto* (Ja I 131, 23).

<sup>203</sup> *Samyuttaṭṭhakathāya pana idāni vattamānasampatti yeva kathitā* (Ja V 38, 4). Although this reference is found at Spk I 281, we cannot rule out the possibility that both Ja and Spk are following a Sinhala *aṭṭhakathā* here.

*thās* are intended. On a number of occasions he draws attention to the fact that a reading in the books (*poṭṭhakesu*) is not found in the *aṭṭhakathā*,<sup>204</sup> or that the *aṭṭhakathā* has a different reading.<sup>205</sup> He sometimes quotes, tacitly, material from an earlier commentary.<sup>206</sup>

To Buddhaghosa are also ascribed commentaries upon the Khuddakapāṭha and the Suttanipāta, both called Paramatthajotikā. Despite the fact that Buddhaghosa's name appears at the end of both, doubt has been expressed about their authorship, and it has been suggested that the two works are perhaps by different authors.<sup>207</sup> There is no reference in the Khuddakapāṭha commentary<sup>208</sup> to an earlier Sinhala commentary, but there are references to former teachers (*pubbācariyas*) and teachers of the commentary (*aṭṭhakathācariyas*) as well as *porāṇas* and *theriyas*.<sup>209</sup> The author shows some acquaintance with Sanskrit and the Sanskrit grammarians,<sup>210</sup> which would be in keeping with the traditional view that Buddhaghosa was a brahman before he became a Buddhist, although it is easy to show from other commentaries attributed to Buddhaghosa that at times he showed ignorance of Sanskrit.<sup>211</sup> It seems on balance, however, that there are no very compelling reasons for believing that the Khuddakapāṭha commentary is not by the same author as the Visuddhi-magga.<sup>212</sup>

The commentary upon the Suttanipāta<sup>213</sup> also shows some knowledge of Sanskrit grammar, but no more than Buddhaghosa shows in the Visuddhi-magga,<sup>214</sup> and this seems to be no reason for denying his authorship. The repetition which is found with the commentary upon the Khuddakapāṭha, e.g. the full commentaries in both texts upon the three *suttas* which the Khuddakapāṭha and the Suttanipāta have in common,<sup>215</sup> is certainly strange when his habit of referring from one commentary to another, as already noted in the case of his Sutta-piṭaka and Abhidhamma-piṭaka commentaries, is considered, but the fact that these repetitions are word for word the same can hardly be taken to prove that they are by different authors.

<sup>204</sup> E.g. *poṭṭhakesu pana 'atthā maṃ saccaṃ pāleti' ti likhitaṃ taṃ aṭṭhakathāyaṃ n' atthi* (Ja V 95, 6–7).

<sup>205</sup> E.g. *aṭṭhakathāyaṃ pana 'kasmā tuvaṃ' ti pāṭho* (Ja II 241, 17).

<sup>206</sup> E.g. there is an exegesis on *kantāra* in the prose story of the Apanṇakajātaka at Ja I 99, 14–22.

<sup>207</sup> See ADIKARAM, EHBC, pp. 7–8, and NĀYAMOLI, Pj I tr., pp. x–xv.

<sup>208</sup> Ed. H. SMITH, PTS London, 1915. Tr. BHIRUKU NĀYAMOLI, Minor Readings and Illustrations, PTS London, 1960.

<sup>209</sup> See NĀYAMOLI, Pj I tr., pp. viii–ix.

<sup>210</sup> See NĀYAMOLI, Pj I tr., p. 310 s.v. "Pāṇini" and p. 311 s.v. "Sanskrit allusions."

<sup>211</sup> See WARREN and KOSAMBI, op. cit. (in n. 115), pp. xii–xiv.

<sup>212</sup> See NĀYAMOLI, Pj I tr., p. xv.

<sup>213</sup> Ed. H. SMITH, PTS London, Vol. I, 1916; Vol. II, 1917; Vol. III (Indexes), 1918.

<sup>214</sup> See K. R. NORMAN, "The role of Pāli in early Sinhalese Buddhism," in BECHERT, BCSRS, p. 42.

<sup>215</sup> See p. 58 above.

The Mahāvamsa states that Buddhaghosa went to Ceylon in the reign of king Mahānāma.<sup>216</sup> While there is some doubt about the precise dating of Sinhalese kings, it is generally accepted that Mahānāma lived in the first half of the fifth century A.D.<sup>217</sup> If the letter which is reported to have been sent to the Chinese emperor in A.D. 428 by Ma-ho-nan<sup>218</sup> was sent by the same Mahānāma, then the date is confirmed. At the end of the Samantapāsādikā Buddhaghosa states that he wrote the commentary between the 20th and 21st years of king Sirinivāsa.<sup>219</sup> It is assumed that the names Mahānāma and Sirinivāsa refer to the same person. If this is the same king who is called Sirikūta at the end of the commentary upon the Dhammapada,<sup>220</sup> then that commentary, whether or not by Buddhaghosa, can be dated to the same period. A lower limit to the possible date for Buddhaghosa is given by the fact that the Chinese translation of the Samantapāsādikā was made in A.D. 489.<sup>221</sup>

It is worth noting that, although we are informed by Buddhaghosa himself that he translated his commentaries from the Sihala language (and from Pāli too, if we are wrong to reject this suggestion), there is no trace of this translation process to be seen. Although attention has been drawn to a few passages in Buddhaghosa's commentaries where nominative singular forms in -e, which is a characteristic of early Sinhalese Prakrit,<sup>222</sup> are to be found, a close examination shows that these forms are rather to be regarded as Māgadhisms, or at least traces of some North Indian Prakrit.<sup>223</sup> There seems to be no evidence for the existence of untranslated Sinhalese Prakrit forms in any of Buddhaghosa's commentaries.

### 3.2. Buddhadatta

There is a tradition, recorded in the Vinayasāratthadīpanī,<sup>224</sup> a twelfth century commentary on the Vinayavinicchaya written by Vācissara, that Buddhadatta made summaries of Buddhaghosa's works after the latter had translated them from the Sinhalese Prakrit *aṭṭhakathās*. The later Buddhaghosuppatti tells a different story.<sup>225</sup>

<sup>216</sup> Mahānāma's accession is recorded at Mhv XXXVII 210 and his death at XXXVII 247.

<sup>217</sup> According to GEIGER (Cūl tr., II, p. vi) Mahānāma reigned A.D. 409–31.

<sup>218</sup> See GEIGER, Cūl tr., II, pp. v–vi.

<sup>219</sup> Sp 1415, 18–20.

<sup>220</sup> See p. 127 above.

<sup>221</sup> See P. V. BAPAT and A. HIRAKAWA (tr.), Shan-Chien-P'i-P'o-Sha, Poona 1970, p. xiii.

<sup>222</sup> See CPD, Vol. I, p. 471, s.v. *avittakka*.

<sup>223</sup> See K. R. NORMAN, "Pāli and the language of the heretics," in AO 37 (1976), pp. 117–120.

<sup>224</sup> See BUDDHADATTA, *Corr.*, pp. 158–59.

<sup>225</sup> Bu-up 50, 6–8 tells only of Buddhadatta encouraging Buddhaghosa with his translation work.

The Gandhavaṃsa states<sup>226</sup> that Buddhadatta wrote the Vinayavinicchaya, the Uttaravinicchaya, the Abhidhammāvatāra and a commentary upon the Buddhavaṃsa entitled Madhurattavāṇī. The Rūpārūpavibhāga is also ascribed to Buddhadatta by the Sāsanaṃsa,<sup>227</sup> although the Gandhavaṃsa states that this was composed by Vācissara.<sup>228</sup> Of these texts, the Vinayavinicchaya and the Uttaravinicchaya<sup>229</sup> are summaries of the Vinaya-pitaka, and the Abhidhammāvatāra and Rūpārūpavibhāga<sup>230</sup> are summaries of the Abhidhamma. The reason for making such summaries would seem to be simply the need to make it easier for students to learn and remember, since verse is much more convenient than prose for such purposes.

Although there are verbal similarities with some of Buddhaghosa's works, in particular the Atthasālinī,<sup>231</sup> it is by no means certain that Buddhadatta did, in fact, summarize Buddhaghosa's works. He nowhere mentions Buddhaghosa's name, but states that he wrote the Vinayavinicchaya at the request of his pupil Buddhasiha,<sup>232</sup> the Uttaravinicchaya at the request of Mahāthera Saṅghapāla<sup>233</sup> (perhaps the same elder at whose request Buddhaghosa wrote the Visuddhimagga), and the Abhidhammāvatāra at the request of Sumati.<sup>234</sup> It is possible that the similarities between the two authors' works led to the belief that one was dependent upon the other, and it is also likely that the name of Buddhaghosa was connected with that of Buddhadatta at a later date to give added authority to his works.<sup>235</sup>

The similarities can, however, probably be explained by assuming that both authors based their works upon the same *aṭṭhakathās* in the Mahāvihāra. The fact that in his summaries of the Vinaya-pitaka Buddhadatta frequently refers to the Kurundatṭhakathā, the Kurundi, the Mahā-aṭṭhakathā, and the Mahāpaccari,<sup>236</sup> which were also used by Buddhaghosa, suggests that both authors referred to the same original Sihala commentaries.

In the colophon to the Vinayavinicchaya<sup>237</sup> Buddhadatta states that the text was composed during the reign of Acyutavikrama of the Kalamba (or

<sup>226</sup> Gv 59, 31–60, 2.

<sup>227</sup> Sās 33, 36–37.

<sup>228</sup> Gv 62, 14–15.

<sup>229</sup> Ed. A. P. BUDDHADATTA, Buddhadatta's Manuals, Part II, PTS London, 1928: Vin-vn, pp. 1–230; Utt-vn, pp. 231–304.

<sup>230</sup> Ed. A. P. BUDDHADATTA, Buddhadatta's Manuals, Part I, PTS London, 1915: Abhidh-av, pp. 1–138; Rūpār, pp. 149–59. R. WEBB (PBR, 5, 3, 1980, p. 88) reports a tr. of Rūpār: R. ENELL, "The classification of forms and formless things," in Visakha Puja, Bangkok 1964.

<sup>231</sup> See p. 124 above.

<sup>232</sup> Vin-vn 3177.

<sup>233</sup> Utt-vn 965.

<sup>234</sup> Abhidh-av 137, 12.

<sup>235</sup> See WINTERITZ, HIL, p. 220.

<sup>236</sup> See Index to Buddhadatta's Manuals, Part II, s.vv. Kurundatṭhakathā, etc.

<sup>237</sup> Vin-vn 3179.



Kalabha or Kalamba) clan, said to be king of the Cola country.<sup>235</sup> If, at some future date, it proves possible to give a firm date to this king on archaeological grounds, then we should be afforded a firm basis for the chronology of both Buddhaddatta and Buddhaghosa and the contemporary kings of Ceylon.

An examination of the commentary to the Buddhavaṃsa,<sup>236</sup> which is also ascribed to Buddhaddatta, shows that it must have been compiled at a later date, presumably by another Buddhaddatta.

### 3.3. Mahānāma

There is a commentary<sup>237</sup> upon the Paṭisambhidāmagga ascribed to Mahānāma,<sup>238</sup> and entitled Saddhammapakkasini. The Gandhavaṃsa states that it was written at the request of the *upāsaka* Mahānāma.<sup>239</sup> The colophon to the text says that it was written in the Mahāvihāra in the third year after the death of king Moggallāna,<sup>240</sup> who is generally dated to the first half of the sixth century A.D.<sup>241</sup>

There is no evidence that a Sihala *aṭṭhakathā* upon the Paṭisambhidāmagga existed, which perhaps explains why Buddhaghosa did not write a commentary upon it. Buddhaghosa, however, quotes extensively from the Paṭisambhidāmagga in the Visuddhimagga,<sup>242</sup> and in turn Mahānāma borrows extensively from the Visuddhimagga in his explanations of the Paṭisambhidāmagga.<sup>243</sup> Buddhaghosa's commentaries upon the four *nikāyas* all refer to the Visuddhimagga in their opening verses, implying that study of the latter was essential for understanding the *nikāyas*. It has been suggested that Mahānāma was doing much the same for the Khuddaka-nikāya, and by quoting where necessary from the Visuddhimagga, instead of merely referring to it, he was providing a basic commentary for the Khuddaka-*bhāṇakas* to refer to.<sup>244</sup>

The commentary begins with the statement that Sāriputta explained the Dhammacakkapavattanasutta by composing the Paṭisambhidāmagga,<sup>245</sup> thus indicating the main theme of the attainment of enlightenment by understanding the four truths. It continues by seeking to present the Paṭisambhidāmagga as a systematic and orderly exposition of the way to *arahant*-ship, with each

<sup>235</sup> See Buddhaddatta's Manuals, Part I, p. xvi, and BUDDHADATTA, Corr., pp. 163–64.

<sup>236</sup> See p. 145 below.

<sup>237</sup> Ed. C. V. Joshi, PTS London, Vol. I, 1933; Vol. II, 1941; Vol. III, 1947.

<sup>238</sup> Gv 61, 3.

<sup>239</sup> Gv 70, 16.

<sup>240</sup> Paṭis-a 704, 2.

<sup>241</sup> The probable date for Moggallāna I is A.D. 496–513, which gives A.D. 516 as the date of completion for Paṭis-a. See WARDER, Paṭis tr., p. xlv.

<sup>242</sup> See Viem, pp. 758–59.

<sup>243</sup> WARDER, Paṭis tr., p. xlv.

<sup>244</sup> WARDER, Paṭis tr., pp. xlii–liii.

<sup>245</sup> Paṭis-a 1–2.

topic leading necessarily to the next. This is done by supplying lengthy explications in the commentary to smooth out the rough statements and extend them with elaborations.

### 3.4. Upasena

There is a commentary upon the Niddesa entitled Saddhammapajotikā,<sup>246</sup> although the Gandhavaṃsa also calls it Saddhammatthitikā.<sup>247</sup> It is ascribed to Upasena, both in the Gandhavaṃsa<sup>248</sup> and in the colophon to the commentary itself.<sup>249</sup> It is said to have been written at the request of a *thera* named Deva.<sup>250</sup> Upasena himself states that he wrote the work at Anurādhapura in the 26th year of the reign of king Siri-Saṅghabodhi,<sup>251</sup> whose dates are disputed. He probably lived about the middle of the sixth century A.D.<sup>252</sup>

Included in the commentary upon the Niddesa is comment where necessary on the relevant verses of the Suttanipāta about which the Niddesa comments. For this purpose the author has sometimes borrowed passages, without alteration, from the Paramatthajotikā.<sup>253</sup> It has been pointed out that he sometimes does this very carelessly, borrowing the later part of a story, without mentioning its beginning,<sup>254</sup> so that it is unintelligible without reference to the Suttanipāta commentary.

Other explanatory material, e.g. on the *paṭiccasamuppāda* and the noble truths, is borrowed from the Visuddhimagga and the Sammohavinodanī. Such wholesale borrowing from Buddhaghosa's commentaries provides an upper limit for Upasena's date.

### 3.5. Dhammapāla

The Gandhavaṃsa states<sup>255</sup> that Dhammapāla wrote commentaries upon the Nettippakaraṇa, the Itivuttaka, the Udāna, the Cariyāpiṭaka, the Theragāthā, the Vimānavatthu and Petavatthu, and a *ṭīkā* upon the Visuddhimagga, as well as a number of other *ṭīkās* which are usually assumed to be by another Dhammapāla.<sup>256</sup>

<sup>246</sup> Ed. A. P. BUDDHADATTA, PTS London, Vol. I, 1931; Vol. II, 1939; Vol. III, 1940.

<sup>247</sup> At Gv 61, 11, although at Gv 70, 23 it is called Saddhammapajotikā.

<sup>248</sup> Gv 61, 11 and 70, 24.

<sup>249</sup> Nidd-a II 150, 25. The editor's reference to Upatisa (I, pp. viii–x) is an error, as he later points out (II, p. v).

<sup>250</sup> Gv 70, 24.

<sup>251</sup> Nidd-a II 152, 1–3.

<sup>252</sup> BUDDHADATTA (Nidd-a I, p. ix) concludes that Siri-Saṅghabodhi is Aggabodhi I, who came to the throne c. A.D. 554. This would give a date around A.D. 580 for the completion of Nidd-a.

<sup>253</sup> See Nidd-a I, pp. vii–viii, where the editor ascribes Pj II to Dhammapāla.

<sup>254</sup> See *ibid.*, p. viii.

<sup>255</sup> Gv 60, 5–17.

<sup>256</sup> See p. 148 below.

It seems likely that by the time he came to write his commentaries, those on the Khuddakapāṭha, Suttanipāṭa, Niddesa, and Paṭisambhīdāmagga already existed as well as the Dhammapada-*aṭṭhakathā* and the Jātaka-*aṭṭhakathā*. He seems therefore to have set himself the task of completing the commentaries upon the Khuddaka-nikāya. His commentaries are called Paramatthadipani,<sup>260</sup> and comprise *aṭṭhakathās* upon (1) Udāna, (2) Itivuttaka, (3) Petavatthu, (4) Vimānavatthu, (5) Theragāthā, (6) Therīgāthā, and (7) Cariyāpitaka. At the end of each part of the Paramatthadipani, Dhammapāla states that he wrote it at Badaratitthavihāra,<sup>261</sup> which was in South India, after the style of the old commentaries (*porāṇaṭṭhakathānayaṃ*).<sup>262</sup> The commentary upon the Nettippakaraṇa also has a reference to Badaratitthavihāra.<sup>263</sup>

Dhammapāla states that the exposition he is going to give is in accordance with the views of those dwelling at the Mahāvihāra,<sup>264</sup> from which it can be assumed that he visited Ceylon, and received help there with the writing of his commentaries. There is, however, no specific statement that he made use of Sihala *aṭṭhakathās* in his work, nor does he refer by name to Buddhaghosa even when he quotes his commentaries,<sup>265</sup> but there are not infrequently identical explanations of certain words and phrases,<sup>266</sup> which suggests that Dhammapāla is either following Buddhaghosa tacitly, or he is dependent upon the same Mahāvihāra tradition which Buddhaghosa followed. It is clear that there were variant readings in the material available to him, for he sometimes states an alternative reading in his commentary, and gives alternative interpretations of the relevant verse.<sup>267</sup> Sometimes in ambiguous circumstances the tradition was not certain of the correct interpretation, and Dhammapāla accordingly gives two explanations.<sup>268</sup>

The style of the two commentaries upon the Petavatthu<sup>269</sup> and the Vimānavatthu<sup>270</sup> is similar. Each *vatthu* in the canonical texts is afforded a separate section. Each section falls into three parts, comprising an introductory story

<sup>260</sup> The title Paramatthavibhāvinī also occurs at It-a 95, 24 and 180, 33.

<sup>261</sup> Ud-a 436, 32 = It-a 194, 5 (*Padara*.) = Pv-a 287, 18 (*Vada*.) = Vv-a 355, 13 = Th-a III 210, 23 = Th-i-a 301, 3 (*Padara*.) = Cp-a 336, 7.

<sup>262</sup> Mrs RHYS DAVIDS' interpretation of this as "three commentaries" (Thi tr., p. 178) is based upon a misreading of -n- as -t-. See Mrs RHYS DAVIDS, Thi tr., p. xxiv n. 1.

<sup>263</sup> See Nett 249, 33.

<sup>264</sup> E.g. at Ud-a 2, 6.

<sup>265</sup> E.g. he refers to Vism at Th-a II 206, 1; III 54, 17; 198, 9. See also Mrs RHYS DAVIDS, Thi tr., pp. 426–27.

<sup>266</sup> Cf. the explanation of the word *tathāgata* given at Ps I 45, 10–15 with that at Th-a I 30, 7–12.

<sup>267</sup> E.g. besides the reading *uppacca* at Pv 236 (= II 7.17) Dhammapāla records the v.l. *upecca*, and explains both (Pv-a 103, 29–104, 1).

<sup>268</sup> E.g. two explanations are given for the word *subhe* (Pv 348): *subhe ti suddhe, subhe ti vā tassā ālapanam* (Pv-a 158, 2). See MASEFIELD, Pv-a tr., p. ix.

<sup>269</sup> Ed. E. HARDY, PTS London, 1894; Tr. U BA KYAW and P. MASEFIELD, Peta Stories, PTS London, 1980.

<sup>270</sup> Ed. E. HARDY, PTS London 1901.

which explains the circumstances in which the verses which follow came to be delivered, then the verses, and finally a commentary upon the verses. Dhammapāla attributes the first two of these sections to the Buddha who, when explaining how it was that the verses came to be uttered, himself repeated the relevant verses. From this point of view, then, only the third section forms the commentary proper. The purpose of the commentary is to clarify the identity of the speakers of the verses, and to explain the meanings of the words which occur in the verses, by way of a series of linguistic equivalents and synonyms. There is little exposition of the doctrine supposedly lying behind the verses, and Dhammapāla is relatively silent on matters of doctrinal importance.

The situation with regard to the commentaries upon the Thera,<sup>271</sup> and Therīgāthā<sup>272</sup> is not greatly different. Dhammapāla gives an introduction to each set of verses, usually based upon the Apadāna tradition, although it is not always clear how the various Apadānas were linked with the various elders. In the case of the "great" elders, the stories given in the Manorathapūraṇī and the Dhammapada-*aṭṭhakathā* are closely followed, with some compression and omission of marvels. In each case the elder is stated to have attained *arahant*-ship, and the appropriate Apadāna is then quoted, with a small number of exceptions. Sometimes, however, the Apadāna insertion is made awkwardly; often it is attributed to the wrong elder; and once a non-existent Apadāna is quoted. It seems probable that Dhammapāla did not, in fact, include them in his commentary, but they have been added during the course of the scribal tradition.<sup>273</sup>

Although many of the stories which Dhammapāla gives agree with information which we have about the elders from other sources, some of the stories seem to be deduced from the information given in the verses, or are pure invention, sometimes based upon misunderstanding of the verses.<sup>274</sup> In some cases he mentions conflicting traditions about the elders.<sup>275</sup> It is clear that the text of some of the verses had already been corrupted by the time that Dhammapāla wrote his commentary, and while some of the stories make the meaning of obscure verses clearer, in others it seems that the meaning had already been lost.

Even where no corruption has taken place, it is obvious that Dhammapāla, or the tradition<sup>276</sup> he was following, did not understand the meaning of some of

<sup>271</sup> Ed. F. L. WOODWARD, PTS London, Vol. I, 1940; Vol. II, 1952; Vol. III, 1959.

<sup>272</sup> Ed. E. MÜLLER, PTS London, 1893.

<sup>273</sup> See WOODWARD, Th-a I pp. vi–vii.

<sup>274</sup> See NORMAN, EV I, pp. xxix–xxx, and EV II, pp. xxxi–xxxii.

<sup>275</sup> See Thi-a 128, 26–29, where he draws attention to the difference between the details about Khemā (Thi 139–44) in the *aṭṭhakathās* and the Apadāna. Similarly, two traditions are recorded about Sopāka (Th 489–86). See NORMAN, EV I, p. 199.

<sup>276</sup> There seems to be no evidence for the existence of a Sihala *aṭṭhakathā* upon Th and Thi, as such, although information about the elders would be available in the *aṭṭhakathās* upon the Aṅguttara- and other *nikāyas*. In many ways the Apadāna seems to be intended as a commentary upon Th and Thi.



the words he commented upon.<sup>277</sup> Sometimes he contradicts himself, or gives different explanations of the same verse when it occurs twice,<sup>278</sup> perhaps by oversight, or perhaps because there was a different tradition of explanation for the two occurrences. On the other hand, some of the explanations seem to be very old, and some of them seem to be based upon forms in dialects other than Pāli,<sup>279</sup> which probably means that they were brought from North India centuries earlier.

As in the case of the commentaries upon the *Petavatthu* and *Vimānavatthu*, there are sometimes alternative readings and explanations,<sup>280</sup> which suggests that there were already in the Mahāvihāra tradition collections of commentarial material from various sources with conflicting exegesis.

Since the *Cariyāpiṭaka* consists almost entirely of Jātaka stories in verse, the greater part of the commentary<sup>281</sup> is devoted to the narration of the birth stories in prose. The source for the commentary is several times stated to be the *aṭṭhakathā* or the *Jātakatṭhakathā*,<sup>282</sup> but whether this means the *Jātakatṭhavāṇṇanā* which we possess today, or the *aṭṭhakathās* upon which that text is based, cannot be determined. The latter part of the commentary, however, consists of an explanation of the *Nigamanagāthā* of the *Cariyāpiṭaka*. This enables Dhammapāla to discuss the ten *pāramitās* at length. He points out that some Buddhists recognise only six *pāramitās* in place of the ten recognised by the Theravādins. As is well known, most schools except the Theravādins accept the smaller number, but it would seem more likely that ten represents an increase from six rather than that the rest reduced the number from ten to six, as Dhammapāla suggests.<sup>283</sup>

While it has never been doubted that these commentaries, and those upon the *Udāna*<sup>284</sup> and the *Itivuttaka*,<sup>285</sup> are to be ascribed to Dhammapāla, there

<sup>277</sup> E.g. he did not realise that *phalesin* (Th 527 and 1121) is a future active participle.

<sup>278</sup> E.g. he gives different explanations for Th 909 and 1181, although they are identical.

<sup>279</sup> Commenting upon *cola* (Th 170), Dhammapāla gives an explanation which must have been given originally in a dialect where the word for "thief" was pronounced as *cola* (Th-a II 46, 4–8). The gloss *tosana* given for *abhihāsana* (Th 613) is more suitable for *abhihāsana*, and presumably goes back to a dialect where both words were pronounced in the same way (Th-a II 260, 2–3).

<sup>280</sup> E.g. three explanations are given for the word *indagopaka* (Th 13) at Th-a I 62, 13–17.

<sup>281</sup> Ed. D. L. BARUA, PTS London, 1939; 2nd edition (with indexes by H. Kopp), 1979.

<sup>282</sup> E.g. Cp-a 206, 32; 229, 13; 3, 12; 16, 13.

<sup>283</sup> *Keci pana chabbidhā ti vadanti. tam etāsaṃ saṅghavasena vuttaṃ* (Cp-a 278, 4–5).

<sup>284</sup> Ed. F. L. WOODWARD, PTS London, 1926.

<sup>285</sup> Ed. M. M. BOSE, PTS London, Vol. I, 1934; Vol. II, 1936; Vol. III (Indexes, compiled by H. Kopp), 1977.

has been doubt expressed<sup>286</sup> about the commentary upon the *Nettipakaraṇa*,<sup>287</sup> despite the fact that it too is said to have been composed by Dhammapāla, resident in the Badaratthavihāra. Nevertheless it has been pointed out<sup>288</sup> that from the point of view of style and language the commentary is very similar to Dhammapāla's other works. Like Dhammapāla, the author of the commentary upon the *Nettipakaraṇa* refers to Buddhaghosa's works without naming him.<sup>289</sup>

Nothing is known about the date of Dhammapāla, except that he must be later than Buddhaghosa. There has not, as yet, been found any trace of interdependence between Dhammapāla and Upasena or Mahānāma, which probably means that all three were writing at about the same time. We shall perhaps not be far out if we assume that Dhammapāla composed his works about the middle of the sixth century A.D.

<sup>286</sup> See H. C. RAY, *University of Ceylon History of Ceylon*, Vol. I, Colombo 1959, p. 391.

<sup>287</sup> The PTS ed. of *Nett* includes extracts from *Nett-a* (= *Nett* 194–249).

<sup>288</sup> See *Nett*, p. xv.

<sup>289</sup> *Aṭṭhasāliniyaṃ* (*Nett* 215, 17; 240, 30).

## CHAPTER IV

## LATER POST-CANONICAL TEXTS

## 1. THE LATER CHRONICLES

The Buddhaghosuppatti states<sup>1</sup> that the commentaries brought by Mahinda and the additions which had been made thereto were burned in a great bonfire when Buddhaghosa had finished his commentaries. It has long been recognised that this is merely an exaggerated way of accounting for the fact that the Sihala *aṭṭhakathās* fell into disuse after Buddhaghosa's time. That they did not disappear immediately can be seen from the fact that they were available to the author of the Mahāvamsa, who probably wrote after Buddhaghosa's time,<sup>2</sup> and to the authors of other chronicles, and also to later commentators.

They were certainly still in existence when an unnamed<sup>3</sup> author wrote a commentary upon the Mahāvamsa.<sup>4</sup> It is classified as a *ṭikā* in Burma, where manuscripts of the text were first discovered, but the author's own name for it is the Vamsatthappakkāsini,<sup>5</sup> and the work is stated to be the Padya-(or Pajja-) padoruvamsavaṇṇanā.<sup>6</sup> The name Padyapadoruvamsa for the Mahāvamsa has already been noted.<sup>7</sup>

The *ṭikā* adds little to the accounts of the councils, the rise of the sects, and the sending out of the missions. This perhaps indicates that the author of the Mahāvamsa had already extracted all the information which was available on these subjects from the Sihala *aṭṭhakathās*. The author of the *ṭikā* names a number of sources<sup>8</sup> for the information he gives, of which the *aṭṭhakathā*, presumably the Sihala *aṭṭhakathā*, is the one most frequently mentioned. He also refers to a Vinayaṭṭhakathā, a Dipavamsaṭṭhakathā, and a Cetiyaṭṭhakathā, and quotes the *porāṇas* a number of times. It is noteworthy that he never quotes the Dipavamsa by name,<sup>9</sup> and when he quotes verses which

actually occur in that text he attributes them to the *porāṇas*. This perhaps means that he is quoting them from the same source as the author of the Dipavamsa, rather than from the Dipavamsa itself. Very slight variations which occur would perhaps support this suggestion.<sup>10</sup>

It is very interesting to note that the *ṭikā* also quotes the *Uttaravihāravāsīnam aṭṭhakathā*<sup>11</sup> as a source, for the Uttaravihāra is also known as the Abhayagiri-vihāra,<sup>12</sup> and the inhabitants of that *vihāra* were hostile to the Mahāvihārins. This presumably means that at the time of the separation of the two *vihāras* the Abhayagiri-vihārins had taken the Sihala *aṭṭhakathās* with them, and had added to them material not found in the Mahāvihārin tradition. The fact that the author of the *ṭikā* was able to refer to their *aṭṭhakathā* would seem to mean that the division between the two *vihāras* was not absolute. He does, however, make it clear that he is incorporating only such material as is not in conflict with orthodox tradition.<sup>13</sup> From this source he takes legends about Candagutta and Cāpakka,<sup>14</sup> the nine Nandas who succeeded the sons of Kāṇḍakka,<sup>15</sup> and the story of Susunāga.<sup>16</sup>

There seems to be no doubt that Buddhaghosa's commentaries eventually made all others unnecessary, which led to their ultimate disappearance. Any text which shows acquaintance with the Sihala *aṭṭhakathās* is unlikely, therefore, to be more than two or three centuries later than Buddhaghosa. The same is also likely to be true of the chronicles, especially since, as already noted, the Mahāvamsa seems to have made use of almost all the information available. It has consequently been suggested that the Vamsatthappakkāsini should be dated to the eighth or ninth century A.D.<sup>17</sup>

The quality of the commentary afforded by the *ṭikā* is good. The author shows an excellent knowledge of his subject, and while respecting his authorities is not afraid to point out errors.<sup>18</sup> He even points out a mistake in the Mahāvamsa itself.<sup>19</sup> He is not afraid to give his own opinion, although he makes it clear that it is his opinion.<sup>20</sup>

<sup>10</sup> Cf. Dip I 1 with Mhv-t 36, 1-3.

<sup>11</sup> E.g. at Mhv-t 125, 7-8.

<sup>12</sup> See MALALASEKERA, DPPN, I, p. 360.

<sup>13</sup> *Mayam pi saṅkhepena tesam upattimattam samayāvirodhamattam kathayāma* (Mhv-t 177, 31-32).

<sup>14</sup> Mhv-t 187, 6-7.

<sup>15</sup> Mhv-t 177, 30-31.

<sup>16</sup> Mhv-t 155, 15-16.

<sup>17</sup> See MALALASEKERA, Mhv-t, p. cix.

<sup>18</sup> E.g. *katthaci "duve satāni purise" likhanti; tam pamādalekham* (Mhv-t 284, 20-21 ad Mhv X 27); see also 423, 24-424, 1; 659, 4-5.

<sup>19</sup> Mhv XXIX 44 states that the *porāṇas* did not mention the number of monks of Ceylon who had come to the ceremony. The *ṭikā* points out that the total number was given: *samāgatānaṃ sabbesaṃ bhikkhūnaṃ viuddhippattā khīṇāsavā eva chanavutikotiyo ti porāṇehi bhāsītā ti vuttam hoti* (Mhv-t 521, 5-7).

<sup>20</sup> *Ayaṃ amhūkaṃ khanti* (Mhv-t 208, 20-21).

<sup>1</sup> Bu-up 60, 24-26.

<sup>2</sup> See p. 118 above.

<sup>3</sup> There is a tradition in Ceylon that he was called Mahānāma. See MALALASEKERA, Mhv-t, p. civ.

<sup>4</sup> Ed. G. P. MALALASEKERA, Vamsatthappakkāsini, PTS London, 2 Vols., 1935.

<sup>5</sup> Mhv-t 687, 12.

<sup>6</sup> Mhv-t 689, 5.

<sup>7</sup> See p. 117 above.

<sup>8</sup> See MALALASEKERA, Mhv-t, pp. lvi-lxxii.

<sup>9</sup> To conclude from this that the Dipavamsa was written by nuns seems rather far-fetched. See MALALASEKERA, PLC, pp. 135-37.



There exists a Cambodian version of the Mahāvamsa<sup>21</sup> which is almost twice its length.<sup>22</sup> The redactor has enlarged the text by making a number of additions.<sup>23</sup> At the beginning he has inserted a poem of 677 verses about the earlier Buddhas, and a history of Gotama which has been added seems to be a versified version of the Mahāvagga of the Vinaya-piṭaka. Other insertions are passages from the Vamsatthappakāsinī turned into verse. One insertion concerns Asoka's queen Asandhimittā.<sup>24</sup> The story is not known from other Sinhalese sources, and seems to be dependent upon a fund of stories about Asoka which were current in South-East Asia.

The author calls himself Moggallāna,<sup>25</sup> and since there are signs<sup>26</sup> that the text was copied from an earlier Sinhalese original, he may have been the Moggallāna mentioned in the Mahāvamsa as living in Ceylon in the twelfth century.<sup>27</sup>

As already noted,<sup>28</sup> the Mahāvamsa, in its original form, seems to come to an end halfway through a chapter. Its continuation is traditionally called Cūlavamsa.<sup>29</sup> The first two verses of the continuation are identical with the last two verses of the Dipavamsa,<sup>30</sup> which presumably represents a conscious effort to link the newer part to the old. The first addition<sup>31</sup> covers the period from the death of Mahāsena to Parakkamabāhu I (A.D. 1153–86), and is traditionally ascribed to a *thera* named Dhammakitti.<sup>32</sup> To the portion attributed to him is added a summarising verse and then a verse in an ornate metre, signifying the end of the chapter.<sup>33</sup> The second section<sup>34</sup> covers the period between Vijaya-bāhu II, the successor to Parakkamabāhu I, and Parakkamabāhu IV (c. A.D. 1300). This too ends with a summarising verse and a verse in an ornate metre.<sup>35</sup> The third portion<sup>36</sup> continues to the reign of Kittisirirājasīha (A.D. 1746–81). It is stated<sup>37</sup> that this king obtained copies of the Mahāvamsa from Siam in order to check the deficient version available in Ceylon, and the section is prob-

<sup>21</sup> Ed. G. P. MALALASEKERA, *Extended Mahāvamsa*, Colombo 1937 (Aluvihāra Series, Vol. III).

<sup>22</sup> GEIGER, DM, p. 27.

<sup>23</sup> See MALALASEKERA, K Mhv, pp. xl–l.

<sup>24</sup> See GEIGER, Mhv tr., p. 34 n. 3.

<sup>25</sup> K Mhv XXXVIII 24.

<sup>26</sup> See GEIGER, DM, p. 31.

<sup>27</sup> Mhv LXXVIII 9.

<sup>28</sup> See p. 118 above.

<sup>29</sup> Ed. W. GEIGER, *Cūlavamsa*, PTS London, Vol. I, 1925; Vol. II, 1927. Tr. W. GEIGER, *Cūlavamsa*, PTS London, 2 Vols. 1929.

<sup>30</sup> Mhv XXXVII 51–52 = Dip XXII 75–76.

<sup>31</sup> Mhv XXXVII 51 – LXXIX 84.

<sup>32</sup> According to Mhv LXXXIV 12 he came to Ceylon from Burma in the reign of Parakkamabāhu II.

<sup>33</sup> Mhv LXXIX 85–86.

<sup>34</sup> Mhv LXXX 1–XC 102.

<sup>35</sup> Mhv XC 103–104.

<sup>36</sup> Mhv XCI–C.

<sup>37</sup> Mhv IC 76–80.

ably the work of Mahānayaka Tibbatuvava, who was entrusted with the task of comparing the two versions.<sup>38</sup> The style of this portion differs considerably from that of earlier sections, with verses in ornate metres found within the chapters, and not just at the ends. The very last portion of the text as found in the European edition does not seem to occur in the manuscripts, and is taken from a Sinhalese printed edition.<sup>39</sup> The final chapter is a supplement added by the editors of the Sinhalese edition.<sup>40</sup> It carries the story down to the arrival of the English (*Ingirisi*) in A.D. 1815.

The Mahābodhivamsa<sup>41</sup> or Bodhivamsa is written mainly in prose, with verses at the end of each chapter, taken from the Mahāvamsa,<sup>42</sup> and also at the end of the work. It begins with the Buddha Dipaṅkara, then tells the story of Gotama and his enlightenment at the foot of the *bodhi* tree. It then relates the story of the three councils, Mahinda's mission and the introduction of Buddhism into Ceylon, and the introduction of relics there and of a branch of the *bodhi* tree, followed by a description of the planting of the tree and the institution of the *bodhipūjā* ceremonies.

It is said in the introduction to be a translation from Sinhalese into Pāli.<sup>43</sup> The style of the Pāli is rather artificial and affected, with long compounds and use of Sanskrit, or Sanskrit-derived, words or words in a Sanskritised sense. The work has been described as signifying the beginning of Sanskritised Pāli,<sup>44</sup> although it has been pointed out<sup>45</sup> that some of these features can be found in the Middle Indo-Aryan languages before they were adopted into Sanskrit.

The Mahābodhivamsa is greatly dependent upon the Samantapāsādikā, Mahāvamsa, and the Jātaka-nidāna (or the *aṭṭhakathā* upon which this is based) for its material. The Gandhavamsa and the Sāsana-vamsa<sup>46</sup> do not name the author, but tradition<sup>47</sup> ascribes it to Upatissa, who wrote at the request of Dāthānāga. If this is the same person as the Dāthānāga named in the Mahāvamsa,<sup>48</sup> then the text can be dated to the last quarter of the tenth century A.D.

<sup>38</sup> See GEIGER, Cūl tr., II, p. 263 n. 1.

<sup>39</sup> GEIGER stated (Cūl, p. v), that he had seen no manuscript which went beyond C 292, and the remainder of C and the whole of CI were taken from the Colombo edition.

<sup>40</sup> H. SUMANGALA and DAdS. BATUWANTUDAWA (ed.), *The Mahawansa from the Thirty-seventh Chapter*, Colombo 1877.

<sup>41</sup> Ed. S. A. STRONG, PTS London, 1891.

<sup>42</sup> See GEIGER, DM, p. 77.

<sup>43</sup> Mhv 1, 7–8.

<sup>44</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 159.

<sup>45</sup> See A. K. WARDER, "Some problems of the later Pāli literature," in JPTS 1981, pp. 203–205.

<sup>46</sup> Gv 61, 5; 70, 18; Sās 34, 29.

<sup>47</sup> Quoted from the Sāsana-vamsadīpa by B. C. LAW, *On the chronicles of Ceylon*, Calcutta 1947, p. 39.

<sup>48</sup> Mhv LIV 36. A. K. WARDER (JPTS 1981, p. 198) points out that there is no certainty that the two Dāthānāgas are the same person.

The *Dāthāvamsa*<sup>40</sup> is also a translation from Sinhalese according to the introduction to the text.<sup>41</sup> The work covers the story of early Buddhism from the time of Dipaṅkara onwards, and proceeds to the distribution of the relics after the Buddha's *parinibbāna*. This begins the portion of the story dealing with the tooth relic. Its history is told until it eventually reaches Ceylon in the ninth year of the reign of Sirimeghavanna (A.D. 304–32). The work is also known as *Dantadhātu*.<sup>42</sup>

The text is a work of no small literary merit. It has six chapters. The first is written in the *Jagatī* metre, the second in *Sloka*, the third in *Triṣṭubh*, the fourth in the *Mālinī* metre, the fifth and sixth in the *Vasantatilakā* metre, with the exception of the last verse or two of some of the chapters which are in such metres as *Sragdharā*, *Mandākrāntā*, *Sikharinī* and *Sardūlavikrīḍita*.

The author is named as Dhammakitti,<sup>43</sup> and he states that he wrote his work at the request of the general Parakkama who placed Līlāvati, widow of Parakkamabāhu (called Parakkantibhuja), on the throne.<sup>44</sup> This incident is referred to in the *Mahāvamsa*,<sup>45</sup> and can be dated to A.D. 1211, so the work must have been composed shortly after this.

The *Thūpavamsa*<sup>46</sup> states that it was written by the *thera* Vācissara,<sup>47</sup> who translated it from Sinhalese because an earlier *Thūpavamsa* in Pāli was not satisfactory.<sup>48</sup> If this Vācissara is the *thera* of that name mentioned in the *Mahāvamsa*,<sup>49</sup> then he lived between A.D. 1230 and 1276.

The central theme of the work is the building of the Mahāthūpa by Duṭṭhagāmaṇī, who was ruler of Ceylon 101–77 B.C. The work follows the accepted pattern for such texts by beginning with the resolve to become a Buddha which Gotama made in the time of Dipaṅkara. It recounts Gotama's births under successive Buddhas, and then his life and *parinibbāna* in this era. The history of the relics in India and Ceylon is then related down to the time of the construction of the Mahāthūpa. The text ends with the death of Duṭṭhagāmaṇī.

The material in the *Thūpavamsa* is taken, with only little change, from earlier works,<sup>50</sup> including the *Buddhavamsa* and its commentary, the *Jātakaniḍāna*, the *Dīgha-nikāya* and its commentary, the *Samantapāsādikā*, the *Dīpavamsa* and the *Mahāvamsa* with its *ṭīkā*. Some material, untraceable in earlier works available to us now, e.g. the story of Asoka obtaining relics for

his *thūpas* from Ajātasattu's underground *thūpa*, is presumably taken from *aṭṭhakūḍās* not utilised by other chronicle writers, and perhaps preserved only in South-East Asia.

Other *vamsa* (chronicle) texts deal with the history of a relic or a place of veneration. The *Haṭṭhavanagalla-vihāra-vamsa*<sup>51</sup> tells the history of the temple of Attanagalla, which marked the spot where Sirisaṅghabodhi, after abdicating the kingship, gave his head (on which there was a price) to a poor man so that he could gain the money. It tells the history of the *vihāra* down to the time of Parakkamabāhu II (A.D. 1234–69), but is quoted in the *Pūjāvaliya*, which was written in A.D. 1266, so its date of composition must lie between the two.<sup>52</sup>

The author is not named, but he states that he wrote his work at the request of Anomadassi.<sup>53</sup> The work is in eleven chapters and is written in a very ornate style of Pāli. The text is a *campu*, a *kāvya* in mixed prose and verse. The metres employed in the verses include *Mālinī*, *Vasantatilakā*, and *Triṣṭubh*.

The continuing popularity of this type of chronicle text is shown by the existence of the *Cha-kesa-dhātu-vamsa*,<sup>54</sup> a modern Burmese work, which tells the history of the six hair-relic shrines (*thūpas*). It is in prose, with a few verses interspersed in it. The name and date of the author are unknown.<sup>55</sup>

Although the *Jinakālamālī*<sup>56</sup> is not called a *vamsa*, it is a work very much in the *vamsa* tradition. It was written in Thailand by a *thera* called Ratanapaṇṇa, and the author states that he wrote it in a year corresponding to A.D. 1516,<sup>57</sup> although it seems clear that events occurring up to A.D. 1527 are included.<sup>58</sup> The text is a study of the epochs of Buddhism, as it originated in India, spread to Ceylon, and thence to South-East Asia.

It falls into six parts: events up to the time of the *parinibbāna* of Gotama Buddha; the three councils; the history of Buddhism in Ceylon; the history of Haripuṇḍaya (Lampoon) until A.D. 1292; an account of the Lānnā kingdom, and the introduction of the Sinhalese form of Buddhism into Thailand; the spread and influence of this, an account of recent events known to the author, and a eulogy of King Tilok and his great-grandson. It has been pointed out

<sup>40</sup> Ed. C. E. GODAKUMBURA, PTS London, 1956.

<sup>41</sup> See GODAKUMBURA, *Att*, p. x.

<sup>42</sup> *Att* 1, 13–14. For Anomadassi, see MALALASEKERA, DPPN, I, p. 102.

<sup>43</sup> Ed. J. P. MINAYEFF, JPTS 1885, pp. 5–16.

<sup>44</sup> JPTS 1885, p. 5.

<sup>45</sup> Ed. A. P. BUDDHADATTA, PTS London, 1962. Tr. N. A. JAYAWICKRAMA, *Epochs of the conqueror*, PTS London, 1968.

<sup>46</sup> *Satthunibbānato vassānam satthiadhike dvisahassa parimāṇe, aṭṭhasattatiadhike ca aṭṭhasata-Sakarāje Mūsikasaññite samvachchare* (Jinak 129, 9–11). The designation of years by animal names (*mūsika*) is borrowed from the Chinese "rat", etc. See JAYAWICKRAMA, *Jinak* tr., pp. xii–xiii.

<sup>47</sup> It seems probable that the author himself made these additions, either because important events occurred after the completion of the work which he thought should be recorded, or as the beginning of a supplement, on the lines of the *Cūlavamsa*. See JAYAWICKRAMA, *Jinak* tr., pp. xxviii–xxix.

<sup>48</sup> T. W. RHYS DAVIDS and R. MORRIS (ed.), JPTS 1884, p. 109–51. Ed. and tr. B. C. LAW, Lahore, 1925.

<sup>49</sup> *Dāth* I 10.

<sup>50</sup> Gv 72, 5.

<sup>51</sup> *Dāth* VI 6.

<sup>52</sup> *Dāth* I 6.

<sup>53</sup> *Mhv* LXXX 49–50.

<sup>54</sup> Ed. B. C. LAW, PTS London, 1935. Tr. B. C. LAW, *The legend of the topes*, Calcutta 1945. Ed. and tr. N. A. JAYAWICKRAMA, SBB London, 1971.

<sup>55</sup> *Thūp* 105, 19–20.

<sup>56</sup> *Thūp* 1, 17–20.

<sup>57</sup> *Mhv* LXXXI 18. See GEIGER, *DM*, p. 84.

<sup>58</sup> See GEIGER, *DM*, p. 85.



that the later chapters which are devoted to the exaltation of the royal family are more a *prasaṅgi* than a *vaṃsa* text.<sup>68</sup>

The sources of this work include Pāli canonical and non-canonical texts, some written in Ceylon as late as the thirteenth century.<sup>69</sup> The text is important for the information it gives about the relationship between Ceylon and Thailand in medieval times.<sup>70</sup> The information it gives about religious buildings and shrines in the Lānā and neighbouring kingdoms seems to be verified by archaeological evidence,<sup>71</sup> which suggests that the work is also trustworthy when it deals with less verifiable events, such as the council which, as already noted,<sup>72</sup> is reported to have been held in A.D. 1475–77 to cleanse the *tipiṭaka* of scribal errors.<sup>73</sup>

The language in which the Jinakālamāli is written shows some interesting features, e.g. the unhistorical gemination of consonants and the converse, unusual retroflexion of dentals, and unusual spellings. These were regarded as errors and removed from the European edition,<sup>74</sup> but it is possible that they are genuine characteristics of Pāli as it was spoken in Northern Thailand in the sixteenth century, or actual features of the writing system used by the Thais when they gave up using the Sinhalese script for writing Pāli.<sup>75</sup>

Another text dealing with the history of Thailand is the Saṅgitiṃvaṃsa,<sup>76</sup> of which one chapter has been published in a European edition. It is attributed to Vimaladharmā, and was composed in the eighteenth century.<sup>77</sup>

The Sandesakathā<sup>78</sup> is another late historical text, written mainly in prose with a few verses inserted. It gives information about the writing of a number of texts, including Anuruddha's Abhidhammatthasaṅgaha,<sup>79</sup> and throws some light on the relationship between Ceylon and Burma in medieval times. The editor gives no information about it, but it is clearly modern since it includes a date 2345 years after the *parinibbāna* of the Buddha,<sup>80</sup> which is equivalent to A.D. 1801.

<sup>68</sup> See *ibid.*, p. xv.

<sup>69</sup> See *ibid.*, pp. xix–xxi.

<sup>70</sup> E.g. the visit of Thai monks to Ceylon, their ordination there in A.D. 1424, and the subsequent introduction of the Sihala dispensation into Thailand (Jinak 92–95).

<sup>71</sup> See JAYAWICKRAMA, Jinak tr., p. xvii.

<sup>72</sup> See p. 12 above.

<sup>73</sup> Although some of the dates the author gives seem to be doubtful. See JAYAWICKRAMA, Jinak tr., p. xiii.

<sup>74</sup> The editor says nothing about this, but see JAYAWICKRAMA, Jinak tr., pp. 187–210.

<sup>75</sup> See JAYAWICKRAMA, Jinak tr., pp. viii–ix.

<sup>76</sup> See G. CÆPÈS, "Une recension Pālie des Annales d'Ayuthya," in BEFEO 14 (1914), 3, pp. 1–31, where an ed. and tr. (French) of ch. 7 is given.

<sup>77</sup> See *ibid.*, p. 2. See also H. SADDHATISSA, "Pāli literature of Thailand," in COTSINS, BSIBH, pp. 219–20.

<sup>78</sup> Ed. J. P. MINAYEFF, JPTS 1885, pp. 17–28.

<sup>79</sup> Sandes 28, 27–28.

<sup>80</sup> *Sammāsambuddhaparinibbānato pañcacaṭṭhāsisatisatadvisahasase jīnasāsanavasse* (Sandes 28, 20–21).

Another text which it is appropriate to deal with here, although it is a historical romance rather than a chronicle, is the Buddhaghosuppaṭṭi.<sup>81</sup> It was written by Mahāmaṅgala, who lived in the fourteenth century in Burma, if he is the same person as the grammarian Maṅgala.<sup>82</sup> Although he states that he has made use of material left by the former teachers,<sup>83</sup> much of the information he gives differs from that available to us from other sources, as the author of the Sāsanaṃvaṃsa has pointed out.<sup>84</sup> The Mahāvaṃsa<sup>85</sup> informs us that Buddhaghosa translated the commentaries into Māgadhi, i.e. Pāli, but the Buddhaghosuppaṭṭi states<sup>86</sup> that he translated the scriptures themselves. It has already been noted<sup>87</sup> that the statement that Mahinda's commentaries were burned when Buddhaghosa completed his task is clearly falsified by the fact that those commentaries were available to authors writing centuries later than Buddhaghosa.

## 2. THE LATER COMMENTARIES

### 2.1. *Aṭṭhakathās*

The task of writing commentaries upon the canonical texts for which none had as yet been made continued in the centuries after Dhammapāla. The fact that Dhammapāla wrote a commentary upon the Cariyāpitaka but not the Buddhavaṃsa suggests that there was already a commentary upon the latter text in existence, but it is strange that he never refers to it.<sup>88</sup> As has been noted,<sup>89</sup> the Gandhavaṃsa attributes such a commentary to Buddhaddatta. A commentary ascribed to Buddhaddatta exists,<sup>90</sup> but although it states that it was written at the request of Buddhastha,<sup>91</sup> as was the Vinaya-vinicchaya,<sup>92</sup> at

<sup>81</sup> Ed. and tr. J. GRAY, London 1892.

<sup>82</sup> See GEIGER, PLL, 40. 3. GRAY (Bu-up tr., pp. 32–33) suggests that the author is to be identified with the tutor of the Vedohā who wrote the Rasavāhini, in which case he lived in the thirteenth or fourteenth century.

<sup>83</sup> *Pubbacariyānaṃ santikā yathāpariyattim* (Bu-up 67, 2–3).

<sup>84</sup> Sās 30, 17–21 points out that in Vism (711, 5) it is stated that the work was composed at the request of Saṅghapāla, whereas in Bu-up (53, 4–5) the *thera* is named Saṅgharāja.

<sup>85</sup> Mhv XXXVII 244.

<sup>86</sup> *Bhagavato sāsanaṃ dipabhāsato parivattetvā Māgadhabhāṣaya divase divase likhī* (Bu-up 59, 16–17).

<sup>87</sup> See p. 138 above.

<sup>88</sup> Not even in Cp-a, where, as B. M. BARUA points out (BUDDHADATTA, *COFF.*, pp. 177–78), he might have been expected to do so.

<sup>89</sup> See p. 131 above.

<sup>90</sup> Ed. I. B. HORNER, Madhurattahavilāsinī, PTS London, 1946. Tr. I. B. HORNER, The clarifier of the sweet meaning, SBB London, 1978.

<sup>91</sup> Bv-a 1, 26–27.

<sup>92</sup> Vin-vn 3177.

Kāvirapattana,<sup>92</sup> which is where the Abhidhammāvatāra was written,<sup>94</sup> there are doubts about this attribution.

First, unlike the other commentaries attributed to Buddhадатта, the Madhurattavilāsinī includes a reference to one of Buddhaghosa's works,<sup>95</sup> without naming the author. More important is the fact that it states<sup>96</sup> that the story about Kanaka's rebirth as a *devaputta* is to be taken from the commentary upon the Vimānavatthu named Vimalatthavilāsinī. The story is to be found in Dhammapāla's commentary upon the Vimānavatthu<sup>97</sup> but, as already noted,<sup>98</sup> this is entitled Paramatthadipani. The Gandhavaṃsa, however, calls the same commentary Vimalavilāsinī,<sup>99</sup> and it seems very likely that the reference is indeed to Dhammapāla's commentary. If this is so, then it is clear that the Madhurattavilāsinī is not by the Buddhадатта who was a contemporary of Buddhaghosa. An alternative explanation is that there was an early commentary upon the Vimānavatthu, entitled Vimalatthavilāsinī, from which both Buddhадатта and Dhammapāla drew their material. This would have become redundant after Dhammapāla wrote his Paramatthadipani, and then disappeared.

Although this second suggestion is quite possible, the style of the four summaries attributed to Buddhадатта is so different from that of the commentary upon the Buddhavaṃsa that, although this may be due in part to the difference in character of the works, it seems quite reasonable to suppose that there were, in fact, two Buddhадаттас.

The last canonical text to gain a commentary was the Apadāna.<sup>100</sup> Although the Gandhavaṃsa ascribes a commentary upon this text to Buddhaghosa,<sup>101</sup> the fact that its stories are sometimes borrowed from the commentary upon the Theragāthā, and reference is specifically made to this on one occasion,<sup>102</sup> shows that the work is later than Dhammapāla. No author's name is given either at the beginning or at the end.

Besides the commentary upon the Theragāthā, material is also taken from the Dhammapada-aṭṭhakathā. The Nidānakathā at the beginning is based upon the Jātakanidāna and the corresponding portions of the Buddhavaṃsa-aṭṭhakathā. The stories in the commentary upon the Buddhāpadāna are taken from the Dhammapada-aṭṭhakathā, the Jātakatthavaṇṇanā, and the Culla-

<sup>92</sup> Bv-a 299, 16.

<sup>94</sup> Abhidh-av 138, 4.

<sup>95</sup> *Ayaṃ gāthā Atthasāliniṃ Dhammosaṅgaṇi-aṭṭhakathānidānavāṇṇanāya Dipaṅkarabuddhavaṃse likhitā* (Bv-a 126, 29–30).

<sup>96</sup> Bv-a 284, 27.

<sup>97</sup> Vv-a 314.

<sup>98</sup> See p. 134 above.

<sup>99</sup> Gv 60, 8.

<sup>100</sup> C. E. GODAKUMBURA (ed.), *Visuddhajanavilāsinī*, PTS London, 1954.

<sup>101</sup> See p. 121 above.

<sup>102</sup> *Gamanavaṇṇanagāthānaṃ attho Theragāthāṭṭhakathāyaṃ vutto yeva* (Ap-a 540, 20–21).

vagga of the Vinaya-piṭaka. The greater part of the comment upon the Paṭcekkabuddhāpadāna is taken from the commentary upon the Khagga-visāṇasutta of the Suttanipāta found in the Paramatthajotikā.<sup>103</sup>

Although the text comments upon the Buddhāpadāna, the Paṭcekkabuddhāpadāna and the Therāpadāna portions, there is no comment upon the Therāpadāna portion, and no commentary seems to exist upon that section of the canon.<sup>104</sup>

When a full commentary is given to an Apadāna, there is an introductory story, and the verses are then commented upon separately. The usual method of commenting<sup>105</sup> is to explain a word with a (later) synonym, e.g. absolutive forms in *-tvāna* are explained by *-tvā* forms. Some of these explanations are repeated over and over again, but as the commentary continues, only words which seem obscure are explained. After the commentary upon Apadāna No. 181, the stories are not repeated but the author merely states that they are the same as those already given, with some differences of merit done, the locality, names etc. Thereafter stories are only related in the case of well-known *theras*, or when there is some special significance.

The suggestion that the commentary is late<sup>106</sup> is confirmed by the fact that the author shows some knowledge of Sanskrit and Sanskrit grammarians and grammatical terms, e.g. *veṅyākaraṇā ti Canda-Pāṇiniya-Kulāpūḍibhākarāṇe chekū*.<sup>107</sup> He mentions the Kaccāyanappakaraṇa<sup>108</sup> and quotes a *sutta* from the Kaccāyana-vutti.<sup>109</sup> He also includes a Pāli version of a Sanskrit stanza setting out five rules of *nirutti*.<sup>110</sup>

There is a commentary upon the *mātikās* of the seven texts of the Abhidhamma-piṭaka entitled Mohavicchedanī.<sup>111</sup> Despite the fact that it is called a *mātikatthavaṇṇanā*, it is not usually regarded as an *aṭṭhakathā*, but as an Abhidhamma work.<sup>112</sup> It was written by the *thera* Kassapa who lived in the Coja country in South India between A.D. 1160 and 1230.<sup>113</sup> He states that he is following the tradition of the Mahāvihāra,<sup>114</sup> but this probably does not mean that he studied there, but only that he was following the teachings of Buddhaghosa and others.<sup>115</sup>

<sup>103</sup> See GODAKUMBURA, Ap-a, p. xv. There are also references to the Atthasālinī at Ap-a 194, 17 and 201, 10–11.

<sup>104</sup> See GODAKUMBURA, Ap-a, pp. xiv–xv.

<sup>105</sup> See *ibid.*, pp. xvii–xviii.

<sup>106</sup> See L. S. COUSINS, rev. of de Silva DAT, in *Religion*, II, p. 162.

<sup>107</sup> Ap-a 220, 2–3.

<sup>108</sup> Ap-a 491, 19.

<sup>109</sup> Ap-a 102, 19.

<sup>110</sup> Ap-a 102, 17–18.

<sup>111</sup> Ed. A. P. BUDDHADATTA and A. K. WARDER, PTS London, 1961.

<sup>112</sup> See BUDDHADATTA, Moh, p. viii.

<sup>113</sup> See *ibid.*, p. xi.

<sup>114</sup> Moh 1, 21.

<sup>115</sup> See WARDER, Moh, p. xvii.



He does not restrict himself to explaining the *mātikās*,<sup>116</sup> which in the case of the Kathāvatthu means a list of the topics treated in that text, but uses the commentary upon the *mātikās* as a framework upon which to expound the whole of the Abhidhamma system as current in his day. He succeeds in doing this in a very scholarly and comprehensive way.

## 2.2. *Ṭīkā*s

A *ṭīkā* is a secondary commentary, i.e. a commentary upon a commentary.<sup>117</sup> The word is, however, also used occasionally of a commentary upon a non-canonical text.<sup>118</sup> The Saddhammasaṅgaha tells<sup>119</sup> how the *ṭīkā*s came to be written after a conference held under the presidency of the *thera* Mahā-Kassapa, with Parakkamabāhu I (A.D. 1153–86) as patron, but there is evidence for the existence of *ṭīkā*s at a much earlier date than this. In his commentary upon the Udāna Dhammapāla refers to a *ṭīkā* upon the Kathāvatthu,<sup>120</sup> and since the Sāsana-vamsa states that Ānanda was the first to write *ṭīkā*s,<sup>121</sup> this has been understood<sup>122</sup> as a reference to Ānanda's Mūla-*ṭīkā*<sup>123</sup> upon the Abhidhamma-piṭaka. The fact that certain portions of the same commentary are very similar to passages in other *ṭīkā*s may mean that they existed in Dhammapāla's time and he was borrowing material from them,<sup>124</sup> but the possibility of later writers of *ṭīkā*s borrowing from Dhammapāla, or the sources he was following, cannot be ruled out.<sup>125</sup>

The Gandhavaṃsa states<sup>126</sup> that Dhammapāla was the author of the *ṭīkā*s upon the Visuddhimagga, the *aṭṭhakathās* upon the Dīgha-nikāya and three other *nikāyas*, the *aṭṭhakathās* on the Jātaka, the Nettippakaraṇa, and the Buddhavaṃsa. The Sāsana-vamsa states<sup>127</sup> that he was responsible for the *ṭīkā*s

<sup>116</sup> A detailed investigation into the *mātikās* is made by WARDER (Moh, pp. xix–xxvii).

<sup>117</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, pp. 192–93. A supplement to a *ṭīkā* is called an *anuṭṭikā*.

<sup>118</sup> E.g. Mahāvamsa-*ṭīkā* (see p. 138 above) and Milinda-*ṭīkā* (see p. 150 below).

<sup>119</sup> Saddhamma-s 58, 27–60, 24.

<sup>120</sup> *Vūṭhāro pana . . . antarābhavavācīro Kathāvatthupakaraṇassa ṭīkāya gahetabbo* (Ud-a 94, 7–9).

<sup>121</sup> *Abhidhammaṭṭikam pana Ānandathero akāsi. sū ca sabbāsaṃ ṭīkānaṃ ādibhū-tattā Mūlaṭīkā ti pākāṭā* (Sās 33, 16–17). Cf. *Ānando nāmācariyo sattābhīdhamma-gandha-aṭṭhakathāya Mūlaṭikam nāma ṭīkam akāsi* (Gv 60, 3–4).

<sup>122</sup> See COUSINS, op. cit. (in n. 106), p. 161.

<sup>123</sup> No Ee yet published.

<sup>124</sup> E.g. Ud-a 22, 22–23, 16 ≠ Sv-pt I 59, 10–60, 6; Ud-a 250, 22 = Sp-ṭ (Be) III 1960 360, 29; Cp-a 276–332 = Sv-pt I 86–130. CPD (Vol. I, p. xxviii) seems to imply that Dhammapāla was making use of *ṭīkā*s, although DE SILVA (DAT I, pp. xlii–xliii) seems to regard these parallels as evidence for common authorship.

<sup>125</sup> See A. K. WARDER, "Some problems of the later Pāli literature," in JPTS 1981, pp. 201.

<sup>126</sup> Gv 60, 10–15.

<sup>127</sup> Sās 33, 18–21.

upon the Visuddhimagga, and on the *aṭṭhakathās* upon the Dīgha-, Majjhima-, and Saṃyutta-nikāyas, and ascribes the other *ṭīkā*s to other *theras*.<sup>128</sup> Scholars have long recognised that there are difficulties in assuming that the Dhammapāla who wrote the *ṭīkā*s was the same as the author of the *aṭṭhakathās*, particularly as, in the case of the Netti, this would involve him in writing a *ṭīkā* upon his own *aṭṭhakathā*.<sup>129</sup> The colophon to the *ṭīkā* upon the Visuddhimagga states that it was written at the request of the *thera* Dāthānāga who was residing at the Siddhagāma *pariveṇa*.<sup>130</sup> Since the Mahāvamsa states<sup>131</sup> that this *pariveṇa* was built by Sena IV, who ruled A.D. 973–76, and refers<sup>132</sup> to a *thera* called Dāthānāga preaching the *Abhidhamma* during the reign of Sena's successor Mahinda IV, it would seem very likely that this *ṭīkā* was written towards the end of the tenth century A.D. Since the Gandhavaṃsa lists four authors with the name Dhammapāla,<sup>133</sup> it seems very probable that the *aṭṭhakathās* and this *ṭīkā* are by different Dhammapālas. There seems to be no good reason for identifying the *ṭīkā*-author with the Dhammapāla who lived at Nālandā in the seventh century A.D., and is mentioned by the Chinese pilgrims.<sup>134</sup>

In the absence of any evidence to the contrary, it seems reasonable to assume that the Gandhavaṃsa is correct in stating that the *ṭīkā*s to the Visuddhimagga and the four *nikāyas* are by the same person. An examination of the *ṭīkā* upon the Dīgha-nikāya-aṭṭhakathā<sup>135</sup> shows that the author was acquainted with Sanskrit and the Sanskrit grammarians, and knew something about the main systems of Indian philosophy. He quotes Bhartṛhari's Vākyapadīya and the Amarakośa, and seems especially interested in grammar and syntax.<sup>136</sup>

It is particularly interesting to note that the author of this *ṭīkā* sometimes identifies the holders of views attributed to "some" (*keci*) by Buddhaghosa in the Sumaṅgalavilāsini. These are occasionally said to be the Uttaravihāravāsins or the Abhayagirivāsins,<sup>137</sup> although the difference between the two is not entirely clear,<sup>138</sup> since the terms are elsewhere regarded as synonymous. This would seem to indicate that intercourse between the two *vihāras*, which has

<sup>128</sup> It attributes the *ṭīkā* on the Aṅguttara-aṭṭhakathā to Sāriputta.

<sup>129</sup> See HARDY, Nett, p. ix n. 6.

<sup>130</sup> Vism-mht (Ne) III, 1691, 9–10.

<sup>131</sup> Mhv LIV 6.

<sup>132</sup> Mhv LIV 36.

<sup>133</sup> Gv 66–67.

<sup>134</sup> The suggestion was rejected by E. HARDY ("Ein Beitrag zur Frage, ob Dhammapāla im Nālandasaṅghārāma seine Kommentare geschrieben", in ZDMG 51, 1897, pp. 105–27), but has recently been revived by DE SILVA (DAT I, p. l).

<sup>135</sup> Ed. L. DE SILVA, Dīghanikāya-aṭṭhakathā-ṭīkā Linathavannanā, PTS London, 3 vols., 1970.

<sup>136</sup> See DE SILVA, DAT, pp. l–lviii.

<sup>137</sup> See *ibid.*, pp. lix–lxiii.

<sup>138</sup> It has been suggested that Abhayagirivāsins means all non-Mahāvihāravāsins, whereas Uttaravihārin means only the headquarters of the Abhayagirivāsins at the Uttaravihāra. See DE SILVA, DAT, p. lxi.

already been noted in the discussion about the sources of the Mahāvamsa-*ṭīkā*,<sup>139</sup> was still going on.

A *ṭīkā* upon the Jātakatthavaṇṇanā exists, and has been utilised by the editors of the Critical Pāli Dictionary<sup>140</sup> and by the editor of the European edition of the Kuṇāla-jātaka. It seems never to have been published, even in Burma, and it is consequently not possible to state whether or not it is the *ṭīkā* attributed to Dhammapāla in the Gandhavamsa.<sup>141</sup>

The Gandhavamsa mentions a Milindapaṇhavaṇṇanā,<sup>142</sup> but gives no author's name. An edition of a text entitled Milinda-*ṭīkā*,<sup>143</sup> also called Madhuratthapa-kāsini, has been published. It is based upon a single manuscript in Cambodian characters. According to the colophon it was written by Mahātipiṭaka-Cūḷabha-yatthera,<sup>144</sup> and is probably to be dated to A.D. 1474.<sup>145</sup>

The text starts with a detailed description of the six-fold way of commenting upon the meaning of a word, and then proceeds to comment upon difficult words and phrases, drawing upon information in the Abhidhānappadipikā and a number of, as yet unpublished, *ṭīkā*s.<sup>146</sup> Amidst the information it gives is the complete list of the Buddha's 80 *anuvyañjanas* (minor characteristics).<sup>147</sup> It deals, however, with only a small number of the problems which occur in the Milindapaṇha, and much of the text is devoted to tracing the sources of the Jātaka stories mentioned therein. One portion of the *ṭīkā* is devoted to a collection of all the verses which occur in the Milindapaṇha, but since the list does not agree with the contents of the edition as we know it, this raises questions about the date and form of our modern editions.<sup>148</sup> In this connection it is to be noted that the author of the *ṭīkā* states that the five introductory verses of the Milindapaṇha, and other sentences in the prologue and epilogue, were composed by Buddhaghosa.<sup>149</sup> This presumably shows the existence of a tradition that the Milindapaṇha was revised or recast by Buddhaghosa, or during the time of Buddhaghosa, and this may account for some of the interpolations which have already been noted in this work.<sup>150</sup> The last part of the *ṭīkā* is called Saṃkhyā-sarūpa. Like the Saṅgītisutta of the Dīgha-nikāya (33), it collects together a number of miscellaneous items and presents them in a numerical way.

<sup>139</sup> See p. 139 above.

<sup>140</sup> See CPD, Vol. I, p. xxviii.

<sup>141</sup> See BOLLÉE, KJ, p. xii, where it is accepted that it is Dhammapāla's *ṭīkā*.

<sup>142</sup> Gv 65, 29.

<sup>143</sup> Ed. P. S. JAINI, PTS London, 1961.

<sup>144</sup> Mil-ṭ 71, 23–24.

<sup>145</sup> See JAINI, Mil-ṭ, p. xiv.

<sup>146</sup> See *ibid.*, p. vii.

<sup>147</sup> Mil-ṭ 17, 12–18, 11.

<sup>148</sup> See JAINI, Mil-ṭ, p. xi.

<sup>149</sup> *Bhadanta-Buddhaghosācariyena katā ti parihāro. na kevalaṃ pañca gāthā va. Thera-Rājavacane pi aññaṃ pubbāparavacanāṃ pi tena vuttaṃ* (Mil-ṭ 3, 16–18).

<sup>150</sup> See p. 111 above.

Besides the early (*purāṇa*) *ṭīkā*s, produced between the seventh and twelfth centuries, commentators continued in the following centuries to compile later (*nava*) *ṭīkā*s, and *anuyāṭikā*s in turn upon the *ṭīkā*s.<sup>151</sup>

### 3. LATER ABHIDHAMMA TEXTS

The study of the *Abhidhamma*, based at first upon *aṭṭhakathā*s and summaries written in India and Ceylon, was continued in a number of manuals attributed to Sinhalese and Burmese authors. One of the most famous of these is the *Abhidhammatthasaṅgaha*,<sup>152</sup> which is attributed to Anuruddha, who is said to have been a native of Ceylon.<sup>153</sup> The fact that a paraphrase of this work was compiled by Sāriputta, who lived during the reign of Parakkamabāhu I (A.D. 1153–86),<sup>154</sup> gives a lower limit for its date, and we shall probably not be far wrong if we assume that Anuruddha lived at the end of the eleventh century or the beginning of the twelfth.

The text does not aim to give a summary of the seven books of the *Abhidhamma*-piṭaka, and in fact mentions only one book by name,<sup>155</sup> but covers the whole field of *Abhidhamma* in a very condensed way, with mnemonic summaries inserted after every section. It begins with an analysis of mind and consciousness and the objects of consciousness in the world of phenomena, and continues with a discussion of the planes of existence and a classification of *kamma*. It deals with dependent origination (*paṭicca-samuppāda*) and causal relations (*paṭṭhāna-naya*), and finishes with a statement about subjects for mental culture (*kammaṭṭhāna*), the path of purity, and the attainment of release.

The same author wrote the *Nāmarūpapariccheda*,<sup>156</sup> containing 1845 verses in thirteen sections. He states that he is following the tradition of the Mahāvīhāra,<sup>157</sup> and he mentions Ceylon<sup>158</sup> in the colophon. The work does not aim to be as comprehensive as the *Abhidhammatthasaṅgaha*, and as its name suggests, it deals with general subjects such as *nāma* and *rūpa*, *kamma*, mindfulness

<sup>151</sup> It is not practicable to try to list them all. For details see Gv 60–66 and CPD, Vol. I, Epilegomena pp. 37\*–60\*.

<sup>152</sup> Ed. T. W. RHYS DAVIDS, JPTS 1884, pp. 1–46. Tr. S. Z. AUNG and Mrs. C. A. F. RHYS DAVIDS, Compendium of philosophy, PTS London, 1910.

<sup>153</sup> Gv 67, 2.

<sup>154</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, pp. 168–69. For other commentaries upon *Abhidh-s*, see H. SADDHATISSA, "The *Abhidhammatthasaṅgaha* and its *ṭīkā*," in *Studies in Indian Philosophy*, Ahmedabad 1981, pp. 315–23.

<sup>155</sup> *Paccayā nāma Paṭṭhāne caturisati sabbathā* (*Abhidh-s* 39, 11).

<sup>156</sup> Ed. A. P. BUDDHADATTA, JPTS 1913–14, pp. 5–113.

<sup>157</sup> *Nāmar-p* 2.

<sup>158</sup> *Nāmar-p* 1854.



(*anussati*), and insight (*vipassanā*). The work is composed for the most part in the *Sloka* metre, with verses in other metres at the end of each section. Some of these verses show an elegance and feeling for style<sup>159</sup> which shows that Anuruddha was quite an accomplished poet.

The Paramatthavinicaya<sup>160</sup> is also ascribed to Anuruddha. It contains 1142 *Sloka* verses arranged in 29 sections, and in the colophon states that it was written in accordance with the views of the Mahāvihāra by someone born in the town called Kāvira in the state of Kañcīpura, while dwelling in the town of Tañja in the Tamba kingdom. Since Kañcīpura is in South India, this has led to the suggestion<sup>161</sup> that the author of the Paramatthavinicaya is not the same Anuruddha who wrote the Abhidhammatthasaṅgaha and the Nāmarūpa-pariccheda. The subjects treated include mind, consciousness, form, and *nibbāna*.

The-Saccasaṅkhepa<sup>162</sup> consists of 387 verses arranged in five chapters. The colophon states that it was written by Dhammapāla while dwelling at the Mahāvihāra at Badaratittha,<sup>163</sup> which doubtless accounts for the Sāsanaṃsa ascribing it to the *thera* Dhammapāla,<sup>164</sup> but the Gandhavaṃsa attributes it to a Culladhammapāla.<sup>165</sup> The Saddhammasaṅgaha states<sup>166</sup> that the author was Ānanda, but this is probably a mistake, arising from the fact that Dhammapāla was Ānanda's pupil.<sup>167</sup> If this is the Ānanda who wrote the Mūla-tīkā which is referred to by Dhammapāla in the *aṭṭhakathā* upon the Udāna,<sup>168</sup> then Culladhammapāla would, in any case, be approximately contemporary with the commentator Dhammapāla. The five chapters deal with *rūpa*, sensations (*vedanā*), mind, miscellaneous subjects, e.g. pride and sloth, and *nibbāna*.

The Nāmarūpasamāsa,<sup>169</sup> also known as the Khemappakarāṇa, is a short prose work, with a few verses interspersed in it, and a final section of 28 mnemonic verses. The Gandhavaṃsa attributes it to the *thera* Khema of Ceylon.<sup>170</sup> There is a commentary upon it by Vācissara,<sup>171</sup> written in the twelfth century, which suggests that the work is to be assigned to the tenth or eleventh century. It consists of short descriptions of mind, and *kusala* and *akusala cetasikas*. The mnemonic verses include lists of the four elements, etc.

<sup>159</sup> E.g. Nāmar-p 120; 208; and 478.

<sup>160</sup> There is as yet no Ee of this, but the typescript of an edition by A. P. BUDHADATTA is in the possession of the PTS London, awaiting publication.

<sup>161</sup> By BUDHADATTA in the typescript mentioned in the previous note.

<sup>162</sup> Ed. P. DHAMMĀRĀMA, JPTS 1917–19, pp. 3–25.

<sup>163</sup> Sacc 25, 15–19.

<sup>164</sup> Sās 34, 2–3.

<sup>165</sup> Gv 60, 30–31.

<sup>166</sup> Saddhamma-s IX 16.

<sup>167</sup> *Ānandācariyassa jeṭṭhasiṃso Culladhammapālo* (Gv 60, 30).

<sup>168</sup> See p. 148 above.

<sup>169</sup> Ed. P. DHAMMĀRĀMA, JPTS 1915–16, pp. 3–19.

<sup>170</sup> Gv 61, 28–29; 67, 2–3.

<sup>171</sup> See AUNG, *Abhidh-s tr.*, p. ix n. 1.

These five works, together with Buddhadatta's *Abhidhammāvatāra* and *Rūpārūparibhāga*,<sup>172</sup> Kassapa's *Mohavicchedani*,<sup>173</sup> and the *Nāmācārādīpikā*<sup>174</sup> by Saddhammajotipāla, form a group known in Burma as the Little-finger Manuals (*Let-ṭhan*).<sup>175</sup> Saddhammajotipāla, also known as Chapaṭa, was a native of Pagan in Burma. The Sāsanaṃsa does not include the *Nāmācārādīpikā* among the texts attributed to Saddhammajotipāla, which perhaps supports the suggestion that he introduced it into Burma, rather than being the author.<sup>176</sup> It is, however, reported<sup>177</sup> that the colophon to the work, which consists of 299 verses, contains the information that it was written while its author was residing in an *ārāma* near the shrine named Tilokanayana-sabbāññudhātunhiṣacetiya, to the east of Arimaddana.

#### 4. COLLECTIONS OF EDIFYING TALES

It is not surprising that in a situation where the well-being of the *Saṅgha* depended upon the generosity of laymen, a literature evolved which stressed the value of giving (*dāna*).

The Dasavatthuppakaraṇa<sup>178</sup> belongs to this type of literature. The name is shortened from Dasadānavatthuppakaraṇa, by which title it is sometimes known. The longer title better describes its nature, for it consists of 37 stories in mixed prose and verse, each relating the advantages of making offerings to the *Saṅgha*, Buddhas, Paccekabuddhas, and *thūpas*. To the collection are prefixed 16 *Triṣṭubh* verses setting out the ten *dānavatthus*, the ten objects suitable as gifts. The stories are arranged in ten groups, each extolling one of the *dānavatthus*.

All the stories except one can be traced to accounts of *dāna* found in *aṭṭhakathās* to the canon, or in the Mahāvaṃsa.<sup>179</sup> The one exception is a story referring to Asoka's queen Asandhimittā,<sup>180</sup> which probably indicates an origin in South-East Asia, where a collection of stories about Asoka not available to us now seems to have been current in medieval times. Nothing is known about the date of the compilation of the work, except that, as it is mentioned in an inscription of A.D. 1442 found at Pagan,<sup>181</sup> it must be earlier than that date.

<sup>172</sup> See p. 131 above.

<sup>173</sup> See p. 147 above.

<sup>174</sup> No Ee has as yet been published.

<sup>175</sup> See AUNG, *Abhidh-s tr.*, p. ix.

<sup>176</sup> See BODE, PLB, p. 18.

<sup>177</sup> See BUDHADATTA, *Corr.*, pp. 208–9.

<sup>178</sup> Ed. and tr. (French) J. VER EECCKE, EFEO Paris, 1976.

<sup>179</sup> See VER EECCKE, *Dvp*, p. xiv.

<sup>180</sup> See *ibid.*, p. ix.

<sup>181</sup> See BODE, PLB, p. 104.

The stories are written in a simple narrative style of Pāli, in some cases word for word the same as the sources from which they are borrowed.

The *Sihajavattuppakarāṇa*<sup>182</sup> is another set of edifying stories, aimed at glorifying the act of giving by recounting the benefits gained by donors in the past. The majority of the 77 stories it contains are set in Ceylon, which probably accounts for its title. The first 45 stories (the colophons to the various sections show that a further five are missing)<sup>183</sup> are in mixed prose and verse. The last 32 are very short, almost entirely in prose, and seem to be intended as notes for reciters to use as the basis of further stories.

Some of the stories are not recorded elsewhere, but those which are have parallels with stories found in the *Dipavaṃsa*, the *Mahāvamsa* and *aṭṭhakathās* upon the canon. The resemblances are not close enough to be able to say whether they are direct borrowings from those texts, or whether they are all based upon some third source, e.g. the *Sihala aṭṭhakathās*.<sup>184</sup> The presence of hitherto unknown material in the *Sihajavattuppakarāṇa* probably means that the compiler or compilers had access to materials current in South-East Asia.<sup>185</sup>

The Burmese *Piṭakattamain* states that the work was composed in Ceylon,<sup>186</sup> but does not name the author. In the colophons he is called *Dhammanandi* or *Dhammadinna*. His *vihāra* and town are variously spelled,<sup>187</sup> and have been doubtfully identified with a place in Āndhra.<sup>188</sup> No information is available about the date of composition, but the fact that the work is mentioned at Pagan in the inscription of A.D. 1442 gives a lower limit.<sup>189</sup> Some of the characters mentioned in the stories can be dated to early times, but this seems to have no bearing upon the date of compilation, and the dates of second century B.C. and fourth century A.D. which have been suggested for the first and second parts respectively seem quite unjustified.<sup>190</sup>

Despite its name, the *Sahassavattuppakarāṇa*<sup>191</sup> contains 95 stories, and it has been very plausibly suggested that the title means not "1000 stories," but "delightful stories."<sup>192</sup> There is little system in its arrangement of material, and stories about India and about Ceylon are mixed up together. The language

<sup>182</sup> Ed. and tr. (French) J. VER ECKE, EFEO Paris, 1980.

<sup>183</sup> See VER ECKE, *Sih.* pp. iv–vii.

<sup>184</sup> See *ibid.*, p. ix.

<sup>185</sup> See p. 140 above.

<sup>186</sup> See BODE, *PLB*, p. 104 n. 9.

<sup>187</sup> The *vihāra* is called *Paṭṭakottī*, *Haṇḍakōṇḍa* or *Sanḍakonti*. The town is called *Kaṇṭakasolapaṭṭana* or *Koṇḍakasolapaṭṭana*.

<sup>188</sup> See VER ECKE, *Sih.* p. iii.

<sup>189</sup> See BODE, *PLB*, p. 105.

<sup>190</sup> RY SODI MORI, "A Japanese translation and notes on the *Sihajavattuppakarāṇa* (II), Chapter I, Stories 3–5," in *Studies in the Humanities of Josai University*, Saitama, Japan, 1 (December 1973), p. 99.

<sup>191</sup> Ed. A. P. BUDDHADATTA, Ambalangoda 1959.

<sup>192</sup> RY MALASEKERA, quoted by RAHULA, *HBC*, p. xxxiv.

shows signs that the work is a translation from Sinhalese, since it abounds in direct translations of Sinhalese idioms and usages.<sup>193</sup>

Nothing is known certainly about the date of compilation, although it must be earlier than A.D. 1442 since the Pagan inscription of that year mentions the *Sahassavattu*.<sup>194</sup> If the text is identical with the *Sahassavattatṭhakathā* mentioned three times in the *Mahāvamsa-tikā*,<sup>195</sup> then we should be able to date it earlier than the ninth century, but it seems unlikely that it can be, at least in its present form. The *Mahāvamsa-tikā* states<sup>196</sup> that the story about Prince Śāli is to be found in the *Sahassavattatṭhakathā*, but at this point in its narrative the *Sahassavattuppakarāṇa* gives only a single line, referring readers to the *Mahāvamsa* for the story.<sup>197</sup> It seems more likely that the text referred to in the *Mahāvamsa-tikā* was a *Sihala aṭṭhakathā*, which is now lost, but upon which the *Sahassavattuppakarāṇa* was itself based.

The *Rasavāhini*<sup>198</sup> is the fourth of this collection of edifying tales. It is divided into two parts: the first (*Jambudīpuppattivatthu*) contains 40 stories originating in India, and the second (*Sihalaḍīpuppattivatthu*) consists of 63 stories originating in Ceylon. Each part is divided into *vaggas*, with four in the first part and six in the second. Each *vagga* contains ten stories, and the tenth *vagga* is followed by three extra stories and the colophon. Each story concerns some aspect of the layman's ethics, and the moral of each tale is clearly expressed in the concluding verse, giving (*dāna*) being the one which is most frequently extolled.

The colophon names the author as the same *Vedeha* who wrote the *Samantakūṭavāṇanā*,<sup>199</sup> and the work can be dated to the thirteenth or fourteenth century. It is stated in the introduction that it is a revision of an earlier text, composed by the *thera* *Raṭṭhapāla*, which was found to be corrupt throughout with repetitions and other defects.<sup>200</sup> There is some doubt about this earlier text. The *Gandhavamsa* states that *Raṭṭhapāla*'s work was entitled *Madhurasavāhini*,<sup>201</sup> but no authority is known for this statement. Surprisingly, the *Gandhavamsa* does not mention *Vedeha* or the *Rasavāhini*. Some verses in the *Rasavāhini* agree almost exactly with those in the *Sahassavattuppakarāṇa*.

<sup>193</sup> See BUDDHADATTA, *Svp.* p. xxv and RAHULA, *HBC*, pp. xxx–xxxii.

<sup>194</sup> See BODE, *PLB*, p. 105.

<sup>195</sup> At *Mhv-t* 451, 19; 452, 28; and 607, 8–9.

<sup>196</sup> *Mhv-t* 607, 8–9.

<sup>197</sup> *Sāliṛājakumāravattum Mahāvamsa vuttanayena veditabham* (*Sah* 108, 5–6).

<sup>198</sup> It is surprising that although F. SPIEGEL edited and translated selected stories in 1845 (*Rasavāhini eine buddhistische Legendensammlung*, 1–4. *Anecdota Pālica* I, Leipzig 1845), no complete *Ed* has yet appeared. See also M. and W. GEIGER (ed. and tr.), *Die zweite Dekade der Rasavāhini*, Munich 1918. The sections (*vaggas*) and stories (*vattus*) are analysed with the corresponding pages of a *Ce* (ed. SARA-ṆATISSA THERA, Colombo 1928) by GODAKUMBURA, *Cat.* pp. 56–59.

<sup>199</sup> *Yo ca Samantakūṭassa vāṇanaṃ vāṇayi subham tena Vedehatherena kāṭiyaṃ Rasavāhini*.

<sup>200</sup> See MALASEKERA, *PLC*, p. 225.

<sup>201</sup> *Gv* 63, 8.



which has led to the suggestion that Raṭṭhapāla's work was the latter, but it seems more likely that Raṭṭhapāla was the author of the Sahassavattatṭhakathā mentioned in the Mahāvamsa-ṭīkā. If both the Rasavāhini and the Sahassavattuppakaraṇa were based upon this *aṭṭhakathā*, it would account for the similarities between them.

Among the other sources named by the Rasavāhini are the Mahāvamsa and the *porāṇas*.<sup>202</sup> It is noteworthy that the story of Prince Sāli which does not appear in the Sahassavattuppakaraṇa does occur in the Rasavāhini.<sup>203</sup>

### 5. KĀVYA WORKS

As has already been noted,<sup>204</sup> the Mahāvamsa can in many ways be regarded as a *kāvya* work, but the beginning of the medieval period of *kāvya* literature, showing the influence of Sanskrit literature upon Ceylon, can be seen in the Mahābodhivamsa and the Telakāṭṭhagāthā. The former, as has been seen,<sup>205</sup> is assigned to the last quarter of the tenth century A.D. The latter<sup>206</sup> is of unknown date and authorship, but must be earlier than the Rasavāhini, where it is apparently referred to. The poem is an expansion of an incident referred to in the Mahāvamsa,<sup>207</sup> where a *thera* was killed and thrown into the sea for intriguing with the king's wife. In the Rasavāhini the details are somewhat changed, and the *thera* is punished by being thrown into a cauldron of boiling oil.<sup>208</sup> He becomes an *arahant* and recites 100 verses. The Telakāṭṭhagāthā purports to be the verses he uttered, although it contains only 98<sup>209</sup> stanzas, divided into nine sections, each dealing with a fundamental doctrine of Buddhism, beginning with the three refuges and ending with dependent causation (*paṭiccasamuppāda*). The cause of suffering and death can be traced back to ignorance (*avijjā*). Escape from worldly misery can be obtained by following the noble path of the *dhmma*.

<sup>202</sup> See RAHULA, HBC, p. xxxix.

<sup>203</sup> See *ibid.*, p. xxix.

<sup>204</sup> See p. 118 above.

<sup>205</sup> See p. 141 above.

<sup>206</sup> Ed. E. R. GOONERATNE, JPTS 1884, pp. 49–68. In PBR 2, 3 (1977), pp. 127–40, R. WEBB draws attention to a translation by B. C. LAW in Indian Culture, 5 (1938–39), p. 25, and republishes one by C. SAMARENGHA; in PBR 5, 3 (1980), p. 88, he notes a third translation by S. K. RAMACHANDRA RAO in the Quarterly Journal of the Mythic Society (Bangalore), 1957, pp. 214–27 and 260–81.

<sup>207</sup> Mhv XXII 13–20.

<sup>208</sup> See GOONERATNE, JPTS 1884, p. 49.

<sup>209</sup> The word *sata* is often not to be taken literally, but in the sense of "a large number" (see MW, s.v. *śata*). It is perhaps being used in Ras merely as a "round number" (see MALALASEERA, PLC, p. 163). The fact that Tel has only 98 verses would seem to prove that it is earlier than Ras, otherwise the author would certainly have composed 100 verses.

The Gandhavaṃsa states<sup>210</sup> that the Jinālaṅkāra<sup>211</sup> was written by Buddhādatta at the request of the *thera* Saṅghapāla. The same text states that a *ṭīkā* on the Jinālaṅkāra,<sup>212</sup> with the same name, was written by Buddhārakkhita, and also mentions a *navāṭīkā* on the Jinālaṅkāra, written by an unnamed Sinhalese scholar.<sup>213</sup> The Saddhammasaṅgaha<sup>214</sup> ascribes the Jinālaṅkāra to Buddhārakkhita. The colophon to the text, omitted in the European edition, attributes the text to Buddhārakkhita and states that it was composed 1700 years after the time of the Buddha.<sup>215</sup> The editor, however, has misunderstood the compound *sattarasasate*, and by giving it the meaning "117" instead of "1700" has dated the author's birth to 426 B.C.,<sup>216</sup> instead of dating the composition of the text to A.D. 1156.<sup>217</sup> The statement in the colophon is quoted in the Jinakālamālī,<sup>218</sup> where it is said to occur in the Jinālaṅkāravāṇṇanā, and this suggests a solution to the problem. It is likely that Buddhādatta, whether the author of the summaries of the Vinaya and the Abhidhamma, or the author of the Madhurattahavilāsinī, or another Buddhādatta, wrote a work entitled Jinālaṅkāra. The work we possess is an embellishment (*vāṇṇanā*) of this, written by Buddhārakkhita in the twelfth century.<sup>219</sup>

Even if the colophon had not included a date, it would have been possible to deduce that the Jinālaṅkāra is a late work, for it is written in a very developed *kāvya* style.<sup>220</sup> Some verses are palindromes,<sup>221</sup> while others show rhyme.<sup>222</sup> One verse has four identical *pādas*,<sup>223</sup> each to be interpreted in a different way; another verse begins and ends each *pāda* with the syllables *raṇḍhe* *raṇḍhe*.<sup>224</sup> Other verses consist entirely of velar sounds,<sup>225</sup> or the consonant *n*.<sup>226</sup> Such tricks are reminiscent of Daṇḍin's achievement of omitting all labial sounds in

<sup>210</sup> Gv 69, 15.

<sup>211</sup> Ed. and tr. J. GRAY, London 1894; repr. PTS London, 1981.

<sup>212</sup> Gv 72, 9.

<sup>213</sup> Gv 65, 19. GRAY states (Jināl, p. 15) that he made use of a *ṭīkā* and a text entitled Gulattadhipani when making his edition.

<sup>214</sup> Saddhamma-s 63, 9.

<sup>215</sup> Sattarasasate vasse gate.

<sup>216</sup> See GRAY, Jināl, p. 7.

<sup>217</sup> See GEIGER, PLL, 34.3.

<sup>218</sup> Jinak 71, 19–24.

<sup>219</sup> GODAKUMBURA, however, quotes (Samantak, p. 81) a passage from a Jinālaṅkāravāṇṇanā which, since it is in prose, must be a different text of the same name, perhaps a commentary upon the Jinālaṅkāra. See also GODAKUMBURA, Cat. pp. 50–52.

<sup>220</sup> Some of the sections have headings which signify the particular feature to be exemplified in it, e.g. XIII. "Distributed rhyme in two *pādas*" (Dvipādavyāsayamakagāthā).

<sup>221</sup> Jināl 99–100.

<sup>222</sup> E.g. Jināl 173, where each successive pair of words rhyme.

<sup>223</sup> Jināl 97, where each *pāda* is *śakāmadātā vinayāmanantaḡā*.

<sup>224</sup> Jināl 98.

<sup>225</sup> Jināl 101.

<sup>226</sup> Jināl 105.

the seventh chapter of the *Daśakumāracarita* because the narrator, having been bitten on the lip, was unable to pronounce them.<sup>227</sup>

The poem, without the colophon, consists of 250 verses in a number of metres, some of them highly ornate.<sup>228</sup> Divided into 30 sections, it tells the story of the Buddha from his first aspiration at the time of the Buddha Dīpaṅkara to his *parinibbāna*. It ends with an exhortation to worship the Buddha's relics as a means of attaining *nibbāna*, and a hope that the author will become a Buddha at some future time.

The *Jinacarita*<sup>229</sup> is also a poem on the life of the Buddha. The colophon to the text ascribes it to the *thera* Medhaṅkara,<sup>230</sup> and this is confirmed by the *Gandhavaṃsa*<sup>231</sup> and the *Saddhammasaṅgaha*.<sup>232</sup> It is said to have been written in the *pariveṇa* founded by Vijayabāhu<sup>233</sup> (probably Vijayabāhu III, who reigned A.D. 1232–36), and Medhaṅkara is believed to have flourished under Bhuvanekabāhu I (A.D. 1273–84). He was also the author of a grammatical work entitled *Payogasiddhi*.<sup>234</sup>

The poem consists of 472 verses, and begins with the aspiration made by Gotama in his birth as Sumedha at the time of Dīpaṅkara. It omits the rebirths under the subsequent Buddhas, and referring only briefly to the attainment of the perfections, it proceeds to the birth as Gotama. The description of the contest with Māra and the enlightenment is full of poetic exaggeration, and the poem ends with a recitation of the places which the Buddha frequented during his 45 years as a wandering teacher. Like *Buddharakkhita*, Medhaṅkara concludes with a wish to be reborn as a Buddha.

Estimations of the value of the work vary. Although it has been dismissed as a very mediocre poem, with clumsy versification,<sup>235</sup> others have put Medhaṅkara in the foremost rank among poets when he writes from the depths of his own inspiration<sup>236</sup> instead of slavishly imitating other works, especially the *Nidānakathā* of the *Jātaka*, which seems to be the main source followed.

The *Pajjamadhu*<sup>237</sup> consists of 104 artistic stanzas in what is described as partly Sanskritised Pāli.<sup>238</sup> The first 69 verses describe the beauties of the Buddha's person, and the remainder are in praise of his wisdom, concluding with a eulogy of the *Śaṅgha* and *nibbāna*. The style is laboured and artificial, and some of the verses are intricate puzzles.

<sup>227</sup> See A. B. KEITH, *A history of Sanskrit literature*, London 1928, p. 306.

<sup>228</sup> See GRAY, *Jināḷ*, pp. 69–72.

<sup>229</sup> Ed. and tr. W. H. D. ROUSE, *JPTS* 1904–1905, pp. 1–65; CH. DUROISELLE, Rangoon, 1906.

<sup>230</sup> *Jina-c* 471.

<sup>231</sup> *Gv* 62, 24–25.

<sup>232</sup> *Saddhamma-s* 63, 11–12.

<sup>233</sup> *Jina-c* 469–70.

<sup>234</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 230, and p. 165 below.

<sup>235</sup> See WINTERITZ, HIL, p. 224.

<sup>236</sup> LAW, HPL, p. 614, quoting DUROISELLE.

<sup>237</sup> Ed. E. R. GOONERATNE, *JPTS* 1887, pp. 1–10.

<sup>238</sup> GOONERATNE, *JPTS* 1887, p. 1.

The author names himself as Buddhappiya, and states that he is a pupil of Ānanda.<sup>239</sup> If this is the same Ānanda who was the teacher of Vedehathera, then Buddhappiya and Vedeha were contemporaries and probably lived at the end of the thirteenth or beginning of the fourteenth century. Buddhappiya was also the author of the grammar entitled *Rūpasiddhi*.<sup>240</sup>

Vedeha was the author of a poem entitled *Samantakūṭavaṇṇanā*,<sup>241</sup> as well as the *Rasavāhinī*.<sup>242</sup> He lived in Ceylon in the late thirteenth or early fourteenth century, and belonged to the *Araññāyatana* fraternity of forest-dwelling monks.<sup>243</sup> The work is a life-story of the Bodhisatta Siddhattha up to the enlightenment, and thereafter the life of the Buddha up to the point which is the climax of the poem, the imprinting of his footprint on the Samanoja rock. It is possible that both Vedeha and Rāhula, at whose request he wrote the work, could actually see the mountain from their cells, if they resided at Putabhassela in the vicinity of Samanoja, as tradition records.<sup>244</sup>

The story of the Buddha's three visits to Ceylon and the planting of his footprint on Sumanakūṭa is found in the *Mahāvamsa*,<sup>245</sup> and this is followed closely for the account of the visits to Ceylon. Other material is based upon the *Nidānakathā* of the *Jātaka*, with some borrowings from the *Samyutta-* and *Majjhima-nikāyas* and the *Dhammapāda*, with occasional verses being borrowed verbatim.<sup>246</sup> With a few exceptions the language is correct and easy-flowing. In the narrative portions, which are mainly in *Śloka* metre, the style follows that of the epics and ballads. In the more ornate portions there are lengthy compounds, and other *kāvya* features, e.g. puns, repetitions, alliteration, and assonance. Over half of the text's 802 verses are *Ślokas*, and nearly a quarter are *Tristubhs*. *Vasantatilakā* and *Mālinī* are next in order of frequency, with a handful of other ornate metres.<sup>247</sup>

There are a number of examples of passages where the grammar is faulty by the normal standards of Pāli, and here the influence of the author's own Sinhalese language is clearly to be seen. The work also includes several new words coined from Sanskrit, which indicates the prevalence of Sanskrit learning in Ceylon at this time.<sup>248</sup>

The *Saddhammopāyana*<sup>249</sup> deals in 621 verses, and eight closing verses, with the fundamental doctrines of Buddhism in general and the ethical doctrines in particular. It has 19 chapters and begins with a description of the eight *akkha-*

<sup>239</sup> *Pajj* 103.

<sup>240</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 220 and p. 164 below.

<sup>241</sup> Ed. C. E. GODAKUMBURA, PTS London, 1958.

<sup>242</sup> See p. 155 above.

<sup>243</sup> See GODAKUMBURA, *Samantak*, p. ix.

<sup>244</sup> See *ibid.*, p. xi.

<sup>245</sup> *Mhv* I 77.

<sup>246</sup> See GODAKUMBURA, *Samantak*, pp. xiv–xv.

<sup>247</sup> See *ibid.*, p. xx.

<sup>248</sup> See *ibid.*, pp. xx–xxiv.

<sup>249</sup> Ed. R. MORRIS, *JPTS* 1887, pp. 35–98.



nas, the miseries of the ten *akusals*, and the sufferings of the *petas* and animals, and the terrible evils (*pāpādinavas*), and then deals with the results of meritorious deeds and the benefits of generosity and virtuous conduct, etc., ending with *appamāda*. In one of the concluding verses, the author expresses the wish that he may himself, one day, become a Buddha.

The text itself says nothing about the author, but states that it is to be sent to a friend called Buddhasoma.<sup>250</sup> A commentary upon it, entitled *Saddhammopāyana-viggaha* states that the author is called Abhayagiri Kavacakravarti Ānanda Mahāthera.<sup>251</sup> On the strength of this, the text has been identified as a work of the Abhayagiri-vāsins,<sup>252</sup> but there seems to be no evidence for this other than the author's name. There is nothing in the contents which seems to depart in any way from standard Theravādin doctrine.<sup>253</sup>

The language is simple and straightforward, and with very few exceptions the metre is *Śloka* throughout. The work probably dates from the thirteenth century.<sup>254</sup>

The *Pañcagatidipana*<sup>255</sup> is a poem in 114 verses, which describes the five conditions in which beings may be born: gods, men, *petas*, animals and hell-dwellers. It describes the actions which may lead to rebirth in these various categories, and goes into details about the various hells and the tortures to be suffered there. Nothing is known about the author or the date of its composition, but it has been regarded as a product of the fourteenth century.<sup>256</sup> The greater part of the text is based upon descriptions such as are found in the commentary upon the *Petavatthu*, and little can be considered as new or original. What literary merit it has has been attributed to its simple style of diction.<sup>257</sup>

## 6. PROPHETIC TEXTS

In a prophecy about the future made by the Buddha in the *Cakkavattisiha-nādasutta* of the *Digha-nikāya* (26),<sup>258</sup> there is mention of increased length of life, greater prosperity, a *cakkavattin* called Saṅkha and a future Buddha called

<sup>250</sup> *Saddh* 3. Gv 75, 15 says nothing about the author or the sponsor.

<sup>251</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 212.

<sup>252</sup> See H. BECHERT, "Notes on the formation of Buddhist sects and the origins of Mahāyāna," in *German Scholars on India: contributions to Indian Studies*, Varanasi 1973, Vol. I, p. 11.

<sup>253</sup> Which presumably accounts for its survival, if it is an Abhayagiri text. See N. A. JAYAWICKREMA, "Literary activity in Pāli," in *PBR*, 5, 3 (1980), p. 85.

<sup>254</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 212.

<sup>255</sup> Ed. L. FEER, JPTS 1884, pp. 152–56.

<sup>256</sup> See GEIGER, PLL, 40.2. It is included in the list of Pāli texts originating in Cambodia by H. SADDHATISSA, "Pāli literature in Cambodia," in *JPTS* 1981, pp. 186–87.

<sup>257</sup> See LAW, HPL, p. 629.

<sup>258</sup> See p. 41 above.

Metteyya. This is the only future Buddha mentioned in the Pāli canon. He is also mentioned at the end of the *Buddhavamsa*<sup>259</sup> as the fifth Buddha of this *kappa*.

Saṅkha and Metteyya are also dealt with in a poem of 142 verses entitled *Anāgata-vamsa*,<sup>260</sup> which the *Gandhava-vamsa*<sup>261</sup> ascribes to the Kassapa who was the author of the *Mohavicchedaṇi*.<sup>262</sup> The poem begins with an account of how Śāriputta approached the Buddha and asked about the future Buddha, whereupon Gotama told him when and where Metteyya would be born. The European edition of this poem is accompanied by information about other recensions of the poem, some of which have prose interludes inserted. One of these gives a picture of the gradual decline of Buddhism,<sup>263</sup> with the scriptures disappearing piecemeal, beginning with the *Paṭṭhāna*,<sup>264</sup> the last book of the *Abhidhamma-piṭaka*. This version ends with a list of ten persons who will be future Buddhas, beginning with Metteyya.<sup>265</sup> It is interesting to note that in the *Mohavicchedaṇi* Kassapa includes a short statement about the disappearance of the canon,<sup>266</sup> beginning with the *Paṭṭhāna*.<sup>267</sup>

The *Dasabodhisattuppattikathā*<sup>268</sup> tells of the arising of ten future Buddhas, although the details do not agree entirely with the list just mentioned at the end of the *Anāgata-vamsa*. The story of Metteyya is told in detail, and the stories of the other nine are then presented in a shorter form. A number of the stories have incidents involving bodily sacrifice, self-cremation, self-mutilation, and the offering of children.<sup>269</sup> Although such deeds are very rarely recorded in Theravādin literature, they seem to be more common in Mahāyāna works.<sup>270</sup> This has led to the suggestion that the *Dasabodhisattuppattikathā*, for which no author or date of composition is known, is probably a product of the late fourteenth century,<sup>271</sup> when Hindu and Mahāyāna influence in Ceylon was strong. The growth in the number of future Buddhas probably represents a result of the same influence, although except for Metteyya the ten Sinhalese Buddhas have nothing in common with their Mahāyāna counterparts.<sup>272</sup>

<sup>259</sup> Bv XXVII 19.

<sup>260</sup> Ed. J. P. MINAYEFF, JPTS 1886, pp. 33–53; E. LEUMANN, *Maitreya-samiti*, Strassburg 1919, pp. 184–226.

<sup>261</sup> Gv 61, 1.

<sup>262</sup> Although Buddhaghosa mentions the names of Metteyya's father and mother (*Vism* 434, 28–30 = *As* 415, 9–12), he does not quote *Anāg* 96, as Mrs RHYS DAVIDS (*Vism*, p. 761) seems to imply, and *Anāg* is not, therefore, earlier than Buddhaghosa.

<sup>263</sup> See MINAYEFF, JPTS 1886, p. 35.

<sup>264</sup> Which is called *Mahāpakaraṇa*.

<sup>265</sup> See MINAYEFF, JPTS 1886, p. 37.

<sup>266</sup> See *Moh* 202, 3–22.

<sup>267</sup> Again called *Mahāpakaraṇa*.

<sup>268</sup> Ed. H. SADDHATISSA, SBB London, 1975.

<sup>269</sup> See *Saddhatissa*, Dbk, p. 9.

<sup>270</sup> See *ibid.*, p. 103.

<sup>271</sup> See *ibid.*, p. 19.

<sup>272</sup> See *ibid.*, p. 19.

Another text of the same type is the *Dasabodhisattuddesa*.<sup>272</sup> The author and the date of composition are unknown. There is a commentary upon the *Anāgataṃsa* called *Samantabuddhikā*, of which some extracts have been published.<sup>274</sup> If this is the *āṭṭhakathā* mentioned in the *Gandhavaṃsa*,<sup>275</sup> then it was written by Upatissa of Ceylon, possibly the author of the *Mahābodhiṃsa*.<sup>276</sup> A short text, or portion of a longer text, called *Dasabodhisattavidhi* has also been published.<sup>277</sup> Some of the names given in this differ from those found in the *Dasabodhisattupattikathā*, but it is clear that it belongs to the same category of text.

## 7. MEDICAL TEXTS

The beginnings of Pāli texts dealing with medicine can be seen in the *Bhesajjakhandaka*<sup>278</sup> of the *Vinaya-piṭaka*, where various rules promulgated by the Buddha about proper diet, hygiene, and medical treatment including the use of herbs and surgical instruments are collected together. Although the Buddha forbade *bhikkhus* to practise medicine as a livelihood,<sup>279</sup> it is clear from the respect shown to physicians such as *Jivaka-Komārabhacca* that medical knowledge was highly thought of, and medicine for the sick was one of a *bhikkhu's* four necessities.<sup>280</sup>

The chronicles give a certain amount of information about kings providing supplies of medicines to both *bhikkhus* and lay people, and the account of Asoka doing so<sup>281</sup> is confirmed by his own inscriptions.<sup>282</sup> The *Mahāvamsa* reports<sup>283</sup> that *Buddhadāsa* (late fourth century A.D.) made a summary of all the medical text books, although it is doubtful whether this is the work mentioned in the Pagan inscription of A.D. 1442.<sup>284</sup> The *Mahāvamsa* also gives

<sup>272</sup> Ed. and tr. (French) F. MARTINI, BEFEO 36, 2 (1936), pp. 287–390. The work named *Dasabodhisattupattikathā* which is added in an appendix (pp. 391–413) would seem to be the text labelled “D” by MINAYEFF (JPTS 1886, pp. 39–40). It would appear that *Saddhatissa* did not know of this publication, for he states (Dbk, pp. 3–4) that despite a search he was unable to find this manuscript.

<sup>274</sup> See MINAYEFF, JPTS 1886, pp. 38–39.

<sup>275</sup> Gv 72, 11.

<sup>276</sup> See MALALASEKERA, DPPN, I, p. 66.

<sup>277</sup> See *Saddhatissa*, Dbk, pp. 4–5.

<sup>278</sup> Vin I 199–252.

<sup>279</sup> See D I 12, 1–12.

<sup>280</sup> Cf. *civara-piṇḍapāta-senāsana-gilānapaccayabhesajja-parikkhārā* (Vin III 132, 10–11).

<sup>281</sup> Mhv V 224–25.

<sup>282</sup> *Cikichā katā manusacikichā ca pasucikichā ca* (Rock Edict II (A)).

<sup>283</sup> Mhv XXXVII 146. See also J. JOLLY, *Medicin*. Strassburg 1901, p. 15.

<sup>284</sup> As BODE (PLB, p. 108 n. 7) suggests, following TURNOUR's suggestion that *sāratthasaṅgaha* is the title of a book. GEIGER (Cūl tr., I, p. 13 n. 7) rejects the suggestion. The *Sāratthasaṅgaha* mentioned at Pagan is probably that by Buddhappiṇṇa or Siddharthathera (see MALALASEKERA, DPPN, II, p. 1106).

information about *Parakkamabāhu I* (A.D. 1153–86) and his keen interest in medicine,<sup>285</sup> but it was under his namesake *Parakkamabāhu II* (A.D. 1236–71) that the only extant Pāli medical text was composed, for there is a statement that during the reign of *Narindasiha* (A.D. 1707–39) *Saraṇaṃkara*<sup>286</sup> composed a commentary upon the *Bhesajjamañjūsā*, which had been written in the time of *Parakkamabāhu*.

The *Mahāvamsa* does not name the author, and he is referred to only as the *Pañca-pariveṇa-adhipati*, but the *Yogaratanākara*, a Sinhalese work of the late fourteenth century, mentions<sup>287</sup> a medical text called *Mañjūsā*, written by *Atthadassi* c. A.D. 1267, and this is presumably the *Bhesajjamañjūsā*. A lower date for its composition is afforded by the fact that it is mentioned in the Pagan inscription of A.D. 1442.<sup>288</sup> The author's reason for composing the work was that “those who have devoted themselves to the spiritual life should be spared illness.”<sup>289</sup>

## 8. GRAMMATICAL AND LEXICOGRAPHICAL WORKS

The grammatical terminology used by *Buddhaghosa* and *Dhammapāla* indicates that there was already before their time a fixed grammatical system, although there is not enough evidence to decide whether they were referring to an actual grammar, now lost. There are indications, as has already been seen,<sup>290</sup> that *Buddhaghosa* was acquainted with parts, at least, of *Pāṇini's* grammar.

The earliest Pāli grammar known to us is that of *Kaccāyana*,<sup>291</sup> who must be later than *Buddhaghosa*, since the latter does not refer to him. *Kaccāyana* may have used the *Kāśikā*, in which case he is later than the seventh century,<sup>292</sup> but the evidence for this is disputed.<sup>293</sup> Nothing is known about him except his name, and he seems to be unconnected with any other *Kaccāyana* known to us from Sanskrit or Pāli. His work is known as *Kaccāyana-vyākaraṇa* or *Kaccāyanagandha*,<sup>294</sup> and has been shown to owe much to *Pāṇini* and to the *Kāṭhāra*.<sup>295</sup>

<sup>285</sup> Mhv LXXIII 34–54.

<sup>286</sup> Mhv XCVII 58. *Saraṇaṃkara* is also reported to have extended the *Bhesajjamañjūsā*. See MALALASEKERA, PLC, pp. 215–16.

<sup>287</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 215.

<sup>288</sup> See BODE, PLB, p. 108.

<sup>289</sup> Mhv XCVII 60.

<sup>290</sup> See p. 129 above.

<sup>291</sup> Ed. E. SENART, JA 1871, pp. 193–544.

<sup>292</sup> See FRANKE, Gramm, pp. 17–19.

<sup>293</sup> See H. SCHARFE, *Grammatical Literature, History of Indian Literature*, V, 2, Wiesbaden 1977, p. 194 n. 8.

<sup>294</sup> See GEIGER, PLL, 30.

<sup>295</sup> See FRANKE, Gramm, pp. 14–20.



The earliest commentary extant upon Kaccāyana is Vimalabuddhi's Nyāsa, or Muḥamattadipani.<sup>296</sup> This is probably a work of the eleventh century, for it was itself commented upon by Chapāta at the end of the twelfth century in a work entitled Suttaniddesa or Nyāsapradīpa.<sup>297</sup> Chapāta or Saddhammajotipāla has already been mentioned as the author of the Nāmācārādīpikā.<sup>298</sup> There is an abridgement of Kaccāyana, called Kaccāyana-sāra, which was written by Dhammānanda, according to the Gandhavaṃsa,<sup>299</sup> and a *ṭīkā* upon it written by the Burmese grammarian Mahāyasa.<sup>300</sup>

The Rūpasiddhi or Padarūpasiddhi<sup>301</sup> is a re-arrangement of Kaccāyana's grammar. The author's name is given as Buddhappiya, or Dīpaṅkara.<sup>302</sup> If this is the same person as the author of the Pajjamadhu,<sup>303</sup> then the text belongs to the second half of the thirteenth century. The Bālāvatāra,<sup>304</sup> which is much used in Ceylon and Burma, is also a re-arrangement of Kaccāyana, giving the contents in a different, slightly more concise, form. The work is attributed to the same Dhammakitti<sup>305</sup> who composed the Saddhammasaṅgaha<sup>306</sup> towards the end of the fourteenth century, although the Gandhavaṃsa<sup>307</sup> attributes it to Vāciṣsara. It is possible that Dhammakitti was only responsible for composing the Mahāsannaya upon the Bālāvatāra.<sup>308</sup> If Vāciṣsara is the author, then the work is datable to the thirteenth century.<sup>309</sup>

The greatest of extant Pāli grammars is the Saddanīti,<sup>310</sup> written by Aggavaṃsa from Arimaddana in Burma in A.D. 1154.<sup>311</sup> A copy of it was taken to Ceylon soon after.<sup>312</sup> On the whole it follows Kaccāyana, but Aggavaṃsa also made use of Pāṇini. It is said to be based upon the writings of the ācariyas as well as on canonical material.<sup>313</sup> The work consists of 28 chapters, 19 being called Mahāsaddanīti, and the last nine Cullasaddanīti. It is in three sections: the Padamālā (1–14) gives a complete morphology of Pāli, interspersed with *nayas* from the *Buddhavacana*, and criticisms of the precepts of Kaccāyana and var-

<sup>296</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, pp. 179–80.

<sup>297</sup> See BODE, PLB, pp. 17–18, and FRANKE, Gramm, p. 23.

<sup>298</sup> See p. 153 above.

<sup>299</sup> Gv 74, 1–3.

<sup>300</sup> See BODE, PLB, p. 36, although Gv 74, 1–2 states that Dhammānanda wrote the *ṭīkā* on the Kaccāyana-sāra.

<sup>301</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 221.

<sup>302</sup> In the colophon to the text, quoted by MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 220.

<sup>303</sup> See p. 159 above.

<sup>304</sup> Ed. and tr. L. LEE, The Orientalist, 2, 1892.

<sup>305</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, pp. 243–44.

<sup>306</sup> See p. 179 below.

<sup>307</sup> Gv 62, 9 and 71, 6.

<sup>308</sup> See GODAKUMBURA, Cat, p. 69.

<sup>309</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 109 for the date of Vāciṣsara.

<sup>310</sup> Ed. H. SMITH, 5 vols., Lund 1928–66.

<sup>311</sup> See BODE, PLB, p. 16.

<sup>312</sup> See *ibid.*, p. 17.

<sup>313</sup> Sadd 926, 9.

ious Sanskritisms found in Pāli from the works of Buddhaghosa down to the Mahābodhiṃsa; the Dhātumālā is a Dhātupāṭha in eight *gaṇas* (chapters 15–19), with a commentary made up from canonical citations and lexicographical *kārikās*; the Suttamālā (chapters 20–28) resumes the “complete course” under the traditional form of a *sūtrapāṭha*, adding an important chapter on *upāsargas* and *nīpālas*.

The *thera* Moggallāna or Moggallāyana was the founder of a new school of grammar. He wrote the Moggallāyanavyākaraṇa, which is also known as Saddalakkhaṇa, together with the *vutti* upon it, and his own commentary upon it, entitled Moggallāyanapañcikā.<sup>314</sup> He is reported to have lived in the Thūpārāma *vihāra* at Anurādhapura, and the colophon to the work states that it was written during the reign of Parakkamabāhu, after the king had purged the *Saṅgha* of all heretical *bhikkhus*, an event datable to A.D. 1165.<sup>315</sup> Moggallāna deals with the linguistic material more exhaustively and with greater understanding of the essence and character of Pāli, which with the influx of both Sanskrit and Sinhalese influence had changed somewhat since the earlier grammarians had written their works. As a result, there are considerable differences in the arrangement and grouping of the rules, as well as in the terminology, and he draws attention to such overlooked matters as the existence of short *e* and *o*. Despite his innovations, he draws heavily upon earlier Pāli grammars, and also the Kātantra, Pāṇini, and especially Candragomin.<sup>316</sup>

Moggallāna too had his followers, and one of them was the Medhaṅkara<sup>317</sup> who wrote the Jinacarita.<sup>318</sup> His Payogasiddhi bears the same relationship to the Moggallāyanavyākaraṇa as does Buddhappiya's Rūpasiddhi to Kaccāyana's Vyākaraṇa, and he makes good some of the deficiencies in Moggallāna's work to which his opponents had drawn attention.

The writings of the grammarians at his period had a profound effect upon Pāli, and, as has already been noted,<sup>319</sup> it has been suggested that the Pāli of the texts which we now possess has been greatly influenced by their theories. It is not overstating the case to say that a knowledge of the Burmese and Sinhalese philology of the period<sup>320</sup> is essential if we wish to go past the recensions of Buddhaghosa and Dhammapāla and return to a Pāli of real linguistic interest. It seems very likely that the manuscripts consulted by Europeans editors go back to originals which have been revised in the spirit of Aggavaṃsa and his contemporaries. Although the grammarians were well acquainted with Sanskrit,

<sup>314</sup> See GEIGER, PLL 48, who states that the Moggallāyanapañcikā is lost. He is followed in this statement by SCHARFE (op. cit. [in n. 293], p. 195), but CPD, I, Epilegomena p. 55\* lists an edition of it, as does Scharfe himself (p. 208).

<sup>315</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 186.

<sup>316</sup> See FRANKE, Gramm, pp. 34–43.

<sup>317</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 231.

<sup>318</sup> See p. 158 above.

<sup>319</sup> See p. 6 above.

<sup>320</sup> For a more detailed account of the Pāli grammarians, see FRANKE, Gramm, pp. 1–64, and for a bibliography see D. L. BARUA, in IC 15, pp. 194–202.

they did not teach that Pāli was simply a derivation of Sanskrit, as the Prakrit grammarians did.<sup>321</sup> Nevertheless we are probably to see their influence in the occasional Sanskritised form found in Pāli texts.

The two schools of Kaccāyana and Moggallāna both had lists of roots, to match Aggavaṃsa's Dhātumālā. The Dhātumañjūsā,<sup>322</sup> which is also called Kaccāyana-mañjūsā,<sup>323</sup> belongs to the Kaccāyana school. It is planned on the lines of Vopadeva's Kavikalpadruma, and was compiled by Silavaṃsa about the fourteenth century. The arrangement of root classes follows Kaccāyana, and the author makes use of the Pāṇinian Dhātupāṭha.<sup>324</sup> It is also possible that he made use of the Dhātupāṭha,<sup>325</sup> which belongs to the Moggallāna school. Although its author and date are unknown, it seems probable that it is older than the Dhātumañjūsā. It follows the Moggallāna order of root classes, and is shorter than the other list. It differs from it in being in prose, not verse.<sup>326</sup>

The beginnings of Pāli lexicography probably lie in the system of explanation by means of synonyms which we find in the *Padabhājanīya* section of the Old Commentary upon the *Pātimokkha* in the Vinaya-pitaka, and in the Niddesa.<sup>327</sup> This tradition was carried on in the lists of words and glosses known as *gaṇṭhi-padas*, which existed early enough to be used by the author of the Mahāvaṃsa-ṭīkā.<sup>328</sup> The system was also developed in the *Vevacana-hāra* sections of the Petakopadesa and the Nettippakaraṇa.<sup>329</sup>

The earliest Pāli dictionary we possess is the Abhidhānappadīpikā,<sup>330</sup> which seems to have been conceived upon the same lines as the Sanskrit Amarakośa. It is a dictionary of synonyms, and does not follow an alphabetical order. It is ascribed to Moggallāna, but since the Gandhavaṃsa<sup>331</sup> calls the author Navamoggallāna it is assumed that this Moggallāna was not the grammarian. The Abhidhānappadīpikā refers to Parakkamabāhu, which dates it to the late twelfth century, and therefore makes the two Moggallānas roughly contemporary.<sup>332</sup>

The work consists of 1203 verses, and is in three sections: celestial (*sagga*), terrestrial (*bhumma*), and miscellaneous (*sāmaññakaṇḍa*). Each section is divided into sub-sections, and there are frequent overlaps between one division and another. The greater part of the work is devoted to synonyms, but the last two divisions deal with homonyms and indeclinables.

<sup>321</sup> See SCHARFE, op. cit. (in n. 293), p. 195.

<sup>322</sup> Ed. (with the Dhātupāṭha) D. ANDERSEN and H. SMITH, Copenhagen 1921.

<sup>323</sup> Dhātum 52, 11.

<sup>324</sup> See GEIGER, PLL, 50.

<sup>325</sup> Ed. (with Dhātumañjūsā) D. ANDERSEN and H. SMITH, Copenhagen 1921.

<sup>326</sup> See GEIGER, PLL, 52.

<sup>327</sup> See pp. 19 and 85 above.

<sup>328</sup> Cf. *evam pi so gato ti Gaṇṭhipadattavaṇṇanāyamaṃ vuttaṃ* (Mhv-ṭ 148, 5).

<sup>329</sup> See Peṭ 96, 4–23 and Nett 53, 1–56, 24.

<sup>330</sup> Ed. W. SUBHUTI, Colombo (2nd ed.) 1883. Index compiled by W. SUBHUTI, Abhidhānappadīpikāsūci, Colombo 1893.

<sup>331</sup> Gv 62, 3.

<sup>332</sup> See GEIGER, PLL, 51, and MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 188.

Large portions, particularly in the portion on synonyms, are taken *in toto* from the Amarakośa, and not infrequently the words listed are taken straight from Sanskrit and converted into Pāli according to the normal rules of phonological development.<sup>333</sup> A proportion of the vocabulary in the Abhidhānappadīpikā is therefore artificial, in the sense that it had no existence in Pāli until it had been specially coined for inclusion in the dictionary. This fact, however, hardly justifies its exclusion from modern dictionaries<sup>334</sup> of Pāli, for subsequent poets mined much material from the Abhidhānappadīpikā, as did their Sanskrit counterparts from the Amarakośa, as a result of which these artificial words acquired a life and existence in their own right.<sup>335</sup>

A *ṭīkā* upon the work was composed about the middle of the fourteenth century,<sup>336</sup> and a commentary (*saṃvaṇṇanā*) was written on it in Burma during the reign of Kittisīhasūra in the same century.<sup>337</sup>

A Burmese monk named Saddhammakitti wrote a work entitled Ekakkharakośa<sup>338</sup> in A. D. 1465. It is a metrical list of monosyllabic words on the lines of similar works in Sanskrit.<sup>339</sup> His purpose was to ensure that Buddhism survived during the difficult period of persecution in the fifteenth century, and in the belief that survival depended upon correct understanding of the texts his dictionary was intended to help with the proper understanding of Pāli.

## 9. POETICS AND PROSODY

In the latter half of the twelfth century the *thera* Saṅgharakkhita, writing in Ceylon, composed a number of works on grammar, prosody, and rhetoric.<sup>340</sup> He speaks of himself as a pupil of Moggallāna, whom he calls Silathera.<sup>341</sup>

The Subodhalaṅkāra<sup>342</sup> is a work on poetics, and deals with the art of poetry under five heads: faults in composition; their avoidance; verbal ornamentation; rhetorical figures; elegance of sound (*rasa*) and the art of making verse sound pleasant. It consists of 370 verses, and the author states that his reason for writing<sup>343</sup> is that the earlier works by Rāmasamma and others are not

<sup>333</sup> See GEIGER, PLL, 51.

<sup>334</sup> See W. STEDE, PED, Afterword, p. 734.

<sup>335</sup> See A. K. WARDER, "Some problems of the later Pāli literature," in JPTS 1981, pp. 204–205.

<sup>336</sup> See GEIGER, PLL, 51.

<sup>337</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 189.

<sup>338</sup> Ed. W. SUBHUTI, as an appendix to his ed. of Abh (see n. 330).

<sup>339</sup> See GEIGER, PLL, 51.

<sup>340</sup> Gv 61, 15–19, although the author of the Vuttodaya is called Vuttodayakāra.

<sup>341</sup> Vutt 134.

<sup>342</sup> Ed. and tr. G. E. FRYER, JAS 44 (1875), pp. 91–125.

<sup>343</sup> Subodh 2.



suitable for Māgadhī, i.e. Pāli. Saṅgharakkhita seems to be dependent upon Sanskrit models, from which the technical terms are borrowed and adapted.

There is a *ṭīkā* upon the Subodhālaṅkāra, ascribed to Vācissara.<sup>344</sup>

Saṅgharakkhita also wrote a book upon Pāli metre, entitled Vuttodaya.<sup>345</sup> He states specifically<sup>346</sup> that the books by Piṅgala and others were not suitable for those studying pure Māgadhī, i.e. Pāli, and he accordingly gives rules for writing Pāli verses. The Vuttodaya seems to be the only original work on Pāli metre extant.<sup>347</sup> In 136 stanzas, or portions of stanzas, arranged in six chapters, it deals first with general definitions and symbols, and then with all the metres known to Saṅgharakkhita, including *matācchandas*, *gaṇacchandas*, and all the varieties of *akṣharacchandas*, although he seems not to have been aware of the Old Āryā metre.

His work is based entirely upon Sanskrit prosody, from which terms are borrowed and adapted. There are occasionally sentences taken over from Piṅgala with only the minimum change made to adapt Sanskrit into Pāli.<sup>348</sup>

There were several commentaries written upon the Vuttodaya, including a *ṭīkā*<sup>349</sup> by Vepullabuddhi,<sup>350</sup> who lived at Pagan.<sup>351</sup>

Saṅgharakkhita also wrote a work on the Pāli verb and its use in syntax, entitled Sambandhacintā,<sup>352</sup> and a *ṭīkā* upon the Khuddasikkhā.<sup>353</sup>

## 10. BOOKS ON DISCIPLINE

The need for *bhikkhus* to master the great mass of disciplinary rules contained in the Vinaya-piṭaka led at an early date in the history of Buddhism to the production of summaries designed to make learning easier. The existence of the Parivāra in the Vinaya-piṭaka itself, and of the summaries made by Buddhaddatta, has already been noted.<sup>354</sup> The same need led to the production of two other texts of the same type.

<sup>344</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 204, and Gv 62, 6.

<sup>345</sup> Ed. and tr. G. E. FRYER, Calcutta 1877. See also R. SIDDHARTHA, Saṅgharakkhita's Vuttodaya: a study of Pāli metre, Journal of the Department of Letters, University of Calcutta, Vol. 18 (1929), No. 7 (repr. Delhi 1981).

<sup>346</sup> Vutt 2-3.

<sup>347</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 198.

<sup>348</sup> See *ibid.*, p. 198.

<sup>349</sup> Gv 64, 28.

<sup>350</sup> Gv 64, 27.

<sup>351</sup> See FRYER, Vutt, p. 4. The date given there for Vepulla (c. A.D. 1212) must be too early.

<sup>352</sup> Gv 61, 17-18.

<sup>353</sup> See p. 169 below.

<sup>354</sup> See pp. 27 and 131 above.

The Gandhavamsa<sup>355</sup> states that the Khuddasikkhā<sup>356</sup> was composed by Dhammasiri. This was doubtless taken from the text itself, where Dhammasiri is said to be "a banner to Tambapanni" (*Tambapanniyāketunā*).<sup>357</sup> No author is named for the Mūlasikkhā<sup>358</sup> by the Gandhavamsa or the text itself, but a Burmese tradition states that Dhammasiri had a colleague named Mahāsāmi. The same tradition states that the two works were written about 920 years after the Buddha's death, i.e. c. A.D. 375.<sup>359</sup> While some modern scholars have accepted this date,<sup>360</sup> others have suggested the sixth or seventh centuries A.D.,<sup>361</sup> while one scholar has placed them as late as the eleventh century.<sup>362</sup> They cannot be later than that because they are named in an inscription by Parakkamabāhu I (A.D. 1153-86),<sup>363</sup> and Saṅgharakkhita, the author of the Vuttodaya and the Subodhālaṅkāra, who lived about the same time,<sup>364</sup> wrote a *ṭīkā* upon the Khuddasikkhā.<sup>365</sup>

The two texts form a compendium of the Vinaya-piṭaka. They are mostly in verse, with some prose passages. Some passages seem to be parallels to portions of the Samantapāsādikā and the Kaṅkhavitarāṇi, rather than the Vinaya-piṭaka itself,<sup>366</sup> and if this were provable, then a date later than Buddhaghosa would be certain. It is, however, possible that the summaries and Buddhaghosa were both drawing upon the same commentarial tradition, and the same dependence may be the explanation for the passages which do not seem to have parallels in the Vinaya-piṭaka.<sup>367</sup> Whether the differences between the summaries and the Vinaya-piṭaka, which have been said to be of considerable interest for the history of the Buddhist Saṅgha in Ceylon,<sup>368</sup> are indicative of an early or a late date of composition is something which still awaits investigation.

The two texts contain some strange forms, which are probably due in part to unskilled authors trying to adapt technical terms of discipline into metre. It seems, however, not to include the artificial features and Sanskritisms which would have proved a late date of composition.<sup>369</sup>

<sup>355</sup> Gv 61, 20-21.

<sup>356</sup> Ed. E. MÜLLER, JPTS 1883, pp. 88-121.

<sup>357</sup> Khuddas L 5.

<sup>358</sup> Ed. E. MÜLLER, JPTS 1883, pp. 122-30.

<sup>359</sup> Quoted by MÜLLER (JPTS 1883, p. 87) where, perhaps by mistake, he reverses the authors' names.

<sup>360</sup> E.g. T. W. RHYS DAVIDS in JPTS, 1883, p. xiv.

<sup>361</sup> See MÜLLER, JPTS, 1883, p. 87.

<sup>362</sup> See GEIGER, PLL, 27.

<sup>363</sup> See MALALASEKERA (PLC, p. 76) who, however, dates Parakkamabāhu to A.D. 1065.

<sup>364</sup> See p. 167 above.

<sup>365</sup> Gv 61, 19.

<sup>366</sup> See MÜLLER, JPTS 1883, pp. 131-32.

<sup>367</sup> See *ibid.*, p. 87.

<sup>368</sup> See RHYS DAVIDS, JPTS 1883, p. xiv.

<sup>369</sup> See MÜLLER, JPTS 1883, p. 86.

Although it is reported that there are more than 40 Jain *śrāvakācāra* texts, dealing with the proper conduct of a layman,<sup>370</sup> it appears that there is only one systematic Pāli text dealing with this subject. This is the *Upāsakajānālaṅkāra*,<sup>371</sup> also known as *Upāsakālaṅkaraṇa* or *Upāsakālaṅkāra*.<sup>372</sup> The author is stated in the colophon to be Ānanda, who was a Sihalācariya, and it is probable that the work was written during the reign of Parakkamabāhu I (A. D. 1153–86).<sup>373</sup> This suggestion is supported by the fact that the Pāli employed by the author shows certain Sanskritised features, e.g. some words have been used in a Sanskrit sense and Sanskrit words have been used in their Pāli forms. There are sometimes long compound words in the Sanskrit *kāvya* style, and the author shows himself to be a skilled poet in the verses he includes.<sup>374</sup>

The author has based his work on both the canon and the commentaries, and has also made use of later works.<sup>375</sup> He has surveyed all these works, collected together all the specific and general instructions to laymen which they contain, and then combined them into a single work. The first of its nine chapters deals with the three refuges, and Ānanda ends the section with illustrations from the canon of the benefits which the *tī-saraṇa* brings.

Subsequent chapters deal with the rules of morality (*sīla*), ascetic practices (*dhutaṅgas*, of which only two of the usual list of thirteen are prescribed for a householder), the proper way of gaining one's livelihood, ten types of meritorious deed and various harmful actions, and happiness in this world and other worlds, leading ultimately to enlightenment. The final chapter deals with the question of the person or individual who performs meritorious deeds, and the Buddha's teachings about self (*attā*) and individual (*puggala*) are re-iterated. Some of the statements made in this chapter seem to indicate a knowledge of Mahāyāna doctrines, and it seems likely that at the time when the text was written Mahāyāna texts were being studied in Ceylon.<sup>376</sup>

The author states in the colophon that he wrote his book in accordance with the Mahāvihāra tradition, free from the views of other sects.<sup>377</sup> One text which he frequently quotes is the *Saddhammopāyana* which, as has been noted above,<sup>378</sup> is sometimes thought to have been an Abhayagiri text. The fact that Ānanda could quote from this text and at the same time state that he is following the Mahāvihāra tradition shows that there must have been very little fundamental difference between the views of the two *vikāras*.<sup>379</sup>

<sup>370</sup> See P. S. JAINI, *The Jaina path of purification*, Berkeley 1979, p. 160 n. 5.

<sup>371</sup> Ed. H. SADDHATISSA, PTS London, 1965.

<sup>372</sup> See SADDHATISSA, *Upās*, p. 1 n. 1, and *Upās* 123, 8.

<sup>373</sup> See SADDHATISSA, *Upās*, p. 46.

<sup>374</sup> See *ibid.*, p. 3.

<sup>375</sup> For a list of quotations and allusions, see SADDHATISSA, *Upās*, pp. 115–22.

<sup>376</sup> See SADDHATISSA, *Upās*, pp. 104–11.

<sup>377</sup> *Upās* 357, 3–4.

<sup>378</sup> See p. 160 above.

<sup>379</sup> See SADDHATISSA, *Upās*, pp. 63–64.

## 11. BOUNDARY TEXTS

In the *Uposathakkhandhaka* of the *Vinaya-piṭaka*<sup>380</sup> we read of a number of questions which arose early in the history of Buddhism about boundaries between communities, and the Buddha gave various rules for establishing them. The relevant portion of the *Samantapāsādikā* is entitled *Simākathā*.<sup>381</sup>

Although the original purpose of the *simū* was to limit the area of responsibility of a particular Buddhist community, in which they were allowed to perform *pabbajjā*, *upasampadā*, and other ceremonies, it is clear that before long the question of *simū* became an intensely legalistic matter, and texts were compiled to serve as the basis for settlement of any disputes which arose. The *Mahāvamsa-ṭīkā*<sup>382</sup> states that the boundaries of the Mahāvihāra were fixed in the manner set forth in the *Simākathā*, and it is possible that the information found in the *Samantapāsādikā* is based upon this, or some similar text.<sup>383</sup> The Sinhalese manuscripts of the *Mahāvamsa* have an interpolation at this point which describes how the king himself guided the plough which was marking out the boundary.<sup>384</sup> It is likely that this passage is taken from a *Simākathā* belonging to the Mahāvihāra.<sup>385</sup>

The *Simālaṅkāra* is attributed to Vācissara,<sup>386</sup> and a *ṭīkā* upon this is ascribed to Chapaṭa, also known as *Saddhammajotipāla*.<sup>387</sup> A summary upon the *Simālaṅkāra*, called either *Simāsaṅgaha* or *Simālaṅkārasaṅgaha* is also attributed to a Vācissara,<sup>388</sup> who lived in the thirteenth century in Ceylon. At the beginning of his work it is stated that it is so called because it is based upon the *Simālaṅkāra*.<sup>389</sup> It consists of 100 verses, including the colophon, in which the author states that he has also written a commentary (*vaṇṇanā*) upon the *Simālaṅkāra*.<sup>390</sup>

It is clear that the proper determination and erection of a sanctified boundary to a *vihāra* came to be considered as an effective means of purification of the *Saṅgha*,<sup>391</sup> and Vācissara expressed the hope that the unorthodox views of the Coliyā *bhikkhus* of South India, who apparently had dissentient views on the

<sup>380</sup> Vin I 106–11.

<sup>381</sup> Sp 1035, 23–1056, 30. See also Kkh 59, 23–60, 24.

<sup>382</sup> Mhv-t 362, 6.

<sup>383</sup> See MALALASEKERA, Mhv-t, pp. lxviii–lxix.

<sup>384</sup> See Mhv, App. B, pp. 331–33.

<sup>385</sup> See GEIGER, Mhv tr., p. 111 n. 3.

<sup>386</sup> Gv 62, 13–14.

<sup>387</sup> See BODE, PLB, p. 18, although GEIGER (PLL, 33) states that he wrote a *ṭīkā* upon the *Simālaṅkārasaṅgaha*.

<sup>388</sup> See J. DHIRASEKERA, "A historical introduction to the *Simālaṅkārasaṅgaha* of Vācissara Thera", in *Buddhist Studies* (Bukkyo Kenkyu), 1 (1970), pp. 73–76.

<sup>389</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 74 n. 1.

<sup>390</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 73 n. 11.

<sup>391</sup> See BODE, PLB, pp. 38–39.



question of *simās*, would be rejected by all those who desired the well-being of the *sāsana*.<sup>392</sup>

The *Simāsaṅkaraḍedani*<sup>393</sup> is ascribed to Śrī Rāhula, who wrote in the fifteenth century, while the fact that the *Simāvivāda Vinicchaya Kathā*,<sup>394</sup> like the *Sandesakathā*,<sup>395</sup> includes a date equivalent to the very beginning of the nineteenth century<sup>396</sup> shows that it is a modern work, although it quotes extensively from canonical texts, *aṭṭhakathās*, and from later texts such as the *Vimativinodanīṭikā* which is ascribed to the *thera* Kassapa.<sup>397</sup> The continuing importance of the subject is indicated by the production of a work entitled *Simālakkhana-dīpanī*, by the *thera* Vimalasāra in Ceylon in the second half of the nineteenth century.<sup>398</sup>

## 12. ANTHOLOGIES

In an edict addressed to the *Sanḅha*,<sup>399</sup> Asoka recommended to them for frequent study a list of seven *suttas*,<sup>400</sup> which doubtless represented his own selection of favourite sermons. Others too, no doubt, made selections of the *suttas* which seemed to them to contain the most important teachings of Buddhism, and certain manuals of this type exist.

The earliest is probably the *Suttasaṅgaha*,<sup>401</sup> which is regarded as canonical and forming part of the *Khuddaka-nikāya* in Burma. Nothing is known about its date or author, although the Burmese tradition states that it was compiled by a *thera* who lived in Ceylon at Anurādhapura.<sup>402</sup> That it is post-canonical, at least in its present form, is shown by the fact that it includes certain passages from the *aṭṭhakathās*, including the *aṭṭhakathā* upon the *Buddhavaṃsa*, and in one case a *ṭīkā* upon an *aṭṭhakathā*.<sup>403</sup>

The *suttas* are arranged under six headings. The first three consist of *suttas* concerned with accounts of giving (*dāna*), moral conduct (*sīla*), and heaven

<sup>392</sup> See DHIRASEKERA, op. cit. (in n. 388), pp. 74–75.

<sup>393</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 251.

<sup>394</sup> Ed. J. P. MINAYEFF, JPTS 1887, pp. 17–34.

<sup>395</sup> See p. 144 above.

<sup>396</sup> *Sammāsambuddhassa parinibbānato samvaccharaḅaṇaṇena catucattīṭṭisādhikam tisatadvisahassam sampatte* (Simāv 18, 13–14) = A.D. 1800.

<sup>397</sup> At Sās 33, 24–25 this is ascribed to Damiḅaratthavāsi Kāsapathero. It is not clear whether this is the same Kassapa who wrote the *Mohavicchedaṇi*, but since Gv 60, 33–61, 2 does not include it among the works of Kassapa, we are probably dealing with two authors of the same name.

<sup>398</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 311.

<sup>399</sup> See HULTZSCH, *Inscriptions of Asoka*, Oxford 1925, pp. 172–74.

<sup>400</sup> See WINTERNITZ, HIL, pp. 606–609.

<sup>401</sup> Ed. R. P. CHAUDHURI and D. P. GULA, Calcutta 1957. See Geiger, PLL, 19.

<sup>402</sup> See BODE, PLB, p. 5 n. 1. CPD Vol. I, *Epilegomena* p. 46\* ascribes it to Ariyavaṃsa.

<sup>403</sup> For the list of contents see CPD Vol. I, *Epilegomena* pp. 95\*–96\*.

(*sagga*). Included in the last-mentioned are the *Dhammahadaya Vibhaṅga*, which gives information about the life-spans of various classes of *devas*, and several *vuttas* from the *Vimānavatthu*. The fourth section includes *suttas* which tell of the dangers to be found in sensual pleasures (*kāmaḍīnava*); the fifth section contains *suttas* about householders or life as a human being; and the sixth section deals with ways of gaining thanks (*anumodana*). A number of the *suttas*, particularly those from the *Vimānavatthu*, are accompanied by their commentaries.

The *Sārasaṅgaha*<sup>404</sup> contains 40 chapters on various topics of Buddhist teaching, each illustrated by means of stories.<sup>405</sup> The colophon to the text states that the author's name is Siddhattha, and he is a pupil of Buddhapiya, the chief of the *Dakkhiṇārāma* at the end of the thirteenth and beginning of the fourteenth centuries. This was presumably the Buddhapiya who wrote the *Rūpasiddhi* and *Pajjamadhu*.<sup>406</sup>

The first chapter deals with the aspiration (*abhinīhāra*) for Buddhahood made by Bodhisattas, the second with the marvels (*acchariyas*) which occur in a *Tathāgata*'s life, and the third with the disappearance of the Buddha's teaching. Many stories deal with the virtues of pious behaviour and generosity. There are also sections about *nāgas*, *supannas*, *petas*, *asuras* and *devas*, about earthquakes, and storms. There is also a chapter on dreams, and the final section deals with cosmology (*lokasaṅḅhiti*).

Although most of the stories which are included can be traced to the canon or the commentaries, some sources have not yet been identified.<sup>407</sup> The method of presentation is so uncritical that it would have been simple for additions to be made to the text during the centuries.

Another anthology, but of a special nature, is the *Paritta* or *Mahāparitta*,<sup>408</sup> a small collection of texts taken from the *Suttapiṭaka*. The word *paritta* means "protection, safeguard," e.g. an amulet,<sup>409</sup> but it is then used of a protective text which can be chanted as a charm or exorcism. There are instances in the canon of the Buddha teaching or allowing the use of such charms. In the *Vinaya-piṭaka* there is an instance where, after a *bhikkhu* had died of snake-bite, the Buddha taught a charm to protect beings from snakes, by suffusing them with loving kindness (*mettā*).<sup>410</sup> The *Āṭṭanāṭṭiyasutta* of the *Dīgha-nikāya* (32)<sup>411</sup> is also a *paritta*, which was recited in the presence of the Buddha, who by his silence gave consent for its recitation.<sup>412</sup>

<sup>404</sup> See GEIGER, PLL, 39. 1. MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 229 calls the text *Sārattasāṅgaha*.

<sup>405</sup> For a list of contents see GODAKUMBURA, Cat, pp. 60–61.

<sup>406</sup> See pp. 159 and 164 above.

<sup>407</sup> See GODAKUMBURA, Cat, p. 61.

<sup>408</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, pp. 75–76, and BODE, PLB, pp. 3–4.

<sup>409</sup> E.g. *parittasutta* "protective thread" (Mhv VII 14).

<sup>410</sup> Vin II 109–10.

<sup>411</sup> D III 194–206.

<sup>412</sup> *Adhivāsesi Bhagavā tunhi-bhāvena* (D III 195, 24).

The Milindapañha states that *parittas* were appointed by the Buddha.<sup>412</sup> and six are named there: Ratana, Khandha, Mora, Dhajagga, Ātānāṭiya, and Āṅgulimāla. Buddhaghosa mentions four of these in the Papañcasūdanī<sup>414</sup> and five of them in the Visuddhimagga.<sup>415</sup> The story of the Ratanasutta being used by Ānanda in a great exorcism is told several times in the commentaries,<sup>416</sup> and the Mahāvamsa tells of the same *paritta* being used during a famine and plague during the reign of Upatissa (early fourth century A.D.).<sup>417</sup>

The addition of the Maṅgalasutta, the Karaṇīyamettasutta, and the Bojjhaṅgaparitta gives a set of nine *parittas* which is commonly found in Ceylon,<sup>418</sup> but a longer set, consisting of 28 *parittas*, and known as the Catubhāṇavāra, also exists.<sup>419</sup> An examination of the list of 22 *parittas* quoted in the Critical Pāli Dictionary<sup>420</sup> from the Catubhāṇavārāṭṭhakathā, which includes both the *parittas* and the commentaries upon them, shows that the set consists entirely of *suttas* from the canon, seven being from the Khuddaka-pāṭha, five from the Ānguttara-nikāya, six from the Saṃyutta-nikāya, including the Candassutta<sup>421</sup> which is used as a spell against snakes, two from the Jātaka, and one each from the Majjhima- and Dīgha-nikāyas.

### 13. COSMOLOGY

As already noted,<sup>422</sup> the last section of the Sārasaṅgaha deals with cosmology (*lokasaṃyūhī*). The oldest extant Pāli text we have which deals exclusively with the subject of cosmology is the Lokapaññatti.<sup>423</sup> A lower limit to its date of compilation is provided by the fact that it was one of the sources employed by the author of the Traibhūmikathā, which was composed in Siamese c. A.D. 1345.<sup>424</sup> It seems probable that the Lokapaññatti is the work of an unknown author, writing in Burma, probably at Thatōn, in the eleventh or twelfth century A.D.<sup>425</sup>

Although the Northern Buddhists, writing in Sanskrit, produced descriptions of the world, the Theravādins seem to have been too busy escaping from the

<sup>412</sup> *Puna Bhagavatā paritū ca uddiṭṭhā* (Mil 150, 27).

<sup>414</sup> Ps IV 114, 6–7.

<sup>415</sup> Vism 414, 21–22.

<sup>416</sup> See Dhp-a III 441; Pj I 164; Pj II 278.

<sup>417</sup> Mhv XXXVII 195.

<sup>418</sup> See GODAKUMBURA, Cat, pp. 25–26.

<sup>419</sup> See GEIGER, PLL, 17. For a *paritta* text from South-East Asia see PADMANABH S. JAINI, "Mahāḍibbamanta: a Paritta manuscript from Cambodia", in BSOAS 28 (1965), pp. 61–80.

<sup>420</sup> See CPD, Vol. I, Epilegomena pp. 93\*–95\*.

<sup>421</sup> See p. 52 above.

<sup>422</sup> See p. 173 above.

<sup>423</sup> Ed. and tr. (French) E. DENIS, La Lokapaññatti et les idées cosmologiques du Bouddhisme ancien, 2 vols., Lille 1977.

<sup>424</sup> See DENIS, Lp, I, p. vii.

<sup>425</sup> See ibid., p. ix.

world to describe it. When they began to do so in medieval times, they were content to borrow from earlier writers on the subject. It is somewhat misleading to call the Lokapaññatti a treatise on cosmology, since it is not a systematic study of the subject, but a compilation of information about the nature of the world, collected from many sources, and put together in a haphazard way. Into the descriptions of the various parts of the world are inserted narrative stories, e.g. the section on the *devaloka* includes a long story<sup>426</sup> about Asoka and robots (*bhūta-vāhana-yanta*) from the kingdom of Roma, which is doubtless drawn from the stock of stories about Asoka current in South-East Asia, but presumably of North Indian origin.

The greater part of the Lokapaññatti is based upon the Lokaprajñapti, of which the Sanskrit original has been lost but a Chinese translation dating from A.D. 558<sup>427</sup> is available. Presumably the Sanskrit original was still available in Burma in the twelfth century. It is also possible to deduce that a slightly different version of the Mahāvastu was available at the time when the Lokapaññatti was being compiled, for the text of the latter enables certain *lacunae* in the former to be filled in the description of the hells, from which borrowings have been made.

A passage on the origin of the world has also been taken from the Mahāvastu, while the Divyāvadāna is the source for some of the other stories, especially details about Asoka.<sup>428</sup> There are also many borrowings from the Pāli canon, the most important being from the description of the beginning of the world in the Aggaññasutta of the Dīgha-nikāya (27), the judgment of wrong-doers and their condemnation to hell by Yama in the Devadūtasutta of the Ānguttara-nikāya, and the dialogue between the *yakkhas* Hemavata and Sātāgira and the Buddha in the Hemavatasutta of the Sutta-nipāta.<sup>429</sup>

In A.D. 1520 a Thai *mahāthera* named Sirimaṅgala, who lived in Chiang Mai, wrote a cosmological work entitled Cakkavāḍadīpani,<sup>430</sup> in six chapters. Like the Lokapaññatti, it is based upon material extracted from earlier texts.

### 14. WISDOM TEXTS

The learning of worldly wisdom (*nīti*) by means of collections of aphorisms is of great antiquity in India, and spread from there to all countries which were influenced by Indian culture. Although there is evidence that collections of *subhāṣitas* found their way to Ceylon they seem not to have been imitated by

<sup>426</sup> Lp 157–59.

<sup>427</sup> See DENIS, Lp, I, p. ii.

<sup>428</sup> See ibid., pp. xvi–xvii.

<sup>429</sup> See ibid., p. xvii.

<sup>430</sup> Ed. HANGKOK, 1979. See also H. SADDHATISSA, "Pāli literature of Thailand," in COUSINS, SBIBH, p. 217.



Pāli authors, whereas collections introduced into Burma, probably from North East India,<sup>421</sup> were widely imitated there.

There is no mention of any Pāli *nīti* text in the Pagan inscription of A.D. 1442,<sup>422</sup> which suggests that the genre had either not been introduced by the fifteenth century, or, if it had, it had not yet gained wide acclaim. The longest and probably the earliest of the Pāli *nīti* texts found in Burma is the Dhammanīti,<sup>423</sup> which probably dates from the late fourteenth or early fifteenth century. It contains 414 verses, while the later Lokanīti<sup>424</sup> and Mahārahanīti<sup>425</sup> contain 167 and 254 verses respectively. These three texts are closely related. The Rājanīti<sup>426</sup> follows a separate tradition, and could be as late as the eighteenth century.

The *nīti* texts of Burma are not independent works, in the sense of being made up from verses composed in Pāli by Burmese authors.<sup>427</sup> They are simply compilations, i.e. collections and arrangements of verses which were already in existence in other Pāli texts, or were adaptations of verses available in Sanskrit, especially in the large corpus of Sanskrit verses attributed to Cāṇakya.<sup>428</sup> While Pāli parallels to many of the verses in the Dhammanīti and its related texts can be identified,<sup>429</sup> all the verses in the Rājanīti are direct translations from Sanskrit.<sup>430</sup> The largest Pāli source is the Jātaka collection, while other verses can be traced to the Dhammapada.

The Suttavādhananīti or Paṇḍitāṇkāranīti<sup>431</sup> was composed in the latter half of the eighteenth century. Its sources are mainly Buddhist canonical texts, with some borrowings from Sanskrit sources. The Pāli Cāṇakyanīti<sup>432</sup> seems to be an exact translation into Pāli of the Sanskrit Cāṇakyanītiśāstra. It seems to have been made in the late nineteenth century to provide a Pāli translation for Burmese readers. Another modern compilation is the Gihivinayaśaṅgha-nīti,<sup>433</sup> composed in A.D. 1830.

<sup>421</sup> See L. STERNBACH, *Subhāṣita*, gnomic and didactic literature, A history of Indian literature, IV, 1, Wiesbaden 1974, pp. 41–42. *Nīti* verses are, however, found in the Lokanēyya-pakaraṇa, which probably originated in North Thailand. See PADMANABH S. JAINI, "Some *nīti* verses of the Lokanēyya-pakaraṇa", in *Hammalava Saddhatissa Felicitation Volume* (forthcoming).

<sup>422</sup> The Kāmandaki which is mentioned at Pagan (see BODE, PLB, p. 107) is the Sanskrit Kāmandakiyaṇṭisāra. See BECHERT, PNTB, p. lxvi.

<sup>423</sup> Ed. J. GRAY, Rangoon 1883; BECHERT, PNTB, pp. 3–71. Tr. GRAY, *Prov.* pp. 37–118.

<sup>424</sup> Ed. BECHERT, PNTB, pp. 72–98. Tr. GRAY, *Prov.* pp. 1–36.

<sup>425</sup> Ed. BECHERT, PNTB, pp. 99–131.

<sup>426</sup> Ed. *ibid.*, pp. 132–60. Tr. GRAY, *Prov.* pp. 119–41.

<sup>427</sup> See BECHERT, PNTB, p. lxxxii.

<sup>428</sup> See *ibid.*, p. lxxxiii.

<sup>429</sup> See *ibid.*, pp. lxxxiii–lxxxiv.

<sup>430</sup> See *ibid.*, p. lxxvii.

<sup>431</sup> Tr. GRAY, *Prov.* pp. 142–57.

<sup>432</sup> See BECHERT, PNTB, pp. lxx–lxxvi.

<sup>433</sup> See *ibid.*, pp. lxxvi–lxxvii.

Even the oldest triad of Pāli *nīti* texts in Burma show a number of forms which differ from classical Pāli.<sup>434</sup> Many of these arise directly or indirectly from the fact that numerous verses are derived from Sanskrit originals, e.g. unassimilated consonant groups containing *-r-*, *-y-*, or *-s-* are reproduced in their Sanskrit forms on occasion, while the exigencies of metre and grammar have led to difficulties where Sanskrit and Pāli case endings are not identical in metrical length, or the introduction of *svarabhakti* vowels has increased the number of syllables in a word.

It has been pointed out<sup>435</sup> that since *nīti* literature is concerned with worldly wisdom, it is not surprising that the Burmese *nīti* texts do not contain a great deal of what could be regarded as essentially Buddhist thought. Many of the verses in the Jātaka collection deal with mundane matters, which made their borrowing by the writers of *nīti* texts all the more appropriate. Specifically Buddhist vocabulary is rare, although the words *Buddha*, *jīna* and *nibbāna* do occur a few times.

## 15. JĀTAKA COLLECTIONS

It has already been noted that the Pāli Jātaka collection is by no means complete, and stories not included in that collection can be found elsewhere in the Pāli canon and also in Buddhist Sanskrit literature. There is also a collection of 50 Jātaka stories current in South-East Asia, generally referred to as "apocryphal" because they are not canonical.

The Paññāsa-jātaka exists in three recensions from Thailand, Cambodia and Burma,<sup>436</sup> although the last-named differs quite considerably in the selection and order of stories from the first two, which are very similar to each other.<sup>437</sup> Although these Jātaka stories are regarded as non-canonical, some of them are in fact based closely upon incidents and motifs found in the Pāli collection. Several of them include an episode where, illustrating generosity (*dāna*), the chief character gives away some valuable possession, including even his wife. Such episodes are clearly based upon the Pāli Vessantarajātaka, from which almost verbatim quotations are given in several stories.<sup>438</sup> A number of stories include an episode of a ship-wreck, where help is given by the water-sprite Maṇimekhalā, just as in the Pāli Mahājanakajātaka.<sup>439</sup>

Other stories have no Pāli equivalent, but can be compared with various Buddhist Sanskrit texts, showing that the latter were known in South-East

<sup>434</sup> See *ibid.*, p. lxxiv.

<sup>435</sup> See *ibid.*, p. lxxv.

<sup>436</sup> Ed. P. S. JAINI, PTS London, Vol. I, 1981; Vol. II, to appear in 1983.

<sup>437</sup> See JAINI, PJ, I, p. v.

<sup>438</sup> Cf. RJ I 48, 7–20 with Ja VI 494, 14–495, 19.

<sup>439</sup> Cf. PJ I 76 with Ja VI 35.

Asia in medieval times, when these non-canonical studies may be supposed to have been composed. The Sudhanukumārājātaka has been shown to have a close relationship with stories related in the Mahāvastu and Divyāvadāna,<sup>450</sup> but the many differences of detail between the three versions show that the Pāli Jātaka is in no way a translation of the other two, which in many ways provide little more than a theme for the Pāli redactor to elaborate. Some stories in the apocryphal collection seem to have no parallel in the extant Pāli or Sanskrit literature, and their origins are presumably to be sought in the mass of folk literature which is known from other sources to have been in existence in the area at the relevant time. Even when a story can be shown to have an external origin, a number of minor details are frequently innovations.

The Burmese recension of the apocryphal Jātakas is known as the Zimmē Pannāsa, where the word "Zimmē" is a corruption of the place-name Chieng Mai,<sup>451</sup> a town in North Thailand. This suggests that the Burmese believed that the collection came from Thailand, and in view of this belief the difference between the Burmese and the other recensions which has been mentioned above needs to be investigated carefully, for an examination of the parallel editions of the Samuddaghosajātaka shows quite extensive differences of detail,<sup>452</sup> and it is probable that other Jātakas show variations no less extensive.

The language of these Jātakas<sup>453</sup> shows the same kind of unhistoric gemination of consonants and the converse as has already been noted in the Jinakālamāli,<sup>454</sup> which helps to confirm the suggestion that these features are not merely scribal errors. There are also peculiarities of grammar and syntax, e.g. strange case usages and confusion of gender, which probably shows the influence of the local vernaculars.

An original feature of Buddhist literature in South-East Asia is the type of text illustrating advantage (*ānisaṃsā*) which belongs to the Jātaka genre. The Brapaṃsukūlānisaṃsa<sup>455</sup> tells of the merits to be gained by the gift of robes to the Saṅgha, while the Piṭakattayakāraṇisaṃsa<sup>456</sup> contains details of the life of the Buddha, either in his existence as Gotama or in a previous life. One of these episodes concerns the Buddha's last meal, and shows clearly that in medieval times in Thailand it was believed that the mysterious *sūkaramaddava* which Cunda gave to the Buddha was indeed pork, for in this version of the story the Buddha's death was due to the fact that in an earlier existence he had killed a *yakkha*, who in the course of time was reborn as a pig which, in the form

<sup>450</sup> See P. S. JAINI, "The story of Sudhana and Manoharā: an analysis of the texts and the Borobudur reliefs," in BSOAS 29 (1966), pp. 533–58.

<sup>451</sup> See JAINI, PJ, I, p. v.

<sup>452</sup> See G. TERRAL(-MARTINI), "Samuddaghosajātaka: conte pali tiré du Paññāsa-jātaka", in BEFEO 48 (1956), pp. 249–351.

<sup>453</sup> See *ibid.*, pp. 310–38.

<sup>454</sup> See p. 144 above.

<sup>455</sup> See G. MARTINI, "Brapaṃsukūlānisaṃsaṃ", in BEFEO 60 (1973), pp. 55–78.

<sup>456</sup> See G. MARTINI, "Un jātaka concernant le dernier repas de Buddha," in BEFEO 59 (1972), pp. 251–55.

of poisoned meat, served as an instrument to punish the Buddha for his wrongdoing.

It is convenient to deal at this point with another text which, while not strictly a Jātaka story, is nevertheless told in the form of a Jātaka story. The Kosala-bimba-vaṇṇanā<sup>457</sup> is a medieval work composed in Ceylon, probably during the thirteenth or fourteenth century since it is referred to by name in the fourteenth century Saddhammasaṅgha.<sup>458</sup> It is intended to justify the practice of making images of the Buddha, although it is not clear why justification was needed at that time.

The story it tells is based upon an earlier story, preserved for us by the Chinese pilgrim Fa-hsien<sup>459</sup> who heard at Śrāvastī at the beginning of the fifth century A.D. the legend that Prasenajit had had a sandalwood image of the Buddha made which, at the arrival of the Buddha, rose to meet him. In the Pāli version of the story Pasenadi asks permission to make an image so that visitors arriving when the Buddha was absent could worship him in effigy. The image is made, and rises to greet the Buddha on arrival. Pasenadi asks the Buddha what merit he has acquired, and Ānanda asks about the merit to be gained by one who copies a Buddhist text. The answer is given that both will be reborn in good families, free from disease, and will live in prosperity until they ultimately gain spiritual distinction.

The quality of the Pāli employed is poor, with mistakes in gender and case usage. The verses included in the prose narrative are of little literary merit, and the exception to this—a *kāvya* style verse in elaborate metre—is possibly borrowed from elsewhere.<sup>460</sup>

## 16. BIBLIOGRAPHICAL WORKS

It has already been noted that the chronicles give a certain amount of information about the composition of literary works, e.g. the recitation of the Kathāvatthu at the time of the third council, and Buddhaghosa's translation of the Sinhalese *aṭṭhakathās*.<sup>461</sup> Other chronicles give much more information about books and authors, and it is not unreasonable to describe such books as bibliographical reference works.

According to the colophon, the Saddhammasaṅgha<sup>462</sup> was written by Dhammakitti Mahāsāmi, who came from India to Ceylon, was a pupil of Dhamma-

<sup>457</sup> Ed. and tr. R. F. GOMBRICH, in BECHERT, BCSRS, pp. 281–303.

<sup>458</sup> Saddhamma-s 66, 5.

<sup>459</sup> See J. LEGGE (tr.), A record of Buddhistic kingdoms, Oxford 1886, pp. 56–57.

<sup>460</sup> See GOMBRICH, *op. cit.* (in n. 457), p. 302 n. 44.

<sup>461</sup> See pp. 103 and 120 above.

<sup>462</sup> Ed. N. SADDHĀNANDA, JPTS 1890, pp. 21–90. Tr. B. C. LAW, A manual of Buddhist historical traditions, Calcutta 1941.



kitti, and then returned to India and wrote the book.<sup>463</sup> The teacher Dhammakitti is probably one of the *Saṅgharājas* who lived towards the end of the fourteenth century.<sup>464</sup> The book contains an account of Buddhism in eleven chapters. The first three chapters give an account of the three councils, and include verses from the *Samantapāsādikā* and *Mahāvamsa*. The narrative then continues with an account of the introduction of Buddhism into Ceylon, and an assembly at which the elder Mahā-ariṭṭha preached the *vinaya* is specifically called the fourth council,<sup>465</sup> and verses are quoted to this effect, on the authority of the *porāṇas*. Subsequent chapters deal with the accession of Duṭṭhagāmaṇi, the writing down of the *tipiṭaka*, Buddhaghosa's work, and the compilation of the *nikāyas* under the presidency of Mahākassapa during the reign of Parakkamabāhu I (A.D. 1153–86).

The ninth chapter gives an account of the principal works known to the author, of which the latest is datable to the thirteenth century.<sup>466</sup> They are not listed in chronological order, and there are a number of errors and differences from other sources,<sup>467</sup> but on the whole the information which the *Saddhammasaṅgaha* gives is very helpful for establishing the history of the Buddhist religion and Pāli literature.

The last two chapters give an account of the merit to be gained from writing down the *tipiṭaka* and listening to the doctrine respectively. In the tenth chapter there is a reference to the statement about the merits to be gained from making statues, which is attributed to the Buddha in the *Kosalabimbavaṇṇanā*.<sup>468</sup> The last chapter contains a number of illustrative stories on the theme of merit to be gained (*ānisaṃsā*), some concerning Ceylon. It has been described as a sort of anthology of odds and ends of old verses, of rare excellence and beauty.<sup>469</sup>

The *Gandhavamsa*<sup>470</sup> was written by Nandapañña, who describes himself in the colophon as a forest-dwelling elder (*arañṇavāsīnā*).<sup>471</sup> It was composed in Burma, probably in the seventeenth century.<sup>472</sup> It consists of five sections, each of which contains the words *Cullagandhavamsa*, which suggests that at one time there was a longer *Mahāgandhavamsa*.<sup>473</sup> It aims to give a brief history

<sup>463</sup> *Saddhamma-s* 90, 7–10. It has been suggested that Dhammakitti was a Thai. See G. Cœdès, "Note sur les ouvrages pālis composés en pays Thai," in BEFEO 15, 3, p. 43.

<sup>464</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 245.

<sup>465</sup> *Catuttham saṅgaham katvā* (*Saddhamma-s* 45, 11). See p. 10 above.

<sup>466</sup> See GEIGER, PLL, 39, 2.

<sup>467</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 246 n. 2.

<sup>468</sup> *Saddhamma-s* 66, 5–7. See p. 179 above.

<sup>469</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 246.

<sup>470</sup> Ed. J. P. MINAYEFF, JPTS 1886, pp. 54–80. Index compiled by M. BODE, JPTS 1896, pp. 53–86.

<sup>471</sup> *Iti pāmojjatthāyārañṇavāsīnā Nandapaññācariyena kato Cullagandhavamsa* (Gv 80, 5–6).

<sup>472</sup> See WINTERNITZ, HIL, p. 190.

<sup>473</sup> See MALALASEKERA, DPPN, I, p. 748. It is, however, possible that *culla* goes

of the canon and post-canonical books in Ceylon and India (which includes Burma).

The first section deals with the canon and its divisions, and the various ways of classifying it, e.g. as five *nikāyas* or nine *aṅgas*. This seems to follow the classifications given by Buddhaghosa in the *Samantapāsādikā*.<sup>474</sup> The second section deals with the teachers who wrote books (*gandhakārikācariyas*), the *porāṇācariyas* and the *aṭṭhakathācariyas*. The last two groups are the same, and are those who held the three councils. None of them is mentioned by name except for Mahākaccāyana, who is also included in the third category because the grammar and other works including the *Netti* and the *Peṭakopadesa* are attributed to him.<sup>475</sup> The list of authors then follows, in approximate chronological order, beginning with the authors of the Kurundī and Mahāpaccari commentaries, Buddhaghosa, Buddhaddatta, Ānanda, and Dhammapāla. It is not known what sources of information the author of the *Gandhavamsa* used. In many cases he was merely taking information which was available in the colophons of manuscripts, but he often gives names even where the relevant text does not include its author's name. Even when two works are attributed to the same author, he sometimes differentiates between two writers of the same name, e.g. he ascribes the *Saccasaṃkhepa* to Culladhammapāla,<sup>476</sup> and the *Abhidhānappadipikā* to Navamoggallāna.<sup>477</sup> The list ends with Ariyavamsa and Udumbara. A number of anonymous works are then listed.

The third section arranges the authors according to whether they wrote in India (including Further India) or Ceylon, and information is occasionally given about the country in which they lived, its king, and the position they held before becoming Buddhists. The fourth chapter then states whether the authors wrote their works by request, or of their own volition (*attano matiyā*). Once again, much of this information was doubtless taken from the introductions and colophons of the texts themselves. The fifth section tells of the advantages (*ānisaṃsā*) which come from writing books. 2404

The *Sāsanavamsa*<sup>478</sup> was written in Burma in A.D. 1861 by Paññāsāmi, tutor of King Min-dōn-min who held the fifth council a few years later.<sup>479</sup> It consists for the most part of a translation from an earlier work written in Burmese in 1831 with some details removed, and additions made to cover the period A.D.

with *gandha*, not *vamsa*, and the work is intended to be a history of the "small books" as opposed to the *mahāgandhas*, which would be the canonical texts.

<sup>474</sup> See p. 15 above.

<sup>475</sup> *Katame tividhanāmakācariyā. Mahākaccāyano tividhanāmo, katame gandhā Kaccāyanena katā. Kaccāyanagandho Mahāniruttigandho Cullaniruttigandho Netti-gandho Peṭakopadesagandho Vāṇṇanītigandho ti ime cha gandhā Mahākaccāyanena katā* (Gv 59, 11–14).

<sup>476</sup> Gv 60, 30–31.

<sup>477</sup> Gv 62, 3–4. He thus separates this Moggallāna from the author of the grammar (see p. 166 above).

<sup>478</sup> Ed. M. BODE, PTS London, 1897. Tr. B. C. LAW, SBB London, 1952.

<sup>479</sup> See p. 12 above.

1831–60.<sup>480</sup> After a brief survey of the first three councils based on the accounts found in earlier chronicles, it deals with the history of the doctrine in the nine places where it was taken by Asoka's missionaries. Most of the nine are dismissed in a page or two, but the history of the *Dhamma* in Sīhala, Suvannabhūmi, and especially Aparanta, which the author interprets not as the Western part of India but as part of Burma, are dealt with at greater length.

The author includes in his account of the history of the doctrine in these places a list of authors and the works they wrote. He frequently states the texts from which he has gained the information he is giving, and on occasion he discusses differences between them, e.g. the accounts about Buddhaghosa found in the *Cūlavamsa* and the *Buddhaghosuppatti*, and his own statements in the *Visuddhimagga*.<sup>481</sup>

The style of Paññāsāmi's language is very similar to that of Buddhaghosa for the earlier periods of his history,<sup>482</sup> and this doubtless reflects the fact that these portions of his work are largely based upon Pāli originals. It seems likely however, that in the portions of his book which are based upon a Burmese source, some influence of the Burmese language remains.<sup>483</sup> In particular, the handling of Burmese personal and place names has been treated inconsistently. Some have been translated; some have been transliterated (with errors introduced by non-Burmese scribes); and some have been replaced by Pāli designations.<sup>484</sup>

A comparable work, but devoted to the authors and books of Ceylon, was produced in 1880 by Ācariya Vimalasāra *thera*, who also wrote the *Simālak-khaṇadīpani*.<sup>485</sup> This was the *Sāsanavamsadīpa*,<sup>486</sup> written in Pāli verse, and covering the history of Buddhism in Ceylon down to the time of the introduction of the Burmese *upasampadā* in A. D. 1802.<sup>487</sup> 12/25

Although these bibliographical texts sometimes disagree among themselves,<sup>488</sup> and often give no information, or inadequate information, when we most need it, their importance lies in the fact that they are usually dependent upon traditional material which is no longer available to us.<sup>489</sup> Their accounts frequently enable us to put authors and their works into a historical background in a way which would otherwise be difficult, if not impossible. Without these texts, any description of Pāli literature, and especially the later post-canonical literature, would be little more than a list of works and authors, as culled from manuscripts

<sup>480</sup> See V. B. LIEBERMANN, "A new look at the *Sāsanavamsa*," in BSOAS 39 (1976), pp. 137–49.

<sup>481</sup> *Sās* 30–31.

<sup>482</sup> See BODE, *Sās*, p. 10.

<sup>483</sup> See *ibid.*, p. 10.

<sup>484</sup> See LIEBERMANN, *op. cit.* (in n. 480), pp. 148–49.

<sup>485</sup> See p. 172 above.

<sup>486</sup> See MALALASEKERA, PLC, p. 311.

<sup>487</sup> See p. 12 above.

<sup>488</sup> See p. 180 above.

<sup>489</sup> See GEIGER, PLL, 44.0.

and printed editions, with a summary of their contents. This is, unfortunately, still the situation with regard to much of the Pāli literature written in Cambodia, Laos, and Thailand. Although valuable work has been done in this field,<sup>489</sup> much remains to be done before we know as much about Pāli writers in these countries as we do about authors who worked in India, Ceylon, and Burma.

<sup>489</sup> See G. GONÉS, "Note sur les ouvrages pāli composés en pays Thai," in BEFEO 15, 3 (1915), pp. 39–46 and H. SADDHATISSA, "Pāli literature of Thailand," in Cotsins, BSIBH, pp. 211–25; "Pāli literature in Cambodia," in JPTS 1981, pp. 178–97; and "Pāli literature from Laos," in NARAIN, SPB, pp. 327–40.



# ABBREVIATIONS

## I. Texts (original sources)

A	Aṅguttara-nikāya
Att	Haṭṭhavanagallavihāravamsa
Anāg	Anāgatavamsa
Ap	Apadāna
Ap-a	Apadāna-aṭṭhakathā (= Visuddhajanavilāsini)
Abh	Abhidhānappadīpikā
Abhidh-av	Abhidhammāvatāra
Abhidh-s	Abhidhammatthasaṅgaha
As	Atthasālinī
It	Itivuttaka
It-a	Itivuttaka-aṭṭhakathā (= Paramatthadīpanī)
Utt	Uttarajjhāyana-sutta
Utt-vn	Uttaravinichaya
Ud	Udāna
Ud-a	Udāna-aṭṭhakathā (= Paramatthadīpanī)
Udāna-v	Udānavarga
Upās	Upāsakajanālaṅkāra
Kkh	Kaṅkhāvitaranī
KJ	Kuṇḍalajātaka
K Mhv	Kambodian (Extended) Mahāvamsa
Kv	Kathāvatthu
Kv-a	Kathāvatthu-aṭṭhakathā
Khuddas	Khuddasikkhā
Khp	Khuddakapāṭha
G Dhv	Gāndhārī Dharmapada
Gv	Gandhavamsa
Cūl	Cūlavamsa (= Mahāvamsa XXXVII 51—CI 29)
Cp	Cariyāpīṭaka
Cp-a	Cariyāpīṭaka-aṭṭhakathā (= Paramatthadīpanī)
Ja	Jātaka and Jātakatṭhakathā
Jinak	Jinakālamālī
Jina-c	Jinacarita
Jināl	Jinālaṅkāra
Tikap	Tikapattḥāna
Tikap-a	Tikapattḥāna-aṭṭhakathā
Tel	Telakattāhagāthā
Th	Theragāthā
Th-a	Theragāthā-aṭṭhakathā (= Paramatthadīpanī)
Thī	Therīgāthā
Thī-a	Therīgāthā-aṭṭhakathā (= Paramatthadīpanī)
Thūp	Thūpavamsa
D	Dīgha-nikāya
Dāth	Dāthāvamsa
Divy	Divyāvadāna
Dīp	Dīpavamsa

Dukap	Dukapaṭṭhāna
Dukap-n	Dukapaṭṭhāna-aṭṭhakathā
Dbk	Dasabodhisattupattikathā
Dvp	Dasavattuppakaraṇa
Dhātuk	Dhātukathā
Dhātuk-a	Dhātukathā-aṭṭhakathā
Dhātup	(Pāli) Dhātupāṭha
Dhātum	Dhātumañjūsā
Dhp	Dhammapada
Dhp-a	Dhammapada-aṭṭhakathā
Dhs	Dhammasaṅgani
Nāmar-p	Nāmarūpapariccheda
Nidd I	Mahāniddeśa
Nidd II	Cullaniddeśa
Nidd-a I	Mahāniddeśa-aṭṭhakathā (= Saddhammapajjotikā)
Nidd-a II	Cullaniddeśa-aṭṭhakathā (= Saddhammapajjotikā)
Nett	Nettipakaraṇa
Nett-a	Nettipakaraṇa-aṭṭhakathā
Pajj	Pajjamadhu
Patis	Paṭisambhidāmagga
Paṭis-a	Paṭisambhidāmagga-aṭṭhakathā (= Saddhammapakāsini)
Paṭṭh	Paṭṭhāna (= Mahāpakaraṇa)
Peṭ	Peṭakopadesa
Pj I	Paramatthajotikā on Khuddakapāṭha
Pj II	Paramatthajotikā on Suttanipāta
PJ	Paññāsa Jātaka
P Dhp	Paṭna Dharmapada
Pp	Puggalapaññatti
Pp-a	Puggalapaññatti-aṭṭhakathā
Ppk-a	Pañcappakaraṇa-aṭṭhakathā (= Dhātuk-a, Pp-a, Kv-a, Yam-a, Paṭṭh-a)
Pv	Petavatthu
Pv-a	Petavatthu-aṭṭhakathā (= Paramatthadīpanī)
Ps	Papañcasūdanī
Bu-up	Buddhaghosupatti
Bv	Buddhavaṃsa
Bv-a	Buddhavaṃsa-aṭṭhakathā (= Madhuravilāsini)
M	Majjhima-nikāya
Mil	Milindapañha
Mil-t	Milinda-ṭikā
Mūlas	Mūlasikkhā
Moh	Mohavicchedanī
Mp	Manorathapūraṇī
MPS	Mahāparinirvāṇasūtra
MBh	Mahābhārata
Mvu	Mahāvastu
Mhvv	Mahābodhivaṃsa
Mhv	Mahāvamsa
Mhv-t	Mahāvamsa-ṭikā (= Vamsatthapakāsini)
Yam	Yamaka-pakaraṇa
Yam-a	Yamaka-aṭṭhakathā
Ras	Rasavālini
Rūpār	Rūpārūpavibhāga

Lal	Lalitavistara
Lp	Lokappaññatti
Vin	Vinaya-piṭaka
Vin-vn	Vinayavinicchaya
Vibh	Vibhaṅga
Vibh-a	Vibhaṅga-aṭṭhakathā (= Sammohavinodanī)
Vism	Visuddhimagga
Vism-mhṭ	Visuddhimagga-mahāṭikā (= Paramatthamañjūsā)
Vutt	Vuttodaya
Vv	Vimānavatthu
Vv-a	Vimānavatthu-aṭṭhakathā (= Paramatthadīpanī)
S	Samyutta-nikāya
Sacc	Saccasamkhepa
Sadd	Saddanīti
Saddh	Saddhammapāyana
Saddhamma-s	Saddhammasaṅgaha
Saddharmap	Saddharmapundarika
Sandes	Sandesakathā
Samantak	Samantakūṭavavṇana
Sah	Sahassavattuppakaraṇa
Sās	Sāsanavamsa
Simāv	Simāvivādavinicchayakathā
Sih	Sihajavattuppakaraṇa
Subodh	Subodhālaṅkāra
Sn	Suttanipāta
Sp	Samantapāsādikā
Spk	Sāratthapakāsini
Sp-t	ṭikā on Samantapāsādikā (= Sāratthadīpanī)
Sv	Sumaṅgalavilāsini
Sv-pt	purāṇaṭikā on Sumaṅgalavilāsini (= Linatthapakāsini)

## II. Abbreviated titles of books mentioned in the footnotes

Adikaram, EHBC	E. W. Adikaram, Early History of Buddhism in Ceylon, Migoda, Ceylon, 1946
Alsdorf, AS	L. Alsdorf, Die Āryā-strophen des Pāli-Kanons, Mainz 1968.
Balasooriya, BSWR	Somarathna Balasooriya et al. (ed.), Buddhist Studies in honour of Walpola Rahula, London 1980
Bapat, VV	P. V. Bapat, Vimuttimagga and Visuddhimagga: a comparative study, Poona 1937
Bechert, BCSRS	H. Bechert (ed.), Buddhism in Ceylon and Studies on Religious Syncretism in Buddhist Countries, Göttingen 1978
Bechert, LEPT	H. Bechert (ed.), The language of the Earliest Buddhist Tradition, Göttingen 1980
Bechert, PNTB	H. Bechert and H. Braun, Pāli Nīti Texts from Burma, PTS London, 1981
Bode, PLB	M. H. Bode, Pāli Literature of Burma, London 1909
Buddhadatta, Corr	A. P. Buddhadatta, Corrections of Geiger's Mahāvamsa, etc., Ambalangoda 1957
Cousins, BSIBH	L. S. Cousins et al. (ed.), Buddhist Studies in honour of I. B. Horner, Dordrecht 1974
Franke, Gramm	R. Otto Franke, Geschichte und Kritik der einheimischen Pāli-Grammatik und -Lexicographie, Strassburg 1902



- Frauwallner, EV E. Frauwallner, *The earliest Vinaya and the beginnings of Buddhist literature*, Rome 1956
- Geiger, DM W. Geiger, *The Dipavamsa and Mahāvamsa and their historical development in Ceylon*, Colombo 1908
- Geiger, PLL W. Geiger, *Pāli Literature and Language*, Calcutta 1956
- Godakumbura, Cat C. E. Godakumbura, *Catalogue of Ceylonese Manuscripts*, The Royal Library, Copenhagen 1980
- Gray, Prov J. Gray, *Ancient proverbs and maxims from Burmese sources, the Niti literature of Burma*, London 1886
- Heesterman, Pratid J. C. Heesterman et al. (ed.), *Pratidānam*, den Haag 1969
- Horner, BD I. B. Horner, *The Book of the Discipline*, 6 Vols., SBB London, 1938—66
- Horner, MLS I. B. Horner, *Middle Length Sayings*, 3 vols., PTS London, 1954—59
- Law, HPL B. C. Law, *History of Pāli literature*, 2 vols., London 1933
- Lüders, BSU H. Lüders, *Beobachtungen über die Sprache des buddhistischen Urkanons*, Berlin 1954
- Malalasekera, DPPN G. P. Malalasekera, *Dictionary of Pāli Proper Names*, 2 vols., London 1937—38
- Malalasekera, PLC G. P. Malalasekera, *Pāli Literature of Ceylon*, London 1928
- Narain, SPB A. K. Narain, *Studies in Pāli and Buddhism*, Delhi 1979
- Norman, EV I K. R. Norman, *Elders' Verses I*, PTS London 1969
- Norman, EV II K. R. Norman, *Elders' Verses II*, PTS London 1971
- Pande, SOB G. C. Pande, *Studies in the origins of Buddhism*, Allahabad 1957
- Rahula, HBC W. Rahula, *History of Buddhism in Ceylon*, Colombo 1956
- Rhys Davids, DB T. W. Rhys Davids, *Dialogues of the Buddha*, 3 vols., SBB London, 1899—1921
- Roth, BV G. Roth, *Bhikṣuṇī-Vinaya: manual of discipline for Buddhist nuns*, Patna 1970
- de Silva, DAT L. de Silva, *Dighanikāyaṭṭhakathāṭikā Linatthavaṇṇanā*, 3 vols., PTS London, 1970
- Thomas, HBT E. J. Thomas, *History of Buddhist Thought*, London 1933
- Waldschmidt, CASF E. Waldschmidt, *Central Asian Sūtra Fragments*, in Bechert, *LEBT*, pp. 136—74
- Warder, IB A. K. Warder, *Indian Buddhism*, Delhi 1970
- Warder, IKL A. K. Warder, *Indian Kāvya Literature*, Vol. II, Delhi 1974
- Warder, PM A. K. Warder, *Pāli Metre*, PTS London, 1967
- Winternitz, HIL M. Winternitz, *History of Indian Literature*, Vol. II, Calcutta 1933
- Yuyama, VT A. Yuyama, *Vinaya-Texte*, Wiesbaden 1979

### III. Periodicals, etc.

- ADAW Abhandlungen der Deutschen Akademie der Wissenschaften zu Berlin, Klasse für Sprachen, Literatur und Kunst
- AGAW Abhandlungen der Akademie der Wissenschaften in Göttingen, Phil.-Hist. Kl.
- AO Acta Orientalia, Copenhagen ✓
- BEFEO Bulletin de l'École Française d'Extrême Orient, Paris ✓
- BSOAS Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies, London
- CPD Critical Pāli Dictionary, Copenhagen

- IC Indian Culture, Calcutta
- IHQ Indian Historical Quarterly, Calcutta
- IJJ Indo-Iranian Journal, Dordrecht
- IT Indologica Taurinensia, Turin
- JA Journal Asiatique, Paris
- JAS(B) Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, Calcutta
- JBRS Journal of the Bihar Research Society, Patna
- JIABS Journal of the International Association of Buddhist Studies, Madison
- JOI(B) Journal of the Oriental Institute, Baroda
- JPTS Journal of the Pāli Text Society, London
- JRAS Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society, London
- KST Kleinere Sanskrit-Texte
- MW Sir Monier Monier-Williams, *Sanskrit-English Dictionary*, Oxford
- NGAW Nachrichten der Akademie der Wissenschaften in Göttingen, Phil.-Hist. Kl.
- PBR Pāli Buddhist Review, London
- PED T. W. Rhys Davids and W. Stede, *Pāli-English Dictionary*, London
- PTC Pāli Tipitakam Concordance, London
- PTS Pāli Text Society
- SBB Sacred Books of the Buddhists, London
- SBE Sacred Books of the East, Oxford
- StII Studien zur Indologie und Iranistik, Reinbek
- STT Sanskrittexte aus den Turfanfund
- WZKS(O) Wiener Zeitschrift für die Kunde Süd(- und Ost)asiens, Vienna
- ZDMG Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft, Wiesbaden

### IV. General

- Be Edition in Burmese characters
- BHS Buddhist Hybrid Sanskrit
- Ce Edition in Sinhalese characters
- ch. chapter
- diss. dissertation
- ed. editor, edited by
- Ee Edition in Roman letters
- ibid. in same book/article as quoted in previous note
- MIA Middle Indo-Aryan
- Ne Edition in *Nāgari* characters
- n(n). note(s)
- op. cit. the work quoted (in the specified note)
- Pkt Prakrit
- p(p). page(s)
- repr. reprinted
- rev. reviewer, reviewed by
- Skt Sanskrit
- s.v(v). under the heading(s)
- tr. translator, translated by
- v(v). verse(s)

# GLOSSARY OF PĀLI, PRAKRIT AND SANSKRIT TERMS

<i>akusala</i>	unwholesome, not moral, evil
<i>akkhava</i>	inopportune time
<i>akṣara</i>	syllable
<i>aṅga</i>	section, especially of nine-fold Canon
<i>acchariya</i>	marvellous; a marvel
<i>ajjhāyaka</i>	teacher
<i>aṭṭha</i>	eight
<i>aṭṭhakathā</i>	commentary
<i>aṭṭhaka-nipāta</i>	section of eights
<i>atideva</i>	super-god
<i>atīlavatthu</i>	a tale of the past
<i>attā</i>	self; individuality
<i>atthavaṇṇanā</i>	commentary
<i>adbhuta</i>	= <i>abhhuta</i>
<i>adhikaraṇasamathā dhammā</i>	legal questions
<i>adhiṭṭhāna</i>	resolution
<i>adhideva</i>	super-god
<i>adhipati</i>	predominance (condition); overlord
<i>anattā</i>	non-self
<i>anavasseṭṭa</i>	not letting in
<i>anīyata</i>	undetermined
<i>anuggaha</i>	kindness
<i>anuttikā</i>	supplement to a <i>ṭikā</i>
<i>anuppaññatti</i>	secondary rule
<i>anomodana</i>	thanks
<i>anuvyañjana</i>	minor marks, characteristics
<i>anussati</i>	mindfulness
<i>apadāna</i>	noble deed
<i>appamāda</i>	lack of carelessness
<i>abbhutadhamma</i>	marvellous phenomenon
<i>abhi</i> (prep.)	regarding
<i>abhidhamma</i>	regarding the <i>dhamma</i>
<i>abhinīhāra</i>	aspiration for Buddhahood
<i>abhinivāya</i>	regarding the <i>vinaya</i>
<i>arañña-vāsin</i>	forest dweller
<i>arahant</i>	perfected one, one who has gained <i>nibbāna</i>
<i>arūpa-vimokkha</i>	immaterial release
<i>arhat</i>	= <i>arahant</i>
<i>avadāna</i>	noble deed
<i>avassuta</i>	letting in
<i>avijjā</i>	ignorance
<i>avidūre-nidāna</i>	beginning in not remote past
<i>aṣṭau</i>	eight
<i>asaṅkhata</i>	uncompounded
<i>asaṅgaha</i>	unclassification
<i>asaṅgahita</i>	unclassified
<i>asura</i>	opponent of the gods

## Glossary of Pāli, Prakrit and Sanskrit Terms

191

<i>ākhyāna</i>	narrative poem
<i>āgattāgama</i>	one who has mastered the <i>āgamas</i>
<i>āgama</i>	= <i>nikāya</i>
<i>ācariya</i>	teacher
<i>ātman</i>	= <i>attā</i>
<i>ānāpāna</i>	breathing in and out
<i>ānisaṃsā</i>	benefit, merit, advantage
<i>ānuttariya</i>	excellence
<i>ābhidhammika</i>	one versed in the <i>Abhidhamma</i>
<i>āyatana</i>	base
<i>ārammaṇa</i>	object (condition)
<i>ārāma</i>	monastery
<i>āsava</i>	influx
<i>itīvuttaka</i>	one of the nine <i>aṅgas</i>
<i>itivuttaka</i>	= <i>itīvuttaka</i>
<i>iddhi</i>	supernormal power
<i>iddhi-pada</i>	base of <i>iddhi</i>
<i>indriya</i>	sense-faculty
<i>udāna</i>	solemn utterance
<i>uddāna</i>	summary verse
<i>uddesa</i>	statement, explanation
<i>upadeśa</i>	one of the Sanskrit <i>aṅgas</i>
<i>upadesa</i>	instruction, teaching
<i>upadhi</i>	material possessions; desire for material possessions
<i>upasampadā</i>	ordination
<i>upasarga</i>	prefix, preposition
<i>upādāna-kkhandha</i>	aggregates of grasping
<i>upādāya-rūpa</i>	dependent form, quality
<i>upāsaka</i>	lay-follower
<i>upekkhā</i>	equanimity
<i>uppatti</i>	(story telling) the origin (of a <i>sutta</i> )
<i>ekacce</i>	some (authorities)
<i>eka-nipāta</i>	section of ones
<i>ekādasa-nipāta</i>	section of elevens
<i>ejā</i>	lust
<i>etarahi</i>	now
<i>aupamya</i>	one of the Sanskrit <i>aṅgas</i>
<i>kāṭhina</i>	cotton cloth (for robe)
<i>kathamkathā</i>	doubt
<i>kathā</i>	discourse, topic
<i>kappa</i>	mental figment; aeon
<i>kamma</i>	action
<i>kamma-ṭṭhāna</i>	subject for meditation
<i>kamma-vācā</i>	official act of the <i>saṅgha</i>
<i>karuṇā</i>	pity, compassion
<i>karuṇā-jhāna</i>	meditation on compassion
<i>karma-vākya, -vācā</i>	= <i>kamma-vācā</i>



<i>kāmādinava</i>	dangers in sensual pleasures
<i>kāya</i>	body
<i>kārikā</i>	concise statement, especially in grammatical text
<i>kāvya</i>	ornate poetry
<i>kuṭi(kā)</i>	hut
<i>kuśala</i>	wholesome, moral, good
<i>keci</i>	some (authorities)
<i>kaṇṭhiya</i>	= <i>khattiya</i>
<i>khanda</i>	section
<i>khattiya</i>	member of second (warrior) caste
<i>khandha</i>	aggregate
<i>khandhaka</i>	section, chapter
<i>gaṇa</i>	group, section
<i>ganthi-padu</i>	word-list
<i>gandha-kāra</i>	book-writer
<i>gandhābba</i>	heavenly musician, demi-god
<i>gāthā</i>	stanza
<i>gihī-vinaya</i>	householder's discipline
<i>guru</i>	teacher
<i>geyya</i>	= <i>geyya</i>
<i>geyya</i>	recitation
<i>gopālaka</i>	cowherd
<i>cakkavattin</i>	universal monarch
<i>catukka-nipāta</i>	section of fours
<i>catuttha</i>	fourth
<i>catthāro</i>	four
<i>campu</i>	a style of ornate poetry
<i>cariyā</i>	(story relating) conduct, action
<i>citta</i>	mind
<i>cetasika</i>	mental concomitant
<i>ceto-khila</i>	barrenness of mind
<i>chakka-nipāta</i>	section of sixes
<i>chaṭṭha</i>	sixth
<i>jarā</i>	old age
<i>jātaka</i>	birth story
<i>jāti</i>	birth
<i>jina</i>	conqueror
<i>jhāna</i>	meditation
<i>jhāyaka</i>	meditator
<i>ñāṇa</i>	knowledge
<i>ṭīkā</i>	sub-commentary
<i>tanhū</i>	craving
<i>Taṭṭhapaṭa</i>	epithet of <i>arahant</i>
<i>taṇṭi</i>	canon
<i>tapas</i>	ascetic practices
<i>(t)aya</i>	triad, group of three
<i>tiṇe</i>	triplet
<i>tika-nipāta</i>	section of threes
<i>tipiṭaka</i>	three baskets (of the Canon)

<i>ti-sarana</i>	three refuges
<i>tepiṭaka</i>	versed in the three baskets (of the Canon)
<i>tevijja</i>	possessor of the three <i>vedas</i> or <i>vijjās</i>
<i>thūpa</i>	shrine, tope
<i>thera</i>	elder (m.)
<i>thera-vāda</i>	tradition of the elders
<i>theriya</i>	(one) belonging to the tradition of the elders
<i>theri</i>	elder (f.)
<i>dama</i>	self-conquest
<i>dassana</i>	vision, insight
<i>dāna</i>	giving, generosity
<i>dāna-vatthu</i>	object suitable as a gift
<i>diṭṭhi</i>	(wrong) view
<i>disā</i>	direction
<i>disā-pharaṇā</i>	pervasion of the directions
<i>dīpa</i>	island
<i>duka</i>	couplet
<i>dukkha</i>	misery
<i>dūre-nidāna</i>	beginning in the remote past
<i>deva</i>	god
<i>devatā</i>	deity
<i>deva-putta</i>	member of the divine race
<i>deva-loka</i>	world of the gods
<i>dvayatā</i>	pair
<i>dvepāṭimokkha</i>	two <i>pāṭimokkhas</i>
<i>dhamma</i>	(sg.) doctrine; (pl.) states; (f.) subject to . . .
<i>dhammā</i>	natural law
<i>dhamma-yāga</i>	spiritual sacrifice
<i>-dhara</i>	carrier of = expert in
<i>-dharin</i>	= <i>-dhara</i>
<i>dharmā</i>	= <i>dhama</i>
<i>dhātu</i>	element
<i>dhātu-pāṭha</i>	list of roots
<i>dhutaṅga</i>	ascetic practice
<i>naya</i>	guide line; style, method; maxim
<i>nava</i>	new, modern, later
<i>nava-tikā</i>	modern <i>tikā</i>
<i>nāga</i>	snake
<i>nāgari</i>	a North Indian script
<i>nāma</i>	immaterial factor
<i>nikāya</i>	one of the five sections of the <i>sutta-piṭaka</i>
<i>niḡamana-gāthā</i>	concluding stanzas, envoi
<i>niyūthita</i>	finished
<i>nidāna</i>	inception, origin; one of the Sanskrit <i>aṅgas</i> ;
<i>niddesa</i>	link in causal chain
<i>nipāta</i>	exposition, exegesis
<i>nipātaka</i>	section (often numerical in nature); particle
<i>nibbāna</i>	section
<i>nimitta</i>	extinction, quenching
<i>niraya</i>	omen (especially the four seen by the Bodhisatta)
<i>niruti</i>	hell
	etymological explanation

<i>nirvāṇa</i>	= <i>nibbāna</i>
<i>niṣaggiya</i>	forfeiture
<i>nīti</i>	worldly wisdom
<i>nekkhamma</i>	renunciation
<i>nhātaka</i>	one who has washed
<i>paccaya</i>	(n.) condition; (adj.) proper, fitting
<i>paccuppanna-vatthu</i>	tale of the present
<i>pacceka-buddha</i>	one enlightened for himself, a non-teaching Buddha
<i>pañca</i>	five
<i>pañcaka-nīpāṇa</i>	section of fives
<i>pañcama</i>	fifth
<i>paññatti</i>	concept
<i>paññā</i>	knowledge
<i>paññāsa</i>	fifty
<i>paññāsaka</i>	group of fifty ( <i>suttas</i> )
<i>pañha</i>	question
<i>pañicca-samuppāda</i>	dependent origination
<i>pañisambhidā</i>	discrimination
<i>pañisaraṇa</i>	support
<i>paññāna-naya</i>	causal relations
<i>paññāsa</i>	group of fifty ( <i>suttas</i> )
<i>paññāsa-buddha</i>	= <i>pacceka-buddha</i>
<i>pada-bhāṣamīya</i>	word analysis
<i>pabbajjā</i>	initiation
<i>paritē</i>	protection, safeguard; protective utterance
<i>parinibbāna</i>	final extinction, quenching
<i>parinibbūta</i>	finally extinct, quenched
<i>parivāra</i>	supplement
<i>pariveṇa</i>	monastery
<i>pācittiya</i>	expiation
<i>pāṭidesaniya</i>	confession
<i>pāṭimokkha</i>	rules of discipline
<i>pāda</i>	foot (of verse)
<i>pāpādinava</i>	terrible evil
<i>pāramitā</i>	perfection
<i>pārami</i>	perfection
<i>pārājika</i>	defeat
<i>pāli</i>	Canon
<i>pāli-bhāṣā</i>	language of the Canon
<i>piṭaka</i>	basket (of texts)
<i>piya-rūpa</i>	of pleasing appearance
<i>pucchā</i>	question
<i>puṅgalu</i>	person, individual
<i>puṅpha</i>	flower
<i>puṇḍarīkā</i>	former teacher
<i>purāṇa</i>	early, ancient
<i>purāṇa-ṭīkā</i>	ancient <i>ṭīkā</i>
<i>ṇeṭakin</i>	versed in the <i>piṭakas</i>
<i>petu</i>	departed spirit
<i>poṭṭhaka</i>	book
<i>porāṇa</i>	ancient (authority)
<i>pratisamvīda</i>	= <i>paṭisambhida</i>

<i>prāṭikhā</i>	lemma (in commentary, or introduction)
<i>pratyeka-buddha</i>	= <i>pacceka-buddha</i>
<i>prastuti</i>	eulogy
<i>prātimokkha</i>	= <i>pāṭimokkha</i>
<i>phala</i>	fruit, reward
<i>phassa</i>	contact
<i>brahmana</i>	= <i>brāhmaṇa</i>
<i>bala</i>	power
<i>bilāra</i>	cat
<i>Buddha</i>	enlightened one
<i>Buddha-khetta</i>	Buddha field
<i>Buddha-parisā</i>	Buddha's acquaintances
<i>Buddha-bhāṣita</i>	spoken by the Buddha
<i>Buddha-vacana</i>	Buddha's word
<i>bojjhaṅga</i>	factor of enlightenment
<i>boṭhi</i>	enlightenment; enlightenment tree
<i>bodhi-pājā</i>	honouring the <i>boṭhi</i> tree
<i>Bodhi-satta</i>	being destined for enlightenment
<i>brahma-cārin</i>	one who lives the holy life
<i>brahma-vihāra</i>	sublime state of mind
<i>brāhmaṇa</i>	brahmin, member of first (priestly) caste
<i>bhaya</i>	fear
<i>bhāṇaka</i>	reciter
<i>bhāṇā</i>	meditative practice
<i>bhāṣā</i>	speech, language
<i>bhikkhu</i>	monk
<i>bhikkhuni</i>	nun
<i>bhikkhu</i>	= <i>bhikkhu</i>
<i>bhikkhuni</i>	= <i>bhikkhuni</i>
<i>bhumma</i>	terrestrial
<i>bhūta-vāhana-yanta</i>	robot
<i>matī</i>	thought, volition
<i>marana</i>	death
<i>mahā-thera</i>	great i. e. chief elder
<i>mahā-nipāṭa</i>	section of long poems
<i>mahāpadesa</i>	principal appeal to authority
<i>mahā-parisa</i>	great man
<i>mahā-bhūta</i>	great essential (element)
<i>mahā-saṅgīti</i>	great council
<i>Māgadhiḥka-bhāṣā</i>	language of Magadha
<i>mātikā</i>	topics of discourse; summary list of contents
<i>munī</i>	seer, sage
<i>mūla-bhāṣā</i>	root language
<i>mettā</i>	loving kindness
<i>yakkha</i>	supernormal being, demi-god
<i>yāga</i>	sacrifice
<i>yuga-nandha</i>	association, coupling
<i>rakkhā-manta</i>	saving chant
<i>ratana-caṅkama</i>	jewel walk
<i>rasa</i>	elegance of sound



<i>rāja</i>	king
<i>rūpa</i>	form, material quality
<i>lakkhana</i>	characteristic property
<i>loka-saṅghāti</i>	cosmology
<i>lokottara</i>	supra-mundane
<i>vaṃsa</i>	chronicle
<i>vagga</i>	chapter of text
<i>vāci</i>	speech, voice
<i>vaṇṇanā</i>	embellishment; commentary
<i>vaṭṭu</i>	subject matter; story; section
<i>vaṭṭu-gāthā</i>	introductory stanzas (of a <i>sutta</i> )
<i>vaṇṇa</i>	= <i>vagga</i>
<i>vaṭṭu</i>	= <i>vaṭṭu</i>
<i>vāsa</i>	portion, section
<i>vāra</i>	doubt
<i>vicikicchā</i>	knowledge
<i>viññā</i>	discipline
<i>vinaya</i>	insight
<i>vipassanā</i>	exegesis, classification
<i>viḥaṅga</i>	heavenly abode
<i>vimāna</i>	release
<i>vimokkha</i>	purity
<i>viuddhi</i>	answering
<i>viśaṅganā</i>	monastery
<i>viḥāra</i>	section of twenties
<i>visati-nipāta</i>	commentary
<i>vutti</i>	knowledge; brahmanical text
<i>veda</i>	feeling, sensation
<i>vedanā</i>	analysis
<i>vedalla</i>	exposition, commentary; grammarian
<i>veyyākaraṇa</i>	avoidance, abstinence
<i>veramaṇi</i>	member of the third caste
<i>veṇṇa</i>	disease
<i>vyādhi</i>	
<i>śrāvakācāra</i>	conduct of a layman
<i>saṃyama</i>	self-control
<i>saṃyutta</i>	connected collection
<i>saṃvannanā</i>	commentary
<i>saṃvibhāga</i>	sharing together
<i>saṃsāra</i>	journeying on, transmigration
<i>sagga</i>	heaven
<i>saṅkhāra</i>	constituent element
<i>saṅkhepato</i>	in brief
<i>saṅkhyā</i>	enumeration
<i>saṅgaha</i>	collection; classification
<i>saṅgahita</i>	classified
<i>saṅgāyana</i>	council
<i>saṅgīti</i>	council
<i>saṅgīti-kāra</i>	one who holds a council
<i>saṅgha</i>	Order of Buddhists
<i>saṅghādisesa</i>	formal meeting of the Order
<i>saṅga</i>	truth

<i>saññāvedayitanirodhasamāpatti</i>	attainment of extinction of sensation of perception
<i>sati-paṭṭhāna</i>	basis of mindfulness
<i>satta</i>	seven
<i>santike-nidāna</i>	beginning in the present
<i>samana</i>	ascetic
<i>samatta</i>	finished
<i>samaya</i>	assembly
<i>samāja</i>	assembly
<i>samādhi</i>	concentration
<i>samodhāna</i>	identification
<i>sarāna</i>	refuge
<i>sāmañña-kaṇḍa</i>	miscellaneous section
<i>sāsana</i>	teaching
<i>sikkhāpada</i>	rules of training
<i>sigāla</i>	jackal
<i>simā</i>	boundary
<i>sila</i>	morality, moral conduct
<i>siha-nāda</i>	lion's roar, shout of exultation
<i>Sihala-bhāsā</i>	language of Ceylon
<i>Sihala-sāsana</i>	Sinhalese tradition of teaching
<i>sukha</i>	happiness
<i>suñña</i>	empty; emptiness
<i>sutta</i>	thread; discourse
<i>suttanta</i>	discourse
<i>sudda</i>	member of the fourth caste
<i>supanna</i>	winged creature, the enemy of <i>nāgas</i>
<i>subhāṣita</i>	eloquent saying
<i>sūkara-maddava</i>	tender pig's flesh
<i>sūtra</i>	= <i>sutta</i>
<i>sūtra-pāṭha</i>	text in aphorism form
<i>sekhiya</i>	training
<i>soḍḍipatti-aṅga</i>	phase of entry into the stream
<i>stūpa</i>	= <i>thūpa</i>
<i>svarabhakti</i>	epenthesis, insertion of epenthetic vowel
<i>svāgama</i>	versed in the <i>āgamas</i>
<i>hāra</i>	mode
<i>hetu</i>	root (condition)

# INDEX OF AUTHORS

(authors of the same name are not separated; n after a page number = in the footnotes to that page)

- Aggavamsa 164-66  
 Atthadassi 163  
 Anuruddha 144, 151-52  
 Ariyavamsa 172n, 181  
 Ānanda 148, 152, 159-60, 170, 181  
 Udumbara 181  
 Upatissa 113, 133n, 141, 162  
 Upasena 133, 137  
 Kaccāna 108, 110  
 Kaccāyana 163-66  
 Kassapa 147, 153, 161, 172  
 Khema 152  
 Canda 147  
 Candragomin 165  
 Cānaka 176  
 Culladhammapāla 152, 181  
 Cūḷābhaya(-tthera) 150  
 Chapaṭa 153, 164, 171  
 Tibbatuvava 141  
 Tissa 96, 103, 105, 125  
 Daṇḍin 157  
 Dīpaṅkara 164  
 Dhammakitti 140, 142, 164, 179-80  
 Dhammadinna 154  
 Dhammanandi 154  
 Dhammānanda 164  
 Dhammapāla 40, 61, 71, 73, 89, 109-10, 113, 123, 133-37, 145-46, 148-50, 152, 163, 165, 181  
 Dhammasiri 169  
 Dharmapāla 149  
 Nandapaṇṇa 180  
 Navamoggallāna 166, 181  
 Paññāsāmi 11-12, 181-82  
 Pāṇini 129n, 147, 163-66  
 Piṅgala 168  
 Buddhaghosa 8, 10-11, 15-18, 27, 30-32, 42, 50, 54, 57, 61-62, 87-88, 91, 96-99, 103-4, 109-34, 137-39, 143-47, 149-50, 163, 165, 169, 179, 181-82  
 Buddhadatta 124, 130-32, 143-46, 153, 157, 168, 181  
 Buddhadāsa 162  
 Buddhapiya 159, 162n, 164-65, 173  
 Buddhārakkhita 157-58  
 Bhartṛhari 149  
 Maṅgala 145  
 Mahākaccāyana 181  
 Mahākaṣṭhila 107  
 Mahānāma 117-18, 132, 137  
 Mahāmaṅgala 145  
 Mahāyasa 164  
 Mahāsāmi 169  
 Medhaṅkara 158, 165  
 Moggaliputta 10 (see Tissa)  
 Moggallāna 140, 165-67  
 Moggallāyana 165  
 Ratṭhapāla 155-56  
 Ratanaṇḍa 143  
 Rāmasamma 167  
 Rāhula 172  
 Vacissara 130-31, 142, 152, 164, 168, 171  
 Vimaladhamma 144  
 Vimalabuddhi 164  
 Vimalasāra 172, 182  
 Vedeha 145n, 155, 159  
 Vepullabuddhi 168  
 Vopadeva 166  
 Śāntideva 57  
 Śāriputra 107  
 Saṅgharakkhita 167-69  
 Saddhammakitti 167  
 Saddhammajotipāla 153, 164, 171  
 Saramakara 163  
 Śāriputta 11, 43, 84-85, 87, 99, 107, 132, 149n, 151  
 Siddhattha(-thera) 162n, 173  
 Siraṇḍa 175  
 Silatthera 167  
 Silavamsa 166  
 Hāla 75

# INDEX OF WORKS

(Works of the same name are not separated. Abbreviations: -k = -kathā; -kkh = -kkhandha(ka); -g = -gāthā; -j = -jātaka; -t = -tikā; -n = -nikāya; -p-v = -pota-vatthu; -v = -vagga; -var = -varga; -v-v = -vimānavatthu; -s = -sutta(ṇṭa); -samy = -samyutta; -sū = -sūtra; n after a page number = in the footnotes to that page)

- Agāriya-v-v 71n  
 Aggañña-s 41, 175  
 Aṅguttara-n 8, 28, 30-31, 37, 43, 49-50, 54-57, 62, 103, 122, 174-75; -aṭṭhakathā 128, 149n; -āgama 31  
 Aṅgulimāla-s 47, 174  
 Acchariyabbhūtaḍḍhamma-s 48, 79  
 Ajitapaṇṇa 69n  
 Aṭṭhakathākaṇḍa 99  
 Aṭṭhaka-v 63-64, 67-69, 84-86  
 Aṭṭhaka-s 68  
 Atta-v 59n  
 Atthasālinī 98, 120, 122-26, 131, 147n  
 Atthuddhāra 99-100  
 Anamatagga-samy 52  
 Anavatapta-g 92  
 Anāgata-vamsa 161-62  
 Anusaya-yamaka 105  
 Andhaka-aṭṭhakathā 121  
 Apannaka-j 15, 129n  
 Apannaka-s 46  
 Apadāna 9, 20, 23-24, 31-32, 65, 77, 87-92, 121, 127, 135, 146-47  
 Abhidhamma(-pitaka) 8-9, 15, 17, 27, 32, 37, 40, 43, 48, 87-90, 94, 96-107, 121, 123, 129, 131, 147-49, 151, 157, 161; -bhājanīya 100  
 Abhidhammatthasaṅgaha 144, 151-52  
 Abhidhammavāṭāra 124, 131, 140, 153  
 Abhidhammakosa 68n; -vyākhyā 56  
 Abhidharma-pitaka 17, 37, 43, 107  
 Abhidhānappadīpikā 150, 166-67, 181; -tikā 167; -samyannanā 167; -sūci 166n  
 Abhisamācārikā 21  
 Amarakosa 149, 166-67  
 Ambaṭṭha-s 33, 36, 47  
 Ariyapariyesana-s 45  
 Arthapada-sū 68n  
 Arthavārgiya 68  
 Alagaddūpama-s 45  
 Avadāna 24, 92  
 Avalokita-sū 26n  
 Avassuta-s 53  
 Avyakata-samy 35n  
 Astaka-var 68  
 Asta-var 68  
 Asaṅkhata-samy 53  
 Assalāvana-s 46  
 Ātānātika-sū 43  
 Ātānātika-s 39, 43, 173-74  
 Ālavaka-s 65  
 Itivuttaka 9, 15-16, 31, 62-63, 133-34, 136  
 Itthi-v 82  
 Isigili-s 48  
 Uttaraṅgrantha 28-29  
 Uttaraṇṇīya 131  
 Udayapaṇṇa 69n  
 Udāna 9, 15-16, 31, 60-62, 68, 133-34, 136, 148, 152  
 Udāna-var 59-61  
 Udumbarikaśāhanāda-s 35, 41  
 Upadeśa-śāstra 16n  
 Uparipannāsa 48-49  
 Upasena-s 53  
 Upasena-sū 53  
 Upāliṇcaka 28-29  
 Upāliparipucchā-sū 28-29  
 Upāli-v 28  
 Upāli-s 46  
 Upāsakajanālaṅkāra 170  
 Upāsakālaṅkāra 170  
 Upāsakālaṅkāra 170  
 Uposatha-kkh 22-23, 126, 171  
 Uruga-j 72n  
 Uruga-p-v 72n  
 Uruga-v 64, 84  
 Uruga-s 64  
 Ussadakkittana 124n  
 Ekakkharakosa 167  
 Ekuttaraka 28



- Ekottara-s 54  
 Ekottara 29  
 Ekottarāgama 57n  
 Ekottarikāgama 31, 54, 56–57  
 \*Opamma-v 45
- Kaṅkhāvitaraṇi 126–27, 169  
 Kaccāyana-gandha 163, 181n  
 Kaccāyana-ppakaraṇa 147  
 Kaccāyana-mañjūsā 166  
 Kaccāyana-vutti 147  
 Kaccāyana-vyākaraṇa 163, 165  
 Kaccāyana-sāra 164; -ṭikā 164n  
 Kaṭṭhina-kkh 22–23  
 Kaṭṭhaka-v-v 70  
 Kannaṭthalas 47  
 Kannaṭh-p-v 72n  
 Kathāvatthu-(ppakaraṇa) 10, 84, 90,  
 96, 98, 102–5, 112n, 117, 125, 148, 179  
 Kandaraka-s 46  
 Kamma-kkh 22  
 Kammavācā 25  
 Karaṇiyametta-s 174  
 Karmavākya 26  
 Karmavācānā 26  
 Kalāpa 147  
 Kālīṅgabodhi-j 81  
 Kavikalpadruma 166  
 Kassapasihanāda-s 34, 41  
 Kātantra 163, 165  
 Kāmandaki(yanitisāra) 176n  
 Kāsikā 163  
 Kimchanda-j 72n  
 Kukkuravāṭika-s 46  
 Kuṇāla-j 81, 150  
 Kumbhākāra-j 82  
 Kurundi 121, 126, 131, 181; -aṭṭhakathā  
 131  
 Kūṭadanta-s 34  
 Kūṭavinicchaya-p-v 72n  
 Kevaddha-s 35, 41  
 Kokāliya-s 67  
 Kosamba-kkh 22  
 Kosalabimbavannanā 179–80  
 Kṣudraka-vastu 23  
 Kṣudrakāgama 70, 72  
 Khaggaviśāna-s 64, 84–85, 91, 147  
 Khandha 174  
 Khandhaka 15, 18, 22–25, 28  
 Khandha-v 52  
 Khandha-samy 52  
 Khuddaka-gantha 9, 32  
 Khuddaka-n 8–9, 30–32, 57–95, 105,  
 123, 132, 134, 172
- Khuddaka-pāṭha 9, 22n, 31–32, 57–58,  
 65–66, 72, 88, 121, 129, 134, 174  
 Khuddaka-vatthu-kkh 22  
 Khuddaka-vatthu-vibhaṅga 100n, 101  
 Khuddasikkhā 168–69; -ṭikā 168–69  
 Khettūpama-p-v 71  
 Khema-ppakaraṇa 152
- Gaṇṭhipada 166  
 Gandhavamsa 121, 123, 127, 131–33,  
 141, 145–46, 148–50, 152, 155, 157–  
 58, 161–62, 164, 166, 169, 180–81  
 Gahapati-v 45  
 Gihivinayasaṅgahanīti 176  
 Guttila-j 71n  
 Guttila-v-v 71n  
 Gujattadīpanī 157n  
 Goṇa-p-v 72n  
 Gopakamoggallāna-s 48  
 Gopālaka-s 45  
 Ghaṭa-j 72n  
 Ghaṭikāra-s 84n  
 Ghoṭamukha-s 46
- Cakkavattisihanāda-s 41, 93, 160  
 Cakkavāḍadīpanī 175  
 Catutthasaṅgīti-k 11  
 Catubhānavāra 174; -aṭṭhakathā 174  
 Catusparisat-sū 44  
 Canda-s 174  
 Candra-sū 52  
 Campeyya-kkh 22  
 Camma-kkh 22  
 Cariyā-piṭaka 9, 31–32, 79, 83, 88, 94–  
 95, 133–34, 136, 145  
 Cānkyā-nīti 176; -śāstra 176  
 Cittasambhūta-j 82  
 Cīvāra-kkh 22  
 Culla-gandhavamsa 180  
 Culla-niddesa 79n, 84, 86  
 Culla-nirutti-gandha 181n  
 Culla-v 18, 21–22, 37, 146  
 Culla-vedalla-s 16  
 Culla-saddanīti 164  
 Cūla-kammavibhaṅga-s 49  
 Cūla-gopālaka-s 45  
 Cūla-taṇhāsāṅkhaya-s 46  
 Cūla-dukkha-kkh-s 46  
 Cūla-niddesa 9, 32  
 \*Cūla-parinibbāna-s 37  
 Cūla-māluṅkyā-s 44  
 Cūla-yamaka-v 44  
 Cūla-rāhulovāda-s 44n  
 Cūla-vamsa 140, 182

- Cūla-v 66  
 Cūla-satipatṭhāna-s 45  
 Cūla-sāropama-s 45  
 Cūla-hatthipadopama-s 44  
 Cetiya-vamsa-aṭṭhakathā 138  
 Chakosaḍḍhātuvamsa 143  
 Chavaka-j 20n  
 Chiggaḷa-s 53
- Janavasabha-s 38  
 Jambudīpuppattivatthu 155  
 Jātaka 9, 15–16, 20, 24–25, 31, 47–48,  
 71–72, 77–84, 89, 94–96, 121, 127–  
 28, 136, 148, 150, 158–59, 174, 176–  
 79; -aṭṭhakathā 134, 136; -atthavaṇ-  
 nanā 136, 146, 150; -nidāna 141–42,  
 146, 148, 150  
 Jāliya-s 34  
 Jinakālānālī 10–12, 143–44, 157, 178  
 Jinacarita 158, 165  
 Jinālaṅkāra 157; -ṭikā 157; -navatīkā  
 157; -vaṇṇanā 157  
 Jhāna-vibhaṅga 100n  
 Jhāna-samy 53
- Nāṇa-k 88  
 Nāṇa-vibhaṅga 100n  
 Nāṇodaya 120
- Thānampa 28n  
 Tika-paṭṭhāna 106n  
 Tirokuḍḍa-s 58; -p-v 72  
 Tissametteyya-s 69  
 Tuvaṭṭaka-s 15, 68  
 Telakāṭṭha-g 156  
 Tevijja-s 36, 39  
 Traibhūmi-k 174  
 Thūpavamsa 142  
 Thera-g 9, 15, 31, 47, 52, 61, 67, 71–77,  
 89–92, 112, 133–35, 146  
 Therāpadāna 147  
 Therī-apadāna 147  
 Therī-g 9, 15, 31, 51, 61, 71, 73, 75–77,  
 89–90, 92, 112, 134–35
- Dakkhiṇāvibhaṅga-s 48  
 Dantadhātu(-vamsa) 142  
 Dantabhūmi-s 48  
 Daśakumāracarita 158  
 Daśādhyāya-vinaya 29  
 Daśottara-sū 43  
 Dasadānavatthuppakaraṇa 153  
 Dasabodhisattavidhi 162  
 Dasabodhisattuddesa 162
- Dasabodhisattuppatti-k 161–62  
 Dasabrahmana-j 83  
 Dasavatthuppakaraṇa 133  
 Dasuttara-s 28, 43, 54, 87  
 Dāṭhāvamsa 142  
 Divyāvadāna 81n, 175, 178  
 Digha-n 7–8, 24–25, 28, 30–50, 54–55,  
 77, 79, 87, 90–93, 95, 102, 107, 111,  
 122, 142, 148–50, 160, 173–75; -aṭ-  
 ṭhakathā-ṭikā 149; -āgama 31  
 Dīpavamsa 8–11, 16, 27, 84, 88, 100,  
 115–19, 138–40, 142, 154; -aṭṭha-  
 kathā 115, 138  
 Dīrghāgama 24n, 31, 38n, 43n, 44  
 Duka-paṭṭhāna 106n  
 Dutiya-agāriya-v-v 71n  
 Devatā-samy 51  
 Devadāta-s 175  
 Dvayatānupassanā-s 67  
 Dvāra-k 124n  
 Dvipādavyāyama-k-g 157n  
 Dhajagga-s 174  
 Dhammacakkappavattana-s 53, 132  
 Dhammanīti 176  
 Dhammapada 9, 15, 25, 31, 58–61, 64,  
 75, 121, 127–28, 130, 159, 176; -aṭ-  
 ṭhakathā 134–35, 146  
 Dhammasaṅgani 96–102, 105–6, 120,  
 122  
 Dhammasamādāna-s 45  
 Dhammahadnyavibhaṅga 101, 173  
 Dharmapada 7, 59–60  
 Dhātu-k 96, 98, 101–2  
 Dhātukāya 107  
 Dhātupāṭha 165–66  
 Dhātumañjūsā 168  
 Dhātumālā 165–66  
 Dhātuyamaka 102  
 Dhātuvibhaṅga 102  
 Dhutagunāniddesa 114n  
 Dhvajāgra-sū 52
- Nandaka-p-v 71  
 Nandivīsāla-j 20n  
 Nāga-samy 52  
 Nāmarūpapariccheda 151–52  
 Nāmarūpasaṃsa 152  
 Nāmacārāḍḍipikā 183, 164  
 Nāḷaka-s 15, 67  
 Nāvā-s 66  
 Nikāya-saṅgraha 11  
 Nigamaṇa-g 136  
 Nidāna-k 25, 48, 78–79, 95, 146, 158–59  
 Nidāna-v 52

- Nidāna-samyukta 52  
 Nidāna-samy 52  
 Niddesa 15, 19, 27, 31–32, 63–65, 68–70, 84–87, 91, 119, 133–34, 166  
 Nidhikaṇḍa-s 58  
 Nibbāna-samy 53n  
 Nivaraṇapahāna-v 57  
 Nettigandha 181n  
 Netti-ppakaraṇa 31, 109–10, 133–34, 137, 148–49, 160, 181; -aṭṭhakathā 133–34, 137, 148–49; -tikā 148–49  
 Nyāsa 164; -pradipa 164  
 Paccayākāravibhaṅga 37, 100n  
 Paccarī 121  
 Paccokabuddhāpadāna 91, 147  
 Pajjapadoruvamsa 117, 138; -vaṇṇanā 138  
 Pajjamedhu 158, 164, 173  
 Pañcagatidipana 160  
 Pañcātānta 79  
 Pañcappakaraṇa-aṭṭhakathā 123, 125  
 Paññāsa-j 177  
 Pañhāpucchaka 100–1  
 Paṭisaṃbhidaṃmagga 9, 31, 87–89, 96, 132, 134  
 Paṭṭhāna 96, 98, 106–7, 123, 151n, 161  
 Paṇḍita-var 59n  
 Paṇḍitaṇḍikāraṇṭhi 176  
 Paṇṇattivāra 105  
 Paṇṇāsa 178  
 Pada-bhājana 126  
 Pada-bhājanīya 19, 21, 160  
 Pada-mālā 164  
 Pada-rūpasiddhi 164  
 Padya- see Pajja-  
 Padhāna-s 60  
 Papañcasūdanī 122, 174  
 Pabbajjā-s 66  
 Payogasiddhi 158, 165  
 Paramattha-k 123  
 Paramattha-jotikā 64–65, 68–69, 85–86, 121n, 129, 133, 147  
 Paramattha-dīpanī 123, 134, 146  
 Paramattha-vinichaya 152  
 Paramattha-vibhāvinī 134n  
 Parābhava-s 65  
 Parīñhāvāra 106  
 Paritta 120, 173–74  
 Parivāra 15–16, 18, 24, 26–29, 113, 168  
 Pavattivāra 106  
 Pavāraṇa-kkh 22  
 Pāṭika-v 32, 41–44  
 Pāṭika-s 32, 41  
 Pāṭimokkha 7, 18–23, 31, 96, 121, 126, 166; -thapana-kkh 22  
 Pāyāsi-s 40  
 Pārāyana-v 63–65, 69, 84–86  
 Pārāyana-sū 68n  
 Pārīvāsika-kkh 22  
 Pāsādika-s 42–43  
 Piṭakattamain 154  
 Piṭakattayakūṛakāṇisaṃsa 178  
 Puggala-k 103–4  
 Puggala-pañhanti 62–63, 96, 98, 102–3  
 Puṇṇakapaṇha 69n  
 Puṇṇakamāṇavapucchā 69  
 Puṇyavanta-j 84n  
 Puppha-v 58  
 Pubbakammaṇḍitī-apadāna 91–92  
 Puspa-var 64n  
 Pūjāvalīya 11, 143  
 Petaka 109  
 Petakopadesa(gandha) 14n, 31, 108–10, 160, 181  
 Petavatthu 9, 31, 58, 71–72, 77, 133–34, 136, 160  
 Poṭṭhapāda-s 35  
 Prātimokṣa-sū 20–21  
 Pretāvādāna 72  
 Bālapaṇḍita-s 49  
 Bālavatāra 164  
 Bāhiraṇidāna 116, 118, 122  
 Bimbisāra-sū 49n  
 Bijāra-j 80  
 Buddhaghosuppatti 130, 138, 145, 182  
 Buddhavaṃsa 9, 25, 31–32, 79, 87–88, 92–95, 97, 131–32, 142, 145–46, 148, 161, 172; -aṭṭhakathā 146–47  
 Buddhāpadāna 90–92, 146–47  
 Buddhāpadāniya 94  
 Brhat-k 86n  
 Bojjhaṅgaparitta 174  
 Bojjhaṅga-samy 50, 53  
 Bodhivaṃsa 141  
 Bodhisattvabhūmi 68n  
 Brapamsukūḷāṇisaṃsa 178  
 Brahmajāla-s 7, 33  
 Brahmanimantaṇṇika-s 46  
 Brahma-samy 50  
 Brahmāyu-s 47  
 Brāhmaṇadhammika-s 66  
 Brāhmaṇa-v 58  
 Bhaddālī-s 46  
 Bhaddekaratta-s 48  
 Bhikkhuni-kkh 21–22, 24–25, 55  
 Bhikkhuni-pāṭimokkha 127n

- Bhikkhuni-vibhaṅga 18, 20–21, 28  
 Bhikkhuni-samy 51, 76  
 Bhikkhu-pāṭimokkha 127  
 Bhikkhu-vibhaṅga 18  
 Bhikkhuni-prakīrṇaka 21  
 Bhikkhuni-prātimokṣa 21  
 Bhikkhuni-vinaya 7, 21, 25  
 Bhikkhuni-vibhaṅga 25  
 Bhikkhu-prakīrṇaka 21  
 Bhikkhu-prātimokṣa 20–21  
 Bhikkhu-var 60, 64n  
 Bhūmija-s 48  
 Bhūridatta-j 80, 82  
 Bhesajja-kkh 22, 162  
 Bhesajja-mañjūsā 163  
 Malhādeva-s 47  
 Magga-samy 53  
 Maṅgala-s 15, 58, 174  
 Majjhima-n 8, 30, 40, 44–49, 67, 79, 95, 97, 100, 103, 122, 149, 159, 174; -paṇṇāsa 46–47  
 Mañjūsā 163  
 Madhupindaka-s 103  
 Madhuratthappakāsinī 150  
 Madhuratthavilāsinī 131, 146, 157  
 Madhurasavāhinī 155  
 Madhura-s 46  
 Madhyamāgama 31, 44, 49  
 Manorathapūraṇī 122, 135  
 Mahā-aṭṭhakathā 86, 99, 121, 124n, 131  
 Mahā-kammavibhaṅga-s 49  
 Mahā-kkh 22, 24, 44, 61  
 \*Mahā-gandhavamsa 180  
 Mahā-gopālaka-s 45  
 Mahā-govinda-cariya 95n  
 Mahā-govinda-s 38, 95n  
 Mahā-govinda-sū 39n  
 Mahā-govindīya-sū 39n  
 Mahā-janaka-j 177  
 Mahā-dibbamanta 174n  
 Mahā-dukkha-kkh-s 46  
 Mahā-nidāna-s 37  
 Mahā-niddesa 9, 32, 84  
 Mahā-nipāta 18, 80  
 Mahā-niruttigandha 181n  
 Mahā-pakaraṇa 161n  
 Mahā-paccarī 121, 126, 131, 181  
 Mahāpadāna-s 24, 36–37, 48, 79, 90, 92  
 Mahā-paritta 173  
 Mahā-parinibbāna-s 31, 37–38, 42, 50, 55, 93  
 Mahā-parinirvāṇa-sū 38  
 Mahā-punnama-s 16  
 Mahā-bodhivaṃsa 141, 156, 162, 165  
 Mahā-maṅgala-s 66  
 Mahā-mālunkya-s 44  
 Mahā-yamaka-v 44  
 Mahārahanṭhi 176  
 Mahā-rāhulovāda-s 44n  
 Mahāli-s 34  
 Mahā-lomahamsacariya 95n  
 Mahā-vamsa 8–12, 96, 115–18, 120, 124, 130, 138–42, 145, 149, 153–56, 159, 162–63, 171, 174, 180; -tikā 150, 155–56, 166, 171  
 Mahā-v 18, 22, 24–25, 32, 36–41, 53–54, 66, 126, 140  
 Mahāvādāna-sū 24, 37  
 Mahā-vastu(avadāna) 16, 24–25, 39, 60, 64–67, 70, 84–85, 91, 175, 178  
 Mahā-vibhaṅga 18, 27, 126  
 Mahā-vedalla-s 16  
 Mahā-saṃgāma 28  
 Mahā-saccaka-s 34n, 45  
 Mahā-satipatṭhāna-s 40, 45, 49  
 Mahā-saddanīti 164  
 Mahā-sannaya 164  
 Mahā-samaya-s 39, 43  
 Mahā-samāja-sū 39  
 Mahā-sāropama-s 45  
 Mahā-sihanāda-s 45–46, 95n  
 Mahā-sudassana-s 38  
 Mahā-supina-j 80–81  
 Mahā-hatthipadopama-s 44  
 Māgandiya-paṇha 86  
 Māgandiya-s 68n, 69  
 Mātāṅga-j 82  
 Mātikā-aṭṭhakathā 126  
 Milinda-tikā 150  
 Milinda-paṇha 26n, 28, 31, 54, 74, 91, 102, 110–12, 150, 174; -vaṇṇanā 150  
 Mukhamattadīpanī 164  
 Muni-g 69n  
 Muni-s 69n  
 Mūla-tikā 148, 152  
 Mūla-paṇṇāsa 45  
 Mūla-yamaka 105  
 Mūla-sikkhā 169  
 Metta-s 58, 65  
 Mettoyya-paṇha 69n  
 Maitreya-samīti 161n  
 Moggallāyana-paṇcīkā 165  
 Moggallāyana-vyākaraṇa 165  
 Mora-s 174  
 Mohavichhedanī 96, 100, 105, 147, 153, 161



- Yamaka 96, 98, 102, 105–6, 118  
 Yogaratnākara 163
- Ratthapāla-s 46  
 Ratana-s 15, 58, 66, 174  
 Rasavāhinī 145n, 155–56, 159  
 Rājanīti 176  
 Rāstrapāla-sū 49n  
 Rūpasiddhi 159, 164–65, 173  
 Rūpārūpavibhāga 131, 153
- Lakkhaṇa-s 42  
 Lalitavistara 81n  
 Linatthavannanā 149n  
 Lokanīti 176  
 Lokareyyapakaraṇa 176n  
 Lokapāṇḍita 174–75  
 Lokaprajñapti 175  
 Lomahamsapariyāya 95n  
 Lohicca-s 36
- Vamsatthappakāsinī 138–40  
 Vaṅgisathera-samy 51  
 Vannanītigandha 181n  
 Vatta-kkh 22  
 Varnaśata 49n  
 Vassupanāyika-kkh 22  
 Vākyapadiya 149  
 Vāḍḍisa-samyukta 52  
 Vidhuraṇḍita-j, 71n, 80, 83  
 Vinaya(-pitaka) 8–9, 11, 15–16, 18, 20–21, 23–28, 31, 37, 44, 48, 53, 55, 58, 61, 77, 85, 87, 92, 97–98, 105, 113, 116, 119, 121–22, 126, 131, 140, 147, 157, 162, 166, 168–69, 171, 173; -atthakathā 122, 138  
 Vinaya-kṣudraka 28  
 Vinaya-tīkā 11  
 Vinaya-nidāna 16n, 116n  
 Vinaya-vinichaya 130–31, 145  
 Vinaya-vibhaṅga 21  
 Vinaya-sāratthadīpanī 130  
 Vipākuddhāra-k 124n  
 Vibhaṅga 15, 23, 27, 48, 89, 96, 98, 100–3, 105, 122; -atthakathā 125; -v 48–49  
 Vimativinodanī 172  
 Vimalatthavilāsinī 146  
 Vimalavilāsinī 146  
 Vimalānavatthu 9, 25, 31, 40, 70–72, 133–34, 136, 146, 173  
 Vimalānavadāna 70  
 Vimuktimārga 114n  
 Vimuttimaggā 113–14, 120
- Visuddhajanavilāsinī 146n  
 Visuddhimagga 31, 112–14, 120–24, 126, 129, 131–33, 148–49, 174, 182; -tīkā 113, 133  
 Vuttodaya 168–69; -tīkā 168  
 Vedanā-samy 50n  
 Vedalla-s 16, 40  
 Vevacanahāra 166  
 Vessantara-j 80, 83, 95, 177  
 Vyākaraṇa 165
- Śikṣāsamuccaya 57  
 Śīla-var 59  
 Samyuktāgama 31, 54  
 Samyutta-n 8–9, 15, 30–31, 40, 49–54, 56, 76, 120, 122, 149, 159, 174; -atthakathā 128; -āgama 31  
 Samsāramocaka-p-v 71  
 Sakkaṇḍa-s 16, 40  
 Saka-samy 50  
 Sagātha-v 15, 50–52  
 Saṅkhārābhājanīya-s 16  
 Saṅkhepa 121  
 Saṅkhyāsarūpa 150  
 Saṅgārava-s 47  
 Saṅgīti-paryāya 43, 107  
 Saṅgīti-vamśa 144  
 Saṅgīti-s 28, 43, 48, 102, 107, 150  
 Saṅgīti-sū 43, 102  
 Saṅghabheda-kkh 22  
 Saṅghabheda-vastu 24, 44n  
 Saṅgharājāsādhucariyāva 1n  
 Saccavibhaṅga 100; s 45n, 48–49, 100  
 Sacca-samy 50, 53  
 Sacca-saṅkhepa 152, 181  
 Sacca-savhayaṇḍita-cariya 95n  
 Satipatthāna-samy 53  
 Satipatthāna-s 40, 45  
 Sattasā 75  
 Saddanīti 164  
 Saddalakkhaṇa 165  
 Saddhamma-tthitīkā 133  
 Saddhamma-ppakāsinī 87, 132  
 Saddhamma-ppajotikā 84, 133  
 Saddhamma-saṅgaha 10–11, 124n, 148, 152, 157–58, 164, 179–80  
 Saddhammopāyana 159, 170; -viggaha 160  
 Saddharma-puṇḍarīka 16  
 Sandesa-k 144, 172  
 Saptamaithunasamyukta-sū 57  
 Saptasāta 75n  
 Sabhiya-s 66  
 Samatha-kkh 22

- Samantakūṭavannanā 155, 159  
 Samantapāsādikā 32, 57, 98, 116, 118, 121–22, 126–27, 130, 141–42, 169, 171, 180–81  
 Samantabaddikā 162  
 Samavāyama 28n  
 Samuccaya-kkh 22  
 Samuddaghosa-j 178  
 Sampasādanīya-s 42  
 Sambandhacintā 168  
 Sammāditthi-s 16  
 Sammohavinodanī 122–25, 133  
 Saṅgāyana-v 53  
 Saṅgāyana-samy 50, 53  
 Sahasra-var 60  
 Sahassa-vatthu 155; -atthakathā 155–56; -ppakaraṇa 154–56  
 Sāmagāma-s 48  
 Sāmaññaphala-s 7, 33–36, 111  
 Sārattha-dīpanī 11  
 Sārattha-ppakāsinī 122  
 Sārattha-saṅgaha 162n, 173n  
 Sārasaṅgaha 11, 173–74  
 Sāriputta-samy 52  
 Sāropama-s 45  
 Sāsana-vamśa 2, 11–12, 26, 131, 141, 145, 148, 152–53, 181; -dīpa 141n, 182  
 Sigālovāda-s 42  
 Sivi-j 82  
 Simā-k 171  
 Simā-lakkhaṇadīpanī 172, 182  
 Simālaṅkāra(ka) 171; -saṅgaha 171  
 Simā-vivādavinichaya-k 172  
 Simā-saṅkarachedanī 172
- Simā-saṅgaha 171  
 Śīla-kkh-v 32–36  
 Siḥaladīpuppatti-vatthu 155  
 Siḥalavattuppakaraṇa 154  
 Sujāta-j 72n  
 Sutavaddhananīti 176  
 Sutta-niddesa 164  
 Sutta-nipāta 9, 14–15, 25, 31, 58, 63–70, 73, 75, 84–86, 91, 121, 129, 133–34, 147, 175  
 Suttanta-piṭaka 9, 30, 32  
 Suttanta-bhājanīya 100  
 Sutta-piṭaka 17, 30–95, 97–98, 102–3, 105, 129, 173  
 Sutta-mālā 165  
 Sutta-vibhaṅga 18, 20–22, 27–28, 126  
 Sutta-saṅgaha 31, 172  
 Sudhanukumāra-j 178  
 Subodhālaṅkāra 167–69; -tīkā 168  
 Subha-s 35  
 Sumaṅgalavilāsinī 109, 122, 149  
 Sūtra-piṭaka 16n  
 Sedamocaka-g 28  
 Senāsana-kkh 22  
 Serissaka-v-v 71n  
 Sela-s 67  
 Sonadaṇḍa-s 34  
 Skandhaka 23n, 24–25  
 Sthavira-g 75, 92
- Hatthavanagallavīhāravamśa 143  
 Hatthipadopama-s 44  
 Hitopadeśa 79  
 Hemavata-s 65, 175



# GENERAL INDEX

(Persons or places with the same name are not separated)

- Abhayagiri(-vihāra) 5, 10, 29n, 113—  
14, 139, 149, 160, 170  
Aciravata 48  
Acyutavikrama 131  
Aesop 79  
Afghanistan 24  
Aggabodhi 133n  
Ajātasattu 33, 143  
Akkharacchandana 168  
Ālāra Kālāma 45  
Ālokavihāra 11  
Alulena 11n  
Aluvihāra 11  
Ambapālī 76  
Ambatthā 33—34, 47  
Ānanda 7—9, 35, 37—38, 42, 47—48, 50,  
61, 69, 73, 77, 86, 91, 159, 174, 179  
Anāthapiṇḍika 79  
Andhaka 122  
Āndhra 154  
Anomadassi 143  
Anurādhapura 133, 165, 172  
Anuruddha 8, 12, 50  
Anuṣṭubh 59, 61, 69, 74, 82—83  
Aparanta 182  
Āraḍa Kālāma 45n  
araṇṇāyana 159  
Arimaddana 153, 164  
Āryā (including Old Āryā) 61, 65, 68,  
71, 74, 76, 81, 110, 168  
Aryan Path 40  
Asandhimittā 140, 153  
Asita 67  
Asoka(n) 3—5, 10, 16, 39, 73, 77, 84, 87,  
104, 115, 140, 142, 153, 162, 172, 175,  
182  
Assaji 23n  
Attanagalla 143  
Atthadasin 128  
Aupacchandana 59, 61, 64  
Ayuthya 144n  
Badaratthita(-vihāra) 134, 137, 152  
Balie/Baly 2  
Bamiyan 24, 107  
Bāvari 69  
Benares 3n  
bhānaka 8—9, 31—32, 50, 56, 74—76, 81,  
90n, 94—95, 112—113, 132  
Bharhut 16, 80  
Bhātikatissa 115n  
Bhātutissa 115n  
Bhūmija 48  
Bhuvanekebāhu 158  
Bimbisāra 66  
Bodhisatta 9, 77, 79, 82—83, 93—94,  
159, 173  
Brahmā 36, 38—39, 46, 50  
Brahmakāyika 39  
Brahmayu 47  
Buddha 2—3, 6—9, 11, 13, 19—25 *et*  
*passim*  
Buddhadeva 128  
Buddhamitta 128  
Buddhasiṃha 131, 145  
Buddhasoma 160  
Buddhism 4—7, 11—12, 48  
Buddhist(s) 1, 3, 5—6, 9—14, 18, 20 *et*  
*passim*  
Buddhist (Hybrid) Sanskrit 26, 30n,  
78—79, 81, 88, 92, 177  
Burma 2, 7, 11—12, 14, 79n, 108, 110,  
138, 140n, 153, 164, 167, 172, 174—77,  
180—83  
Burmese 2, 7, 11—13, 14n, 143, 151,  
154, 164—65, 167, 169, 172, 176—78,  
181—82  
Burnouf 1  
Cakkavattin 41, 160  
Cambodia 13, 160n, 177, 183  
Cambodian 13, 140, 150  
Cāpakka 139  
Candagutta 139  
Ceylon 2, 6, 10—12, 14, 26, 29, 92, 94,  
108, 110, 114—15, 118—21, 124, 130,  
132, 134, 136n, 140—44, 151—52,  
154—56, 159, 161—62, 164, 167, 169—  
72, 174—75, 179—83  
Cātthasaṅgāyana 13

## General Index

267

- Chieng Mai 175  
Childers 1  
Chinese 7, 22n, 29, 32, 43n, 44, 49, 54,  
56—57, 60, 63—64, 68, 92, 98, 107, 111,  
113—14, 130, 143n, 149, 175  
Clough 1  
Cola 132  
Coliyan 171  
Coromandel 2  
Cūlagavaccha 72  
Cunda 178  
Dabba 19n  
Dakkhīnārāma 173  
Dāthānāga 141, 149  
Deva 133  
Devānampiyatissa 116  
Dhammakitti 180  
Dhammasava 72  
Dhammasoka 71  
Dharmaguptaka 21, 29, 38, 43n, 59  
Dīpaṅkara 78, 93, 141—42, 158  
Dravidian 6, 121, 130  
Duṭṭhagāmaṇī 117, 142, 180  
Ekavihāriya 73  
English 1, 141  
Fa-hsien 179  
Fan 63n  
Ganacchandana 70n, 73—74, 168  
Gāndhāri 7, 59  
Ganges 37  
Gilgit 7, 20—21, 24, 57, 92  
Girnār 4  
Gotama 36, 38, 45n, 67, 77, 89, 93,  
140—43, 158, 161, 178  
Govinda 39n  
Greek 110—11  
Haṇḍakopṇa 154n  
Haripuṇjaya 143  
Hāthigumphā 4—5  
Hemavata 175  
Hinayāna 7, 16, 20—21, 26, 29n, 91, 113  
Hindu 161  
Hsüan-tsang 14, 16n, 17  
Inda 66  
India(n) 3—5, 14n, 29, 59, 65n, 77, 79,  
81, 83—84, 87, 92, 108, 110—11, 113—  
14, 120—21, 124, 130, 134, 136, 142—  
43, 149, 151—52, 154—55, 171, 175—76,  
179, 181—83  
Iṅgiri 141  
Isidat 77  
Jagatī 59, 61, 66—67, 69, 74, 82, 142  
Jain(s) 20, 28n, 42—43, 46, 48—49, 51,  
58, 81—82, 170  
Jāliya 34  
Jambudīpa 26  
Java 86  
Jayasena 48  
Jetavana 79, 114  
Jivaka Kōmarābhacca 162  
Jotipāla 84n  
Kaccāna 108, 110  
Kalabha 132  
Kalamba 131  
Kalambha 132  
Kalasi 111n  
Kālāsoka 139  
Kālīnga 81  
Kanaka 146  
Kaṇḍipura 152  
Kaniṣka 14, 17  
Kanjur 14  
Kaṇṭakasolapattana 154n  
Kapilavastu 3n  
Kashmir 14  
Kasmira 111n  
Kassapa 8, 40  
Kāśyapiya 59n  
Kavacakravartī 160  
Kāvira 152  
Kāvīrapattana 146  
Kevaddha 35  
Khadiravaniya 73n  
Khemā 135n  
Khotan 59  
Kimbila 72n  
Kittisihāsura 167  
Kittisirirāsasiha 140  
Kōṇāgamana 77, 97  
Kōṇḍakasolapattana 154n  
Kosala 80  
Kumārakassapa 127  
Kusinagarī 3n  
Kusinārā 3n, 38  
Kuthodaw Pagoda 12  
La Loubère 1—2  
Lampoon 143  
Lānnā 143—44  
Laos 13, 183



- Laotian 13  
Lassen 1  
Let-than 153  
Licchaviputta 41  
Lilāvati 142  
Lokottaravādin 7, 21-22, 24-25, 39, 60  
Magadha 3, 33, 38n, 66  
Māgadhi 2-3, 105, 145, 168  
Māgadhisms 104, 130  
Māgandhiya 69  
Mahā-ariṭṭha 10, 116, 180  
Mahādeva 104n  
Mahāgavaccha 72  
Mahākaccāna 46, 48, 85, 103  
Mahākāssapa 7-8, 12, 18, 148, 180  
Mahāmaudgalyāyana 53n  
Mahānāma 130, 132  
Mahāpaduma 121  
Mahāpajjapati 48  
Mahārakkhita 87  
Mahārāṣṭri 75  
Mahāsammata 41  
Mahāsāṅghika 7, 10, 14, 21-22, 24-25, 27, 39, 57, 60, 84, 88, 90, 100, 117  
Mahāsāṅgiti 10  
Mahāsāṅgika 10  
Mahāsena 115, 140  
Mahāsumma 121  
Mahāthūpa 142  
Mahātissa 127  
Mahāvihāra 29n, 113, 116, 118-20, 124, 128, 131-32, 134, 136, 139, 147, 149n, 151-52, 170-71  
Mahāvijita 34  
Mahāvāna 42, 74, 90-91, 113, 161, 170  
Mahimsāsaka 128  
Mahinda 114, 116, 119, 121, 141, 145  
Ma-ho-nan 130, 149  
Mālini 142-43, 159  
Mallian 19n  
Mandākrānta 142  
Mandalay 12-13  
Maṇimekhalā 117  
Māra 51, 66, 158  
Mātale 11n  
Mathurā 5  
Mātrācchandas 70n, 74, 168  
Mauryan 3  
Medhaṅkara 93n  
Menander 110-11  
Metteyya 41, 93, 161  
Middle Indo-Aryan 1-2, 5-7, 33, 57, 115, 141  
Milinda 110-12  
Min-dōn-min 12, 181  
Moggaliputta 10-11  
Moggallāna 19n, 22, 46, 53, 70, 115n, 132  
Mūla-sarvāstivādin 7, 20, 23-24, 26, 29, 44n, 57, 92  
Nādikas 38  
nāga 83  
Nāgasena 110-12  
Nāla 67  
Nandas 139  
Nandivisūla 20n  
Narindasiha 163  
Nāt(h)aputta 42-43, 46, 48  
Neraṅgarā 66  
Nigodha 35  
Paecaya 80, 83  
Pagan 153-55, 162-63, 168, 176  
Pālī 1-10, 12, 16, 18, 21-26 *et passim*  
Parakkama 142  
Parakkamabāhu 12, 140, 142-43, 148, 151, 163, 165-66, 169-70, 180  
Parakkantibhuja 142  
Pasenadi 179  
Pāṭaliputra 4, 38  
Paṭṭakopī 154n  
Pāvā 43  
Pāvāsī 40  
Piṅgala(ka) 71  
Poṭṭhapāda 35  
Prakrit 7, 29n, 39, 57, 59-60, 63, 91, 111, 130, 166  
Pramitākṣarā 42n  
Prasenajit 179  
Punabbasu 23n  
Puṣpitāgrā 42n  
Puṭabhattachasela 159  
Rāhula 159  
Rājagaha 24  
Rangoon 13  
Rathoddhatā 42n, 76  
Raṭṭhapāla 19n  
Revata 9, 73n  
Roma 175  
Rucirā 42n, 118  
Sabbakāmin 9  
Sabhiya 66  
Sāgalā 111n  
Sakka 40, 46, 50  
Sākya 34

- Sāli 155-56  
Samañña 159  
Sambhūta 73  
Saṅḍakonti 154n  
Saṅghapāla 120, 131, 145n, 157  
Saṅgharāja 145n, 180  
Saṅkha 41, 160-61  
Sanskrit 2-3, 5-7, 16, 29-31, 38-39, 43, 51, 53-54, 57, 60, 62-63, 66-68, 79, 92, 107, 111, 114, 129, 141, 147, 149, 156, 158-59, 163, 165-70, 174-78  
Saraṇaṅkara 93n  
Sārdūlavikriḍita 142  
Sāriputta 8, 22, 42-43, 52, 71, 84-85, 87, 93-94, 98-100, 107, 132, 151, 161  
Sarvāstivādin 7, 14, 17, 21, 24, 26, 28-29, 37-38, 40, 43-44, 49, 51, 54, 57, 59, 61, 63, 68, 70, 72, 75, 92, 94, 97, 107, 112  
Sātāgira 175  
Sela 67  
Sena 149  
Shāhībāzgarhi 39  
Siālkot 111n  
Siam 2, 11-12, 140  
Siamese 13-14, 174  
Siddhagāma 149  
Siddhattha 159  
Sigāla 42  
Siha 23n  
Siha 8, 116-19, 122, 124n, 125-32, 134, 135n, 138-39, 144n, 154-55, 182  
Sihaḷācariya 170  
Śikhariṇi 142  
Sinhalese 1, 5-6, 12-13, 14n, 86-87, 94, 100, 104, 114, 119, 130, 140-44, 151, 155, 157, 161, 163, 165, 171, 179  
Sinhalese Prakrit 6, 114, 118-19, 130  
Sirikūta 127, 130  
Sirimeghavanna 142  
Sirinivāsa 130  
Sirisaṅghabodhi 133, 143  
Siva 11, 26  
Sivi 82  
Śloka 82-83, 91, 94-95, 116, 118, 142, 152, 159-60  
Sona(ka) 11  
Sonadaṇḍa 34  
Sopāka 135n  
South-East Asia 6, 140, 143, 153-54, 175, 177-78  
Sragdharā 118, 142  
Śrāvastī 3n, 179  
Sudassana 38  
Suddhāvāsakāyika 39  
Sudhamma 12  
Sudinna 19n  
Sumanakūṭa 159  
Sumanāgala 73  
Sumati 131  
Sumedha 78-79, 93, 158  
Sumedhā 77  
Sunakkhatta 41  
Suratṭha 71  
Susunāga 139  
Suvannabhūmi 11, 86, 182  
Takkola 86  
Tamba 152  
Tambapaṇṇi 26, 169  
Taṇhankara 93n  
Taṇja 152  
Tathāgata 46, 173  
Tekicakāni 73  
Thai(s) 2, 7, 13, 144, 175, 180n  
Thailand 2, 7, 14, 143-44, 176n, 177-78, 183  
Thatōn 11-12, 174  
Theravādin(s) 1-5, 10, 14, 17, 32, 38, 51, 64, 84, 88, 91-92, 94, 96, 98, 100, 103-4, 107, 112-13, 117, 128n, 136, 160-61, 174  
Thūpārāma 165  
Tibet(an) 21, 60, 92, 107, 114  
Tilok 143  
Tilokanayana 153  
Tissabhūti 127  
Triṣṭubh 59, 61, 66-67, 69, 74, 82-83, 91, 95, 142-43, 153, 159  
Turkistan 7, 21, 24, 29, 37, 43, 49, 51-52, 57, 59, 68, 75, 92, 107  
Tusita 67, 78-79  
Uddaka Rāmaputta 45  
Udgatā 42n  
Udraka Rāmaputta 45n  
Upālī 7-8, 18, 28-29, 46  
Upaniṣadic 46  
Upasena 53  
Upasthitapracupita 42n  
Upatissa 113, 174  
Uppalavaṇṇā 77  
Uttara 11  
Uttaravihāra 139, 149  
Vaḍḍha 73  
Vaitāliya 59, 61, 64, 83

Vamśastha 42n  
 Vāṅgisa 9, 51, 73  
 Vasantatilakā 118, 142-43, 159  
 Vātthagāmaṇi 10-11, 87  
*veḍha* 81  
 Vejayanta 46  
 Vesālī 24  
 Vessantara 83, 95  
 Vidhūra 83  
 Vijayabāhu 12, 140, 158

Vipassin 36, 48, 79  
 Viṭaṇḍins 103  
 Vitasoka 73

*yakkha* 83  
 Yama 175  
 Yasodharā 90  
 Yudhiṭṭhila 83

Zimmè 178